

Two shocking books in one!



SANDY

Death March Survivor



SEARCH FOR TRUTH

Japan's biological experiments on POW'S

LYSLE LEWIS

WWII
J-33

SANDY

DEATH MARCH SURVIVOR

and

SEARCH FOR TRUTH

SECRET BIOLOGICAL WARFARE EXPERIMENTS ON POWs

BY JAPANESE IN MUKDEN, MANCHURIA

SUPPRESSED FOR OVER 40 YEARS

by

LYSLE LEWIS

COPYRIGHT APPLIED FOR
All Rights Reserved

Printed in the United States of America.

Other books by Lysle Lewis:

COURAGE PERSONIFIED

written 1984; copyright 1988.
Reg. No. TXu 313 836; 01818189
February 16, 1988

Special thanks to

Mike and Spike

DEDICATION

A strange coincidence occurred to me as I wrote this book. It is the fact that there were men in my life from childhood, through adulthood, and now going into later years who were exceptionally brave, outstanding men who all converged in one small area in the Philippines at the same moment in history. There but for the grace of God go I.

As a child of 8 in Maywood, Illinois, one of my playmates was Jimmy Warner who lived two blocks down the street on 20th Avenue. He joined the 194th Tank Battalion from Maywood -- the same group that hooked up with Sandy's tank group on Bataan. In later years when I inquired of a mutual friend about Jimmy I was told he died in WWII, either in battle in the Philippines or as a POW. I do not know which.

I moved to Pekin, Illinois when I was 13 and met Chuck Lewis who was to survive $3\frac{1}{2}$ years as a POW held by the Japanese. His blindness at their hands, his life and courage are documented in my first book, COURAGE PERSONIFIED. We were married December 30, 1945; he died November 17, 1983. A U.S. Navy man, he was part of the famed Naval Battalion attached to the Fourth Marines. He, too, fought on Bataan, escaped to Corregidor where he fought an additional month and was captured when the Philippines fell May 6, 1942.

My rage at the Japanese led me to attend the Tri-County Chapter of American Ex-Prisoners-of-War in Venice, Florida, organized by Allan Johnson about the time of Chuck's death. I attended my first meeting a year after Chuck's death. My association with these wonderful people has helped me more than anything to deal with life since. As my friendships grew with these dear POWs captured in Japan, Europe and Korea, and their spouses, I realized there was too much in all their stories for me to absorb, but because of Chuck's experiences I wanted to learn all I could from the lips of those brave men who survived $3\frac{1}{2}$ years in the hands of the Japanese. There are less than 12% surviving now (January, 1988). At Tri-County Chapter AXPOW I met Sandy -- a very special person, a down-to-earth guy, honest, hard-working, and a loyal friend. We found we worked very well together when he was Commander and I was secretary of the group. We communicate well and easily. My need to get all the facts I can into print as to what happened to the Japanese-held POWs led me to ask Sandy if he would be willing to be the subject. I figured if it could be done at all, Sandy and I could do it. He never hesitated. Yes!

I am thankful my entire life has been touched continually by men of this caliber, men of whom I am extremely proud, men to whom I owe my freedom. Thanks Jimmy, Chuck and Sandy. Each a true patriot in every sense of the word. This book is dedicated to you.

INDEX

	<u>Page</u>
<u>DEDICATION</u>	iv
<u>PART I: SANDY - Death March Survivor - American Hero</u>	
Chapter I Sandy	1
Chapter II Sandy's Own Words	49
Chapter III Death March Quotes	94
<u>PART II: SEARCH FOR TRUTH - Biological/Bacterial/ Medical Experiments by Japanese on POWs at Mukden, Manchuria</u>	
Chapter IV Search for Truth	105
Chapter V Kempei Tai - Japanese Torture	264
Cannibalism, Vivisection, Mutilation by Japanese	274
Chapter VI Declassified U.S. Army Documents re Bacterial Warfare Experiments by Japanese	282
<u>EPILOGUE</u>	331
<u>BIBLIOGRAPHY</u>	332
<u>APPENDIX:</u> Captain Guyton's Certificate; WAR CRIME documentary CBS/TV; "Japan Seeks To Blot Out Its Militarism" news story of June 12, 1988.	333 A-1
<u>ARTICLES AND PUBLICATIONS INDEX</u>	
LONDON TIMES 8/12/85	109
MILWAUKEE SENTINEL 8/12/85	110
ALLIANCE OF SHAME 20/20 ABC/TV - 12/5/85	118
Article: Survivors to Describe Japanese Germ Warfare Tests	149
Article: The Devil's Gluttony by Morimura	150
JAPAN TIMES re General Ishii 9/5/82	151-152
STARS & STRIPES 10/20/86	154
CONGRESSIONAL HEARING of 9/17/86	159-227
THE SEA AND POISON quotes	242
U.S. ARMY Declassified Documents re Biological Warfare Experiments by Japanese	282-330
WAR CRIME CBS/TV 60 Minutes - April 4, 1982	Appendix
MILWAUKEE JOURNAL 7/11/46	39

PICTURE INDEX

	<u>Page</u>
Sandy 5/1/87	2
Sandy, age 21	3
Sandy as POW Commander, 1986	4
Sandy with wife Jayne, 1987	5
Beheadment of American POW	7
Vitamin Deficiency/Disease Chart	29
Medals and Awards	35-38
Sandy with General Wainwright	39
Map of POW camps	40
Janesville Memorial	51
Death March Photos	66-68
Sandy's POW group w/Guards in Manila	73
Remains of POWs	76
Living POW Skeletons	77
Fukuoka POWs	83
POW Photos	91-93
Chuck Lewis/POW at Mukden, Manchuria	108

PART I

SANDY: P.O.W.

DEATH MARCH SURVIVOR

AMERICAN HERO

CHAPTER I

SANDY

SANDY

SURVIVOR -- PATRIOT -- HERO

Chapter I

"The guards in charge of the farm felt what they were doing was important, so they supervised closely. Some of the guards had a little unofficial game they played. A native hoe handle was tapered out like a pick handle. Well, their game -- Knock Head Off With Hoe. They'd sneak up behind a man and see how far they could whack his hat. Most of us wore a native sun helmet made out of coconut fiber. Kind of peaked with a narrower brim than our sun helmet. So if you lagged behind your line while weeding on your hands and knees, you could get a whack. It was like golf. If they topped the hat with their swing they didn't get any distance. Swing too low, well the hat would fly and roll quite a ways, but the victim got knocked cock stiff. My friend, Owen Sandmire, got more than one concussion this way. Now he has total memory loss. There is more than one reason for a man not remembering much about prison camp."

Sgt. Forrest Knox, page 234
DEATH MARCH, The Survivors of Bataan

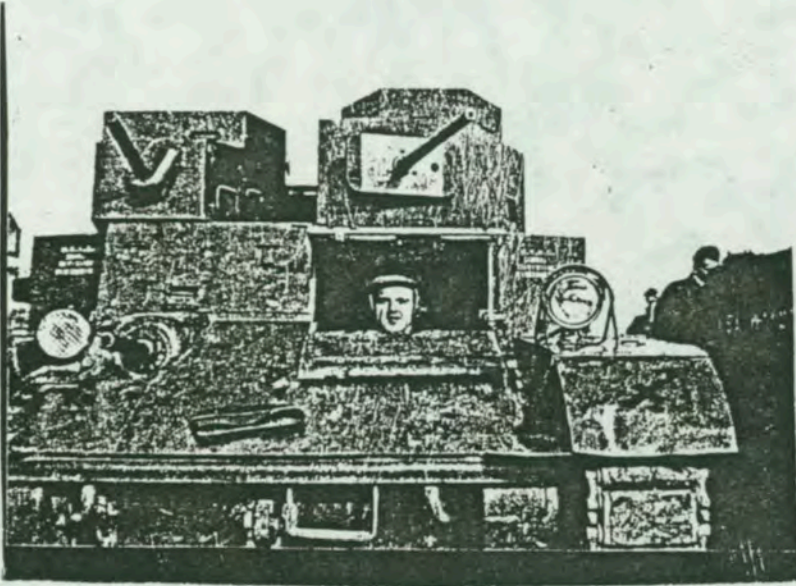
This is the story of one brave, heroic American who, along with other brave heroic Americans, was right there in the front lines in the Philippines when the Japanese attacked the United States of America on December 7, 1941 and World War II erupted violently in the Pacific. What these brave heroes suffered is beyond the comprehension of civilized people. But the courage they showed and the suffering they endured delayed the enemy advance for six months. They held the overwhelming enemy forces at bay these six months with no reinforcements, no supplies, and as they ran out of food, fuel, medicine and ammunition, they continued to fight -- stranded in these islands -- until, in order to save lives and avoid total annihilation, their military superiors ordered them to lay down their arms. The Philippines were lost. In my estimation, their epic struggle made the difference between the United States winning or losing the war in the Pacific. At the very least the war was shortened by their vital delay of the Japanese who thought they would roll right over our small, ill-equipped forces in a week or two.



SANDY

May 1, 1987, the day we began working on this narrative.

PRE-WAR SANDY
AGE 21'





Sandy receives his Past Commanders plaque from Tri-County Chapter, American Ex-Prisoners-of-war January, 1987.



May, 1987: Al Meinze, Allan Johnson and Sandy, the three Past Commanders of Tri-County Chapter, AX-POW, rejoice over state trophy received for largest percentage of membership increase in the state of Florida for 1986, Sandy's year as Commander.



Sandy and his wife Jayne were married September 25, 1946
at Richland Center, Wisconsin

Owen "Sandy" Sandmire, one of seven children in a home that also included his parents, his grandmother, and a young man his parents took in to raise, left home and struck out on his own when he was 15 years old because, as he put it, "We had a happy home, with lots of love, but Dad was a barber and just couldn't make enough to keep all of us, so I left." He learned early in life to struggle, as did many of the survivors of the Japanese-held prisoners-of-war. Perhaps this helped to mold him and give him the strength he would need during his imprisonment. There is a similarity of admirable characteristics common in many of these men. They are survivors! They are fighters! They are heroes in every sense of the word! Sandy has this strength, determination, courage, leadership, and once he determines the direction he should go, the set of his jaw and the glint in his eye tells you he is in charge. Yet with these strong, hardy qualities, he is a loving, gentle, kind, compassionate man with a delightful sense of humor, quick to laugh and enjoy life and his many friends. He is active in many civic and veterans organizations where he never refuses to help. He is dependable. He is understanding. He laughs often, but you know instantly when he is serious. He doesn't hesitate to take charge in a difficult situation and see it through. He exudes trust -- I would trust him with my life. He is my friend and I thank God for that. Undoubtedly there are other men who have these many qualities and characteristics who were never POWs. But American ex-prisoners-of-war have a special quality. Perhaps their baptism of fire, the horrors that defy description, have fused in them a rare quality that also defies description. It is like quicksilver -- a shining cloak that sets them apart!

The compassion, bravery and patriotism of Sandy, and all American ex-prisoners-of-war, warms my heart with pride for them. All combat veterans know and understand what it means to fight for freedom. The POW understands not only the combat fight for freedom, but the realism of the loss of that freedom. They zealously guard against its loss. Their love of country shines vividly. Many Americans take all the benefits of freedom for granted. Not the POW! We who live free lives in a free country cannot fully understand the meaning of loss of that freedom. The POW does! A POW held by the Japanese could, would and did lose his head for whatever reason at the whim of his captors if he couldn't or didn't act quickly enough to satisfy them. The term "lose his head" is not the trite expression we use daily. He did, in fact, lose his head by being beheaded. The POW had no rights under the Geneva Convention rules for the treatment of prisoners-of-war.

Despite the difficulties involved for him in light of the first paragraph of this narrative, Sandy willingly worked to help me get this tragic story of the suffering of the POWs held by the Japanese -- and especially his own personal saga -- down in print. He gave much thought to his recitation of what he can remember and related it perfectly. As we discussed the possibility of writing more, he told me, "I just can't remember." He made this valiant effort because future generations should know, understand, and remember how these



(U.S. Air Force)

Allied prisoner of war being decapitated by Japanese executioner in Japanese-held territory somewhere in the Southwest Pacific.

heroic men -- and women, those "Angels of Bataan and Corregidor" the nurses who were also captured by a cruel, sadistic, inhumane, enemy -- suffered and so many died.

Sandy is very active in a number of veterans organizations: The American Ex-Prisoners of War; Disabled American Veterans; American Legion; American Defenders of Bataan and Corregidor; and Veterans of Foreign Wars. He retired in 1978 as Power Plant Supervisor for the Oscar Mayer Foods Corporation and moved to Venice, Florida in March, 1981, with his wife Jayne. They have one daughter, Caryl Lee. He loves to fish or just go boating. He buzzes around Venice on his motorcycle, a holdover from his combat days when he drove one as a reconnaissance sergeant around Bataan when he wasn't driving his tank. A 32^o Mason, he is a member of the Blue Lodge and Charter member of Sahib Shrine, Sarasota.

Sandy lives with the pain common to these men held by the Japanese, caused by the diseases he had as a POW, listed in full on the following pages and including malnutrition, avitaminosis (lack of vitamins); dysentery; worms; scabies; skin diseases; pellegra; beriberi, wet; diphtheria; scurvy; dengue fever; innumerable beatings; bloody urine; loss of sight; etc. etc. The tortuous burning pain in his stomach never ceases despite modern medications. But his demeanor never shows it.

After six years in the Army, Sandy was Honorably Discharged as a Staff Sergeant.

A mutual friend once described Sandy as "somewhat of a loner". This is not a true description as he is always there, wherever needed by whatever group requires his services. He is willing, cooperative, a very open, yet a very private person. This privacy is probably what prompted that assessment. At times he'll be deep, deep in thought and that protective shell, impenetrable, goes around him. You could pound on that big beautiful heart of his forever, but only if he feels it is safe will he let you inside his being. He needed this protection to survive as a POW and now, over 40 years later, he still has a need for it at times. This is not a characteristic unique to Sandy. It is common in the Japanese-held POWs. They are very special people and have learned through their own bitter experiences as POWs to hold back some of their inner strength and feelings. It is this inner core of self they do not -- cannot -- share. It gets them through.

As he related his story, it was perfection. His soft voice was absolutely controlled and belied the horrors unfolding. Every word attributable to Sandy is written exactly as he stated. In fact when he would digress, he'd turn off the tape. But as he closed with his comment that he lost more than half his body weight while a POW, he shut off the recorder and turning to me said, "I can't remember any more." Why? Go back and read paragraph one, page one, again and you can understand. "I could relate this in order from the beginning, but if I try to jump around, then it's just gone. It's just not there."

Sandy was concerned that his friend's description of his "total memory loss" is not correct in that he is able to remember some things, although most of it is gone. He wants to make this clear to the reader and is painstakingly careful that every minute detail is absolutely correct. Another of his character traits. For example, I had written he lost two teeth in the service. He carefully (and patiently) explained he lost only one tooth. The other had to be pulled when he returned in order to make the bridge fit. His total honesty would not permit him to consider that the loss of the second tooth was due to the loss of the first one. But that's Sandy.

Men who were with Sandy have told him of horrors that happened. He cannot recall. Cannot remember. "I'm telling all I know with no holds barred," he related with that wonderful sincerity he has, "but there is a lot that is just gone -- like big holes in my memory of some of the really bad stuff." I suggested to him perhaps in addition to the grievous blows to his head, his mind is protecting itself in this way. He thoughtfully considered this and softly replied, "Maybe." This conversation was in response to my telling him of my experience shortly after starting to write his story. At a dinner party, I was asked how the writing was going. I had just been writing Sandy's account of the hellships and started to relate it when I burst uncontrollably into tears, much to the surprise of everyone present, including myself. But suddenly I understood that transcribing from tape, I needed to go over and over it to catch Sandy's every word, and the horror of what he was telling, the absolute horror unfolding, burned into my heart where just reading the written word cannot. Nor did the hearing about the hellships make me understand as I had heard it from others who survived them, even my own husband. But hearing Sandy tell it on tape, as I listened over and over, suddenly painted a stark picture in my mind that helped me understand more-so the horrors those men endured. No wonder POWs only talk to other POWs. Only someone who has lived through these horrors can understand fully what they went through!

For awhile I was sorry I had told Sandy how it had affected me as he then felt perhaps it was too painful for me to hear. Of course it is painful to hear -- painful for him to tell -- painful for the reader to read. THEY LIVED IT! It must be told -- must be written so we cannot ever forget what these brave men endured. "People cannot imagine or understand the horror of it all," Sandy told me. "The Japanese are cruel and inhuman. You just cannot trust them. No way!!" These same words are echoed over and over from the POWs. They have an absolute and total distrust of the Japanese. Chuck Lewis, shortly before his death in 1983, when asked on a VA form to describe the horrors of the 3½ years as a POW of the Japanese replied, "Why bother. People don't want to believe the truth."

In this year of 1987, Sandy is one of only 12 survivors of this hell who is still living of the original 99 of his tank group who were captured in the fall of Bataan, April 9, 1942. In this year of 1987 only 13 per cent of all those captured by the Japanese survive. Thirty-five per cent died in captivity. This figure does not include the thousands who died in battle in the Philippines.*

(* A Follow-Up Study of World War II Prisoners of War, page 4, Table 2 - Cohen & Cooper, September 1953.)

Today these few who survive -- men in their 60's -- are a rarity for 87 per cent of their counterparts are dead long before their God-given three score and ten years elapsed.

The horrors these men endured is beyond the comprehension of a civilized mind that does not want to accept this total inhumanity. It is too painful -- easier to deny. It is this incomprehension that plagues the POWs as they struggle to get care for their innumerable health problems from VA doctors, yes, and even civilian doctors, who have never seen a person who has a history of starvation, beatings for 3½ years; have never heard of the ailments from which they suffer except in a textbook many years ago in medical school -- once -- maybe. Through recently passed legislation some care is becoming available to these men, but the bureaucracy and idiocy these men must endure to obtain what is theirs by law is more than they want, or are able to, deal with, so all too often they tell the VA where to stick their compensation, and which, unfortunately, the VA is all too happy to do in too many instances.

Not only doctors are ignorant of the problems plaguing POWs, but the abysmal stupidity of men in Washington dealing with POW issues is appalling. In a hearing September 17, 1986, by a subcommittee of the Committee on Veterans Affairs, House of Representatives, on the Treatment of American Prisoners of War in Manchuria (where my husband was held), a Mr. Moon, identified only as counsel for the Committee so I presume he must have gone to school at some time in his life, shows his total ignorance of the facts concerning POWs held by the Japanese. They ALL had malnutrition and beriberi among the numerous other things listed previously and following this narrative, a fact undisputed by anyone who has ever studied the POWs. But Mr. Moon (first name must be Blue for he lives in Never-Never Land) says, quote: "(This) is not as much a question as it is a statement, hopefully reassuring to you, about beriberi and malaria and those other things. You could very well, and probably, did have malnutrition and beriberi while you were in the camp. ... Now, granted, they may not find any official records of beriberi. But you didn't have any symptoms when you got out for (several) reasons. If you had, they would have granted you service connection for it." Time out while all POWs reading this roar with laughter -- they ALL had it -- it was not recognized, or was not recorded, or in their delight to be back in the USA they wanted only to go home. Whatever the reasons, there is

no doubt that ALL POWs held by the Japanese had malnutrition and beriberi among myriad other ailments. Now, back to that *nincompoop Moon: "Number two, you probably couldn't have re-enlisted right away. But I assure you, the operation of the law in the VA, if you ever have any symptoms from malnutrition or beriberi or malaria, they will grant you benefits if they're disabling. You will have no problem, even though at this time they say it's not service-connected. Mainly it's because they have no records that you have anything from it. ... I understand you do have about 14 or 15 service-connected disabilities." unquote. (Emphasis provided.)

* Mr. Moon is speaking to a witness who was held 3½ years as a POW by the Japanese, who even Mr. Moon admits has 14 or 15 service-connected disabilities. Mr. Moon doesn't try to explain how this POW can have 14 or 15 service-connected disabilities and yet not have had the most prevalent -- malnutrition and beriberi. As one of the POW witnesses commented, "You are straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel." Concerning his comment on reenlisting, these disabled POWs reenlisted, yes, because they feared their disabilities would keep them from finding work. The services would take them IF they would sign a waiver of their disabilities. I state this as factual as my husband, Chuck Lewis, was almost totally blind but the Navy would sign him for another hitch if he would sign the waiver, which he refused to do.

The above-mentioned House hearing is printed in full herein. The above digression is to further clarify the difficulties the POW has experienced in getting care for his many disabilities from the day he returned home from hell.

Sandy is presently undergoing examinations and treatments at VA facilities. Despite his many health problems which are printed in full here, the VA has granted him only twenty per cent disability compensation, which is ridiculous in face of the following listings of what he had in POW camp and what he has now. He received nothing for years, then ten percent, and only last year, 1986, was it raised to twenty per cent. His questions to the VA go unanswered.

"When I come out of there," he related, "I don't know what the hell went on. I'm just totally confused. They don't tell me a damn thing." Almost every POW I've ever talked with tells the same story. WHY must this be a fact of life for them? It is difficult enough for them to cope without the VA bureaucracy creating more frustration and aggravation for them. Most of them just cannot cope with that!

Sandy's many illnesses and diseases while a POW and upon his return home and at present we were able to list by using VA Form 10-0048 entitled Former POW Medical History as a guide.

* In fairness to Mr. Moon, if he is playing devil's advocate, I will try to understand. If not, I mean every last word.

The many problems of POWs are listed on this form and we went through it one by one. Our conversations concerning these health problems follows:

DISEASES, ILLNESSES AND INJURIES INCURRED BY OWEN "SANDY"
SANDMIRE DURING THE 3½ YEARS HE WAS HELD BY THE JAPANESE
AS A PRISONER OF WAR, WWII:

Captured in the capitulation of the Philippines; survived
the infamous Bataan Death March.

1. Malnutrition
2. Avitaminosis
3. Dysentery
4. Malaria
5. Hernia
6. Worms
7. Scabies
8. Skin diseases, rashes, blisters, dry scaly skin
9. Pellegra
10. Beriberi - wet
11. Diphtheria
12. Scurvy
13. Dengue Fever
14. Numerous and severe beatings
15. Bloody urine (particularly after beatings)
16. Loss of sight
17. Pain, numbness, tingling in feet and fingers
18. Sore mouth, sore tongue, sores at angles of mouth
19. Excessive thirst
20. Swollen glands
21. Tropical ulcers (still carry scars on body)
22. Numbness & weakness in arms and legs
23. Broken left wrist
24. Nausea, vomiting, diarrhea
25. Chills, aches, pains in muscles, joints & throughout
entire body
26. Fever
27. Frequent urination
28. Unsteady gait
29. Swelling in Joints
30. Swelling in legs and feet
31. Headaches, severe
32. Extreme fatigue
33. Nightmares
34. Indigestion - stomach pains - severe gastritis
35. Leg cramps
36. Body lice & parasites

The following page lists the health problems Sandy faces today and has had to face since his return home. It is not difficult for even an untrained eye to see the similarities of the POW days, but in too many cases the VA is blind to this obvious fact. At present Sandy receives only 20% disability compensation for his many disabilities. It goes against his grain to ask the VA for anything. The bureaucratic insensibility turns off the POW completely. They all echo the words of one of their own, Chuck Lewis, who said, "I had to take that shit from the Japs! I don't have to take it from the VA!!"

PRESENT HEALTH PROBLEMS

Sandy's present health problems undoubtedly are attributable to the 3½ years as a prisoner of war in Japan. It is obvious they are service-connected to the foregoing history of the diseases, illnesses, injuries, beatings and forced slave labor in coal mines during this period of time:

1. Irritable Bowel Disorder (becoming uncontrollable)
2. Hernia - 5 operations to date - first one was April, 1947.
3. Severe stomach distress - constant pain
4. Gastritis
5. Nightmares - still continuing several times a week - violent
6. Sleep disorders - apnea - insomnia
7. Headaches - becoming more and more severe
8. Numbness, pain in wrist, hands
9. Leg cramps
10. Severe pain continually in back and lower spine
11. Severe pain continually in feet and hips
12. Severe pain continually in lower abdomen
13. Hiatal hernia - troublesome
14. Problems with eyes - optic nerve - optic atrophy
15. Possible skin cancer on lip
16. Blister inside lip - persistent
17. Tightness in legs - pushing flesh with finger leaves indentation deep in the flesh - exactly the same as in POW camp with Wet Beriberi
18. Pain in back precludes manual labor of any kind at any time.
19. Shooting, stabbing pains like an ice pick in the back
20. Sacroiliac is extremely painful -- all this is attributable to slave labor, beatings, jackhammer in coal mine in Japan under extreme conditions - daily, with insufficient rest and insufficient diet - totally inadequate - barely enough to sustain life with no physical exertion, and totally deficient for POWs performing exhausting hard, slave labor.
21. Stomach ulcers - treated in past years
22. Memory loss
23. Swollen glands
24. Unsteady gait
25. Episodes of passing out, fainting, blackouts

Sandy's comments on the foregoing lists: We begin the form:--

BEATINGS: 'I was lucky that I wasn't ever hit in the mouth with a club, rifle butt or samurai sword, but I got plenty of knocks in the head. But only lost 1 tooth. Just before the war the dentist was doing what in today's terminology was a root canal on those teeth. But when the first bombers came over he dove into a hole and never did come out. He was scared to death. And I lost that tooth.

"The damage to my arm, wrist and hand was from protecting my head during beatings. The wrist I broke when I was being beaten down in the mine and fell into a drainage creek. The guard took the battery from his mine light -- are you familiar with the miners hat with the light? Well, he had a nasty habit of taking this battery off and turning the light off so you couldn't see where he was and then he'd start swinging this heavy battery on the end of that wire as hard as he could wherever he happened to be. Fortunately I only got it this one time because he hit me hard and knocked me clear over into this ditch and when I fell I stuck this hand out somewhere and broke my wrist. He figured I was done for so he just left me lay there. Well, he didn't knock me out, so when he left I managed to take off and followed my crew down in the face of the tunnel where we were dynamiting.

"My back - don't forget my back - my back is not worth a tinkers whatever. Just worn out, I guess, from working in that stinking coal mine. I just can't do any manual labor of any kind for any length of time at all. It just gives out. And I get these shooting pains, like someone sticking an ice pick in your back.

SCURVY: "Our tongues just got raw, as did our genitals, just like raw hamburger. Did I tell you about the time we were down in that bowling alley barracks galley and Curly Combs, remember, the guy that got cut up so bad in that prop, he just couldn't do anything so we made him our cook. We got ahold of some Japanese alcohol. Where the hell we got it I don't know, or who got it, I don't know. But we got about half bent out of shape one night and we'd been riding in these trucks all day and it was hot and we were perspiring. And I guess it was pellegra and scurvy that affected us that way but sweating on all that raw flesh, we were miserable and burning like fire. So I took this alcohol and just touched a spot of it, and oh boy, it felt good for a minute, so I just took a handful of it and splashed it all over myself. Well, my God, it was just like sitting on a blow torch. Man, I headed for a shower and I must have stayed there an hour to relieve that burning. Oh my God, that was awful. (Note: Blunt, detailed episode related by Forrest Knox will be found in chapter on Death March quotes. I told Sandy I was going to skip that story, but he laughed loudly and said, "No way - go ahead and tell it.") So I did -- you'll find it in Death March Quotes. Later as Sandy was perusing the manuscript he ran across it and, having forgotten he'd given me permission to quote it, laughed until I thought he'd turn wrong side out!)

INTIMIDATION: "Yes -- constant, and of course the beatings were constant."

(NOTE: Although the following is more fully related under Sandy's Own Words, part is included here.)

" 'Air Raid' was the name we gave this Japanese guard. He got this name for the simple reason that if things didn't go just right he'd just blow up. He had a short fuse. The first thing he'd do is just start beating on people -- just to relieve his frustration.

"It was Air Raid who nailed me with that pick handle. Boy, that really decked me! We were getting ready to prepare potatoes for planting. You had to have one or two eyes per section. I'd done this for about a week but Air Raid didn't happen to be there. So I was sitting there biding my time. 'Oooooo -- oooooo,' he said. I looked up and he said words to the effect, 'Do you understand how to do this?' I said, 'Yes' and he said, 'Oh, a smart ass, huh!' and he came over and belted me one in the head with that pick handle because I guess that he thought I was saying I knew more about planting potatoes than he did. He was satisfied! He knocked me down! Knocked me out! I had a concussion but what can I do about it? I was in camp but was in the hospital for about ten days or so. Hospital in Cabanatuan means you lay there on half rations until you die or recover enough to leave."

WITNESS BEATINGS: "Oh my gosh, yes!"

TORTURE: "Did I tell you about this Philippino who was across the street from where they kept us in this bowling alley? They'd break out this poor guy instead of going to the show! They'd bring out this Philippino who they suspected stole this truck. After we got back to Cabanatuan Knocky ran across this guard who was in the bunch who tortured this Philippino. In fact, Knocky talked to the Philippino who actually stole the truck who told him he sold it for a couple of bucks. But we could hear this guy screaming night after night. The Japs would stick lighted cigarettes up his nose, in his ears, urinating on him, come up behind him and belt him one in the back and -- ohhhh -- this poor guy!! And this went on for weeks! And how that poor guy even could live that long, I don't know. It was right across from where we were. We couldn't miss it. In fact, they wanted us to see. Of course, he was only one of how many thousands of POWs that were treated the same way.

"And Bob Courtney tells about in the Singapore area how they'd put pieces of wood between the fingers and squeeze them together to break the fingers. (See details of tortures used in Chapter entitled Kempei Tai.) You know when they did that to Americans they sure as hell did it to Philipinos

and other captives. They'd use all kinds of ways to make captives cooperate. Mostly where I was they'd celebrate "Beat The Prisoner Day" where they'd break us all out just to beat the hell out of us.

"And I heard about the water treatment -- that's where they filled them so full of water and then jump on them. Whooooeee!!

"What they did to us was take a ball bat and put it right between your knees and make you kneel down with that ball bat. A little of that and you couldn't walk. The other was they'd give you a 50 pound sack of cement and make you hold it like this (arms outstretched fully in front -- chest high) and I mean you held it like this and if you started dropping down they'd belt you across the back and you'd pick it back up and hold the fool thing until you either passed out or they gave up or you held it long enough to satisfy them. That was their two most favorite forms other than getting us out of bed at all hours of the night for close-order drill so they could teach us marching and understand all the Japanese commands with all the bowing and the scraping and the high-stepping and the goose-stepping. That was one form of mass punishment -- they got their jollies from getting us out in the middle of the night -- colder than you-know-what in whatever night clothes you had to sleep in -- that's how you got out. They didn't give you a chance to put anything on -- OUT!!"

(NOTE: The author personally saw the scars on the forearms and back of the neck of Bert Riggs, POW friend of my husband Chuck Lewis, and Bert described to me how the Japanese tied them down, put a cottony type wadding on their arms and neck and set fire to it and let it smoulder. "We yelled!" Bert related, "We couldn't help it!")

PROLONGED PERIODS OF FEAR AND ANXIETY: "Yes, of course."

PROLONGED PERIODS OF DEPRESSION: "Yes!"

PROLONGED PERIODS OF HELPLESSNESS: "That hellship is what broke a lot of us. That was the worst! That and the diphtheria -- they put me in Zero Ward and that kinda gets to you because you know they figure you won't come out."

(NOTE: Details are found in Sandy's Own Words chapter.)
"We were packed into boxcars in the Philippines like sardines, only standing up, so tight we couldn't fall down even if we died. I can't remember if we were in those boxcars one or maybe two full days in that tropical sun. The hellship we were packed in for TWO FULL MONTHS, ALMOST TO THE DAY!"

LONELINESS AND ISOLATION FROM OTHER POWs: "You suffered a lot of loneliness, yes, but not isolation from others. You were away from your loved ones but you still had your friends and buddies."

PERIODS OF NIGHTMARES, CONFUSION OR DELIRIUM DURING CAPTIVITY:

"I can't remember when the nightmares started, but I still have 2 or 3 a week. Confusion or delirium, of course, I wouldn't remember that although I'm pretty sure I was delirious when I had diphtheria."

THOUGHTS OF SUICIDE: "NO -- I WOULD NEVER GIVE UP!!!! NO WAY!!!" (NOTE: Here again that inner strength of these survivors shines through in Sandy's compelling words, delivered with magnificent force.)

DYSENTERY: "I contracted amoebic dysentery before the Philippines was surrendered, while we were still fighting, down on the Bataan peninsula from the food, water and everything else. I didn't get malaria, not even in O'Donnell, until I got back to Manila -- that's when I got malaria. But that darn amoebic dysentery was always with me -- always with me -- the whole time! I was first examined when I returned home at the University of Wisconsin Hospital at Madison. I think this was after I first went to Wood Hospital with amoebic dysentery and this Dr. Middleton, who went out of his way with all this happy crap with saluting and all that, he had a group of about 20 people with ME as the subject. They found these open sores, bleeding ulcerated things in the large intestine caused by the amoebic dysentery. Just last year when I took the POW exam at the VA they still found evidence of those ulcers."

MALARIA: "Yep."

WORMS: "Yes."

SCABIES: "Yes."

SKIN DISEASE: "Yes, see this spot on my hand? It's been there ever since I was a POW. Always scaly, bleeds. I don't know how many kinds of ointments doctors have given me through the years. Nothing helps."

VITAMIN DEFICIENCY: "Oh my, yes."

PELLAGRA: "Yes."

BERIBERI: "Yes, I had wet beriberi. You said Chuck had both kinds. That dry beriberi is by far the most painful. I remember our First Sergeant when he had it he'd cry like a baby from the pain. (NOTE: Elsewhere is the description of Sandy's legs today with the pain and swelling exactly like beriberi.)"

SCURVY: "Yes."

DENGUE FEVER: "Yes, boy, that stuff can make you feel downright miserable."

CHEST PAIN and RAPID HEART BEATS: "Chest pains and rapid heart beats were most noticeable during beatings -- oh yeah! You'd just get so doggone mad that you just about would explode."

DIPHTHERIA and IMPAIRED VISION: "There's something wrong in my eyes now, but they can't make up their minds what to do. Something wrong with the retina. In prison camp I could see better at night than daytime. I lost my sight in Manila when I got diphtheria and I can't recall when I got it back. But I do know I still had the paralysis when I lost my sight because I'd have to crawl on my hands and knees. I couldn't walk. And I lost all my balance, and even today I have trouble with an unsteady gait at times. Have had that all these years. People probably think I'm drunk -- that would be OK if I was, but I have it even if I'm not drinking. That diphtheria just about got me -- my weight went down to 85 pounds. When I'd try to swallow it would come out my nose. My bodily functions were all loused up. I had absolutely no control over them. And this lasted in prison camp for some time, I tell you. You betcha!! This lasted even after I got out of Zero Ward. Just had no balance.

"When I got home I was having trouble with my eyes so went to a doctor and darned if I didn't need glasses. Never needed them my entire life -- for those 26 years. I'm certain this thing overseas was the cause of that -- losing my sight with the diphtheria. Just couldn't see. Now they say I have astigmatism, and this problem with my left eye, whatever that is. My distance vision is pretty good right now, but have had to have glasses since June, 1946."

SUNBURN: "Sunburn? Yes, terrible sunburn. How we ever lived through that tropical sun I don't know. In the Philippines I managed to get me a piece of denim -- how I don't know -- and sewed up myself a pair of shorts with buttons and everything. No top, no bottoms, no nothing. And in that tropical sun it was just like fire. Even now across my back you can still see where my belt was. Even in the winter up north when I never got any sun after the war, you could see where that sun burned to a crisp."

SLEEP APNEA: "I honestly don't know but I do know Jayne gets scared as hell wondering if I died."

EXCESSIVE THIRST: "Oh my gosh, yes. I can still hear the clanking of canteens of guys trying to get water. So bad at times, especially on the hellships, that guys were drinking their own urine."

NIGHTMARES: "Oh Jeez -- that same little stinking Jap has been chasing me for 45 years -- that same one. And he catches up to me and I want to hit him and I just paralyze. I can't swing an arm, I just can't do a thing. And he stands there and beats the hell outa me and I can't do a thing about it. And I wake up in a cold sweat. Jeez -- poor Jayne, I'd wake up in the night just beating the hell out of her. I'm just afraid to sleep with her any more. I don't know what in the hell I'm going to do. I'm always trying to protect myself. It's that little Jap in the picture -- Mickey the Rat. That little bastard!!!"

DIPHTHERIA: "Would you believe I survived diphtheria with one aspirin. Lost absolute control of all bodily functions and laid in my own filth, urine and excrement for six weeks. Lost my eyesight and went down to 85 pounds laying there in Zero Ward. Nobody ever comes out of Zero Ward alive but I did. How I survived I just don't know."

"I'm getting to the point now where I can't control my bodily functions. Just like when I had diphtheria. I know it is a result of my having diphtheria in prison camp because it acts the same way. I think they call it "irritable bowel disorder" now."

(Looking at a picture of an inmate of Dachau Concentration Camp in a book I brought back from there while visiting Germany -- a picture of a living skeleton, Sandy said: "You know, that's just how I looked in POW camp when I had diphtheria.")

PAIN: "I have pain all over my body. My hands, my elbows, my shoulders, my knees, my feet, my neck, my back -- you name it. I'm full of pain."

"I have a constantly sore abdomen way down in here -- like somebody stuck a boil in there, and I mean that's ALL the time."

EYES: "The VA eye doctor at Fort Myers told me I've got this reflective thing where the pupil concentrates on - what do they call it - the retina. It's all crumpled up. They think a laser might help straighten it out. I lost my sight when I had diphtheria but later it came back but I've always had to wear glasses since I got back."

One evening as we were working together, Sandy struggled painfully to his feet. In response to my query as to whether he was getting tired he said, "I'm going to stand up a minute -- I get pain right in here" (indicating lower back and hips) and emitted a low whistle as one in severe pain will do. "Will a pillow help?" I asked. "Nothing helps! Just have to get up and move around."

As he moved about to relieve the pain he said, "My legs are just like rocks. Look here." He rolled up his pants leg and punched his finger deep into the flesh. As he removed his finger, the hole in his leg stayed. He took ahold of my hand and punched my finger into his leg time and again until it looked like a golf ball. "That's just like beriberi," he stated matter-of-factly. "They used to be that big around," indicating with his hands forming a circle that looked to me to be the size of an elephant's leg. "I could punch a hole in them with my thumb all the way down to the bone and it would stay right there. Clear down to the bone." Then, as is Sandy's way, he laughed and said, "Isn't that crazy?"

DRY, SCALY SKIN: "In addition to that rough, scaly sore spot between my thumb and forefinger I mentioned previously that I've had ever since POW days that no one can figure out, see this spot on my lip. Been there a long, long time. I think it must be a skin cancer."

SORE MOUTH: I have this recurring blister inside my lower lip. It swells up and gets sore as hell and then I cut it off with those little scissors on my knife and it relieves the pressure for awhile until it comes back and I cut it off again."

NERVES, TENSION: (NOTE: Although more than 40 years have elapsed since their release from POW camps, should you walk up behind a POW held by the Japanese and touch him, his muscles suddenly tense, he braces and jerks around. It is described as the "startle reaction" that can be brought on by an ever so innocent and unsuspecting touch of a friend. One evening I walked up behind Sandy and touched his shoulder. He must have jumped a foot and I was devastated when I immediately realized what I had done inadvertently. It is caused by being clubbed, stricken with rifle butts, swords, pick handles, clubs at the whim of his captors, often from behind with no warning. Sandy commented:)
"It's a funny thing, but I was going to tell you about that. This lady I help out part time is the kindest person you could imagine -- gentle. She doesn't like to bother me, so she comes up quietly behind me, almost like she's sneaking up, and it scares the hell outa me. She apologizes and says, 'I'm sorry, I didn't mean to startle you.' Same way with Jayne. She'll come into the room -- same thing. I told the VA guy the same thing, 'Whatever you do, don't come up behind me. I don't know what I'll do.'"

LOSS OF MEMORY:

Sandy was repatriated from the Japanese POW camp on September 15, 1945 and returned to the United States about a month later in mid-October. Less than a year later he was forced to seek medical care at the Wood VA Hospital in Milwaukee for amoebic dysentery; malaria; surgery for hernia - the first of five hernia operations;- and nerves. Nerves -- a small six-letter word that cannot begin to describe the hell it denotes for POWs.

Sandy's private physician referred him to the VA for treatment and Dr. Musser, a private psychiatrist who also worked for the VA, was assigned Sandy's case. For the next eight years Sandy poured out his rage and frustration to Dr. Musser. In this regard Sandy was more fortunate than most returned POWs who never saw a psychiatrist and did not have an opportunity to "unload". Yet, with professional help, phenobarbital and other medications to ease his tenseness, it is still there after all these years -- a scar on his very soul that will not heal.

One evening as we worked together on this book, I asked Sandy if the POW experience left him with psychological or emotional problems. He paused, took a deep breath and softly replied, "Ah -- yes."

"Do you want to tell me about it?" I asked.

"Yes -- Dr. Musser was my psychiatrist for eight years -- a shrink. All I can remember of those eight years was just the hashing over of things that happened to me and the end results. I don't know if it helped me or not. I honestly don't know. He'd prescribe phenobarbital and I'd pop those things like they were M&Ms. I don't know if I just outgrew it myself or if he helped me, I honestly don't know. But it was some way I could let off steam. He was a guy I could let off steam to.

"I remember Knocky (Forrest Knox) saying in Death March how fortunate Sandy was he has memory loss and can't remember these horrible things that happened. So it was prior to when that book was published that my memory went. In fact, there is so little I can remember right now that happened those first ten years after I got home. It's just a big blur. I had my memory when I got home -- definitely. It's just like I draw a line. I can remember things, and then I can't. I can't remember my wife or daughter's birthdays. I really can't unless I can relate those dates to something else to help me remember. Jack Gerlæk; a very, very good friend of mine, flies down once a year to see me. He'll ask me things and hell, I can't remember. But he'll keep asking and asking, and maybe he thinks I'm crazy sometimes

because I can't remember, but I really can't. Maybe I should, but I can't! Seems like half of my life is just bottled right up!"

The constrained emotion in his voice as he uttered that last sentence prompted me to ask, "Can you accept that, Sandy?"

"Yeah -- well, hell, I haven't any choice. It doesn't make that much difference. If I want to know anything, I can find it out. Like right now I'm trying to think of this -- there I go again -- like the word "protocol" for the VA exam. Sometimes I can sit for a week and not be able to think of that word. It's very frustrating! I think it is from -- well, I don't know -- from the diphtheria when I dropped down to 85 pounds, or the blows to the head, or a mixture. It really doesn't bother me unless I get mad enough when I can't think of something. I couldn't think of this guy's name here awhile back. Hell, I made three or four long distance calls around the country trying to find out his name and finally, on Thanksgiving Day, I found out. And that had been going on since the middle of October.

"When I first went to work at the Oscar Mayer plant I don't know if I necessarily felt that I was being picked on or if I had a chip on my shoulder or if this guy was just an overbearing whatever, which I think he was. He was a bossy type boss. Apparently he just hit me wrong and something back in here said I'm gonna rebel -- I'm not taking that happy crap from anybody. Seems like I fought that for all those years. The doctor -- Musser -- told me once -- he really put it to me -- something like, well, that I was a miserable guy, hard to get along with, a chip on my shoulder. I said, 'Hey, damn, doc! This is a free country isn't it? Can't I do and say what I want?' We were really nitpicking this thing and I felt I was right and he felt he was right. I told him, 'Doc, this is a free country and I'm still entitled to my opinions.' I presume this is what he was trying to change. Apparently I had the wrong opinion.

"So actually, I don't know that he helped me much. I do know one thing. I got to be a foreman when this guy that hassled me so much was still in the same department as foreman. Boy, he resented that. He never recognized me as a foreman. I had just as much authority as he did and he didn't like that one bit. I think he was the one who had the problem! He was just a smart-ass. One of those who feels if he didn't think of it, it's no good. An attitude like that. That the place couldn't run without him. He was a 4-F S.O.B."

It must be stated here that Sandy worked his way up the corporate ladder in the Oscar Mayer Company from 1946 until 1978 when he retired as their power house supervisor in Sherman, Texas. He speaks with genuine affection of Oscar Mayer, the man, and of his friendship and kindnesses to Sandy and Jayne through those many years. Certainly that is not a description of a "miserable guy, hard to get along with, chip on the shoulder" type person such as the doctor described Sandy. I have known Sandy for three years -- very closely this past year as he shared the horror of POW life with me and we talked of gut-wrenching, deep-down feelings. I have never -- NEVER -- seen any part of him that would come anywhere near such a description. I was stunned to hear Sandy tell this -- coming from a doctor. I am firmly convinced that once again the lack of understanding by professionals who hope to help the POW only muddies the waters. Can't they realize that it is this very strength from within -- this rebellion -- this refusal to take any "happy crap" as Sandy terms it -- the "dare" to knock that chip off his shoulder -- is precisely that iron core in the very depths of his soul that made him survive when there was no hope of survival. If the professionals succeed in taking away that spark of inextinguishable flame from the marrow of his soul, the POW would die.

I was angry! Angry that with all the hurt the POW has endured, that he still must struggle for understanding and compassion. Angry that with all the problems Sandy had to cope with, he was told by someone who thought he was helping him, that it was all Sandy's doing. Bull shit!!

SWOLLEN GLANDS: "Yes, and still have them."

BREAST LUMPS/SWELLING: "Now this is something crazy. While we were POWs our breasts would swell and you could squeeze them and actually get milk out of the nipples. The doctor said this was a common occurrence. It must have thrown our hormone balance off -- the diet and diseases. I thought I'd better be careful -- I might get pregnant."

BLOODY URINE: "Oh yeah - especially after beatings."

HEADACHES: "A lot, yes."

ACHES OR PAINS IN MUSCLES AND/OR JOINTS: "Oh yes, a lot of pain as a POW and today, well there is not a part of me that does not have pain. The diet and diseases, the beatings, the slave labor, and that back-breaking coal mine -- it took it's toll."

SHORTNESS OF BREATH: "Sometimes I think I'm going to die! I just can't get my breath. Over just the simplest thing -- just start coughing and it's just like somebody's got me by the throat. I can't tell you how many times this happens. I was home alone one night and this started up and I thought, 'Oh my God, here it goes again' and I started running for the neighbors, which was the worst thing I could do. I kinda halfway panic, I guess. Don't know what they could do for me, but by the time I got there I was going 'uh-uh-uh' (gasping sound) and was able to get some air and came out of it. I've always managed to come out of it somehow or other."

RADIATION EXPOSURE: "I really don't know for sure. Omine Machi was the camp where I was held in Japan and it's not very far from Hiroshima, but the exact mileage is unknown. According to that map we have, it isn't too far."

MAIL: "I received only one form letter in the entire 3½ years and that was from a woman where I stayed while going to high school, when I was a freshman. My parents got one, maybe two of those printed form postcards from me. My mother knew it was from me because I dotted the 'i' in Sandmire with a funny little circle that I always did. We couldn't write anything -- only sign it."

FRUIT: "The only time we got any fruit was when we were up near the summer capital in northern Luzon. The natives told us about jack-fruit, like a small pineapple but very sweet and stringy, but just loaded with sugar. The Japanese let us go out and pick these. That was the only time in 3½ years we got any fruit."

EXTREME FATIGUE: Oh my God yes!! I could hardly drag one foot in front of the other. Coming out of that coal mine it was uphill all the way. In that cold, slushy weather -- oh boy. Wet tennis shoes on, wading through that cold weather. You can imagine how good that warm water in that vat felt -- no matter how dirty it was. Man, it was just thick and so dirty you could part it with a knife.

GASTRITIS NOW: Oh yeah - I can't begin to tell you how much Maalox I've swallowed since I got home. And I've had stomach ulcers. And a continual pain that nothing helps -- like a boil right in here, that I've had all these years, and it's all the time.

PAIN IN FEET: Yes, terrible pain in my feet. Getting so I can hardly walk any more, and the pain in my hips. My God.

HERNIATED HIATUS: That thing really gives me fits, too.

NUMBNESS: Yeah, mostly in my hands and feet. In fact, I can take a needle and stick it in my foot and can't even feel it.

PAIN IN LOWER BACK: I suspect my sacroiliac is what's giving me fits. I get these real, real sharp pains, and I mean that is one painful son-of-a-gun. It bothers me all the time - my back! It's a constant source of pain. Its from constant strain and overwork -- slave labor -- down in that coal mine. That's what it amounts to.

MUSCLE CRAMPS: Oh yeah! My muscles knot up like you wouldn't believe.

COLLAPSE/BLACKOUTS/PASSING OUT: I've had four major collapses where I just passed out cold -- boom -- just like that. The blackouts -- I have a lot of them. Can't remember what happened. I guess I function OK but just don't know what I've done and can't remember. I'm sure it all stems from all those beatings to my head in prison camp.

It is not difficult to find that any surviving POW has at least 14 or 15 service-connected disabilities. The VA seems to recognize them slowly, one at a time, with great struggle on the part of the POW. In the meantime, should he die of one of the disabilities not recognized yet by the VA, his widow will be denied Dependency Indemnity Compensation. With all of Sandy's health problems, the VA, to date, has granted him only 20 per cent disability -- and that after many, many years at only 10 per cent.

DID YOU GET AN ADEQUATE MEDICAL EXAM WHEN YOU GOT HOME:

"No, heavens no! It was a joke! When we were released they deloused us and gave us a new set of clothes and that was it. If we were really sick or injured they would treat us, but basically they just asked, 'How do you feel?' 'All right.' 'OK -- next!' That was about the size of it. They fed us and got us to Okinawa or one of those big islands down there where we transferred to a Navy Personnel ship and went to the Philippines. I never got to a hospital-- never even saw a doctor in the Philippines. They shipped us on back home as soon as possible, and I can appreciate that. We wanted to get home as quick as possible. When we got to San Francisco I was at Letterman General Hospital for about two weeks and to all practical purposes I never went through a real thorough examination. When I got back to Madison, Wisconsin, I went to Wood and then I got a pretty good going-over, only for the simple reason that I had things wrong with me that they didn't know about. They didn't know much about malaria, amoebic dysentery. Dr. Middleton was a gung-ho guy and he gave me a good going-over and only for the simple reason he took an interest in me. Whether it was because I was a POW or a GI or whatever it was, he really did take an interest in me. That was the only time I felt I had a real thorough examination since I got back.

"When I took the POW Protocal exam at the VA about a year ago, that was kind of a joke. The doctor there would be asking a question, asking a question just as fast as he could, just fire them at you and at the same time feeling your hand, looking at your feet, looking in your mouth, listening to your heart, looking in your ears and up your nose and yakity, yakity, yak. Maybe he did so many of them he felt he could do an adequate job that way, but I don't think so. He didn't take any time to talk to you. They had a form all filled out before you got there and they'd looked at that and they'd made up their mind what they were going to find before they ever looked at you.

"Getting medical help when I first got home, now that was something! I'd go to the doctor and he'd treat me and say the bill was for \$800. The VA would say, 'We'll only pay \$600.' And the doctor would say, 'But I've given \$800 worth of care.' And they'd haggle and haggle and finally the doctor would say, 'Well, he's a patient of mine and a former POW, I'll do it for your price.' Just chintzie little things like that."

(Again, Sandy would get up painfully and as I'd offer to get anything he'd need to make him more comfortable or relieve his pain, he said, "No, it's one of those things. I just have to live with it." It is my opinion that if the VA did their job properly, Sandy could at least live with it more comfortably than he is now.)

Sandy is an absolute joy to be with. His easy laughter is spontaneous and hearty. His downright likeability accounts in large part for his many, many friends. People just plain like Sandy! And although he relives the horrors he survived almost daily, particularly through his nightmares several times a week, he does not dwell on it nor complain. However, he cannot forget as the physical and mental anguish is too constant and severe -- a continual reminder. His ready laughter sometimes covers a lot of hurting. If he couldn't laugh, he would cry.

Knowing Sandy and other POWs who also are hurting, there is a dire need to hug the daylights out of them to make the pain go away. Of course, it won't, but perhaps if enough people felt this way and understood, it would help ease it a bit.

Sandy is a gentle giant of a man who manages to keep the rage within him controlled. The very fact of his physical size infuriated the minuscule Japanese guards. Their insignificance was magnified by Sandy's obvious superiority in every way. They tried repeatedly and constantly to beat him down to their size to no avail. There was no way those cruel, inhuman yellow bastards could defeat this courageous American. He would suffer the physical and mental damage they inflicted on him for the rest of his life, but they will NEVER defeat him.

VITAMINS AND MINERALS		RDA*	RESULTS OF DEFICIENCY
FAT-SOLUBLE VITAMINS, E [†]	A	5,000 IU (1.5 mg)	Night blindness; infections; pathological changes in the digestive tract, bones, reproductive organs, skin and respiratory tract.
	D	400 IU (10 mcg)	Rickets; delayed eruption of teeth and imperfect calcification of the enamel. Lowered mineral content of bones, making them brittle.
	E	30 IU	Muscular dystrophy; pathological lesions, breakdown of red blood cells.
	K		Frequent and massive hemorrhage.
WATER-SOLUBLE VITAMINS	C (Ascorbic Acid)	60 mg	Scurvy, swollen and bleeding gums, loosened teeth, weakened bones and anemia; tendency to bleed easily.
	P (Citrin)	***	Deficiency has not been clearly demonstrated in adults.
	B-complex B1 (Thiamine)	1.5 mg	Beriberi, heart changes, nervous symptoms, edema, weight and appetite loss, headache, gastrointestinal disorders, fatigue, polyneuritis, depression, irritability, memory loss.
	B2 (Riboflavin)	1.7 mg	Anemia; inflammation of mouth, tongue and lips; sensitivity of eyes to light; scaly rashes on nose and forehead; numbness in arms and legs.
	B3 (Niacin)	20 mg	Pellagra, appetite loss, headache, muscular weakness, gastric disorders and diarrhea, skin disorders, mental confusion, depression.
	B6 (Pyridoxine)	2 mg	White blood cell disorders, convulsions, dermatitis, anemia.
	Biotin	0.30 mg	Eczema, dermatitis, possible susceptibility to heart abnormalities and lung infections. Deficiency highly unlikely in man.
	Pantothenic Acid	10 mg	Neurological symptoms, numbness and tingling of feet, impaired sense of balance. Widespread distribution in food makes deficiency unlikely.
	Folic Acid	0.4 mg	Anemia, fatigue, dizziness, paleness, mental depression, shortness of breath, intestinal disturbances, lowered white blood cell count.
	B12 (Cobalamin)	6 mcg	Poor growth, nervous symptoms, major anemias, spinal cord degeneration; G.I. tract disorders, inflamed tongue, disturbed metabolism of starches, sugars.
MINERALS	Calcium	1 g	Failure of bone development in children, rickets, softening of bones in adults, susceptibility to tooth decay.
	Phosphorus	1 g	Deficiency is very rare.
	Magnesium	400 mg	Twitching, tremors, irregular pulse, insomnia, muscle weakness, jerkiness, leg and foot cramps.
	Iron	18 mg	Iron deficiency anemia.
	Copper	2 mg	Deficiency decreases the absorption of iron and shortens the life span of red blood cells, causing anemia. Such deficiency is rare in man.
	Iodine	150 mcg	Goiter and enlargement of the thyroid glands.
Zinc	15 mg	Low resistance to infections, slow healing, skin abnormalities, loss of fertility.	

*Recommended Daily Allowance (RDA) is based on the Bureau's comprehensive "Vitamin-Mineral Reference Wheel," 1965, p. 80611, and is based on the Bureau's comprehensive "Vitamin-Mineral Reference Wheel."

†International Units (IU) are established by the International Union of Pure and Applied Chemistry (IUPAC).

This chart describes what happens to the human body when deprived of certain vitamins necessary to life. The Japanese-held prisoner-of-war had NO vitamins for 3½ years, causing Avitaminosis - total lack of vitamins.

CONGRESSIONAL HEARINGS ON HR 864

~~...extending comprehensive dental care to all former POWs who were incarcerated between thirty days and six months.~~

~~Accordingly, the Veterans Administration opposes enactment of HR 864.~~

~~Mr. Chairman, that concludes my prepared testimony. I will be pleased to respond to any questions you or other members of the~~



DISCUSSION

The following discussion is presented for the reasons stated in the opening letter.

The specific issue at hand is the recommendation at our 1983 report of the Advisory Committee on Former Prisoners of War that reads as follows: "There is ample evidence in the published literature with statistical evidence to support the concept that extremes of physical and mental stress and deprivation contribute to death, shortened life, increased incidence of disease, and a lessened quality of life. We believe that ample evidence exists as to the probability of current disabilities experienced by former POWs being caused by their service. Within the VA doctrine of Reasonable Doubt, we are of the opinion that presumption of causality should be extended for former POWs who have been demonstrably exposed to excessive and prolonged stress and deprivation to include conditions that fall in the following listed categories: (1) psychological-psychiatric disabilities; (2) muscular-skeletal disabilities; (3) "psychosomatic" disorders such as gastrointestinal complaints, peptic ulcer and chronic colitis; (4) alcoholism and its associated diseases; (5) immunological dysfunctions, for example certain infections such as tuberculosis, allergies, autoimmune disease, and possibly neoplastic disease; and (6) cardiovascular conditions such as vascular hypertension, arteriosclerotic heart disease, and cardiomyopathies."

The VA position is that they cannot defend the probable causes of disability of POWs as recommended by our committee.

There are attached several definitions of words used through this report.

Demography; The statistical study of human population especially with reference to size and density, distribution, and vital statistics.

Epidemiology: (1) a branch of medical science that deals with the incidence, distribution, and control of disease in a population; (2) the sum of the factors controlling the presence or absence of a disease or pathogen.

Etiology: (1) all of the causes of a disease or abnormal condition; (2) a branch of knowledge dealing with causes.

I'm using the present format to highlight a few of the multiple areas and questions and issues that coalesce into an impressive array of data and opinions that point to a reasonable conclusion. And I am well aware of what happened to Socrates for asking so many "whys."

Why did 40 or 50 percent of the POWs in the Philippines and Korea die in the 3 1/2 year period of imprisonment? What happened to their bodies that brought them to death? They nearly all died as human skeletons. In this case it has to be presumed that the body vitality was so damaged and weakened that life could no longer go on. I was there. I was a physician. Many died under my impotent care. The men who did not die were most of the time identical in appearance, emaciation and disease. Why can we assume that the bodies and psyche of the survivors were and are left unscathed?

Why has the death rate of the World War II Far East exceeded the death rate of the general VA population? These were proven survivors. Why did they die before their non-POW peers?

Why does the burden of proof fall on the surviving ex-POW and their protagonists that they have to prove a causal relationship to their physical and mental deficiencies that stemmed from known extreme deprivation? Isn't it just as reasonable that the others (in this case the VA) should provide an explanation of how the human body and mind can be so physically and mentally traumatized that it could not be damaged? Let it be understood that all POWs were exposed to all the same conditions.

Why do former POWs have a higher incidence of service-connected disability?

Why do former European theater POWs show significantly higher disability than other World War II veterans in the same theater?

Why is the most prevalent service-connected condition of former POWs anxiety neurosis?

Why have foreign governments accepted the causal relationship of the POW experience as evidence of later physical and mental deficiencies in ex-POWs and provided compensation without the individual having to prove the "scientific" relationship?

Why do former POWs have a significantly higher incidence and more severe disabilities than non-POW veterans?

Why did the former European POWs who were hospitalized for malnutrition have an increased rate of mortality due to trauma, tuberculosis, and cirrhosis while those POWs without malnutrition have no increased rate of mortality? (Dean Nefzger, NAS/NRC)

Why did the NAS/NRC Beebe study in 1965 show a significantly greater percent of former European theater POWs over non-POW veterans being compensated for service-connected disability to the following conditions: malnutrition (avitaminosis), arthritis, residuals of frozen feet, scars, and anxiety neurosis? Also, 11.4% of all former European theater POWs were being compensated for anxiety neurosis as opposed to 3.2% of the European theater veteran control group. Why again in 1979 did Beebe find 13.6% anxiety neurosis in the POW group and 6.19% in the European non-POW group?

Why did the former Pacific theater POWs have a statistically significant higher death rate from tuberculosis, accidents, and suicide the first five years after liberation as opposed to the non-POW Pacific theater group? (Cohen & Cooper)

Why did Nefzger find in the period 1953 to 1965 tuberculosis and trauma continued to be the major significant causes of death along with cirrhosis in the Pacific theater POW group? Keehn confirmed Nefzger's findings but not after the mid-fifties.

Why did the former Pacific POWs manifest a significant greater morbidity rate from TB and other infective diseases as well as nerve inflammation (neuritis), peripheral neuropathy, gastrointestinal, genitourinary, and orthopedic problems and prevalent arteriosclerotic heart disease through 1965 with

Beebe's NAS studies?

Why does the most recent NAS/NRC (Beebe) morbidity study show that the Pacific theater POWs suffer from a significantly greater amount of service-connected disabilities than the matched Pacific group and general veteran populations? The disabilities are arthritis and back disorders, systemic diseases (avitaminosis, Beri Beri), bronchitis, tuberculosis, cardiovascular symptoms, residuals of frozen feet, gastrointestinal diseases (peptic ulcer, gastritis, amebiasis, dysentery, hemorrhoids, hepatitis), genitourinary problems (prostate gland infection), skin disorders (scars, dermatophytosis), neurological disorders (peripheral neuropathy) and psychiatric problems (anxiety neurosis). The most prevalent conditions were malaria 27.0% and anxiety neurosis 25.8%. The Pacific control group was 11.2% and 5.0% for the two conditions (Beebe).

Why are the findings similar in the Korea veterans who suffered the same types and degree of privations as the Pacific World War II POWs?

The following is a summary statement from the POW study of Former Prisoners of War published by the Veterans Administration in May 1980.

"The available mortality and morbidity data on the types and severity of former POW disabilities from repatriation to the present time indicates that the congressional concern about former POWs, especially those of World War II Pacific theater, having a significantly higher incidence and greater variety of diseases attributable to internment is well-founded. Evidence to substantiate this concern comes from the National Academy of Sciences and VA mortality/morbidity data. Considering the severity of former POW disabilities which show that Pacific ex-POWs are the most severely disabled POW group, followed closely by the former Korea POWs. While former European POWs are not as disabled as former Pacific or Korean POWs, they are more disabled than other World War II veterans. Development of disability of former Vietnam POWs who were held longer than any other group of POWs under study must await the completion of current ongoing studies."

The following is the text of a paper presented at a Federal Health Service Conference in March, 1985, by Stan Sommers, Past National Commander of American Ex-Prisoners-of-War organization and Chairman of POW Med-Search for many years. Stan also survived the horrors as a POW under the Japanese and has dedicated his entire life to helping other POWs. He is a dear man, a dear friend, and speaks with unimpeachable authority:

"When you become a prisoner of war, one thing is certain -- you are in the enemy's ball park, playing before a hostile crowd that is urged on by cheerleaders of violence.

Submission, humility, and ultimately survival become paramount. If you are a hero -- you are dead.

The atrocities and inhumane treatment committed against American service personnel during World War II, Korea, the crew of the USS Pueblo, and Southeast Asia are equally documented in history's pages.

For the surviving few, the physical and emotional scars remain. Some will carry them to their graves.

Just to be taken prisoner by an armed enemy is a terrifying experience, equally shared by all ex-POWs. My first response was fear, uncertainty, loneliness, and it was so quiet after the battle. Despite death and destruction all around, I tried to keep a little grim humor. An example was: the Japanese were much shorter than us in stature and they were constantly beating us and in doing so they had to look up at us. The more they would beat us, the madder they would get, especially when we would not fall down. Yes, there was hidden grim humor in this fact.

After a time our fear turned to an inner rage for our Japanese captors, which led to determination to survive.

There were other elements. For instance, you developed a bond, a "buddy system", of your own. In virtually every case with which I am familiar, where someone survived the horrors of hell into which we were tossed, there was a "buddy system" where one guy took care of another. There was just no telling when you were going to break down and, if and when that happened, if you wanted to survive, you had to have a buddy. Many fellows have told me that "if it wasn't for so and so, I would not have made it." I can tell you with certainty, I would not have made it without help. In a time of stress mixed with fear and uncertainty, you can actually feel the world collapse on you unless you have something to fall back on. In my case, it was the teaching I received at home on my father's and mother's knees -- and quite often across their knees -- and most importantly, they taught me about God -- and I prayed a lot.

"I want to conclude on one of the most important reasons we survived, which is so eloquently stated by Robins Reader -- Holding On To Hope:

'Medical studies have proven how hope sustains many human beings allowing them to endure incredible amounts of pain and punishment. The dictionary defines hope as confident expectation. So it is not just wishful thinking or blind optimism, but a real gut level belief that the situation will get better and eventually pass into history.

'A lesson in hope can be learned from the experience of 25,000 American soldiers held captive by the Japanese during the second World War. These men had to live under terrible conditions and endure inhumane treatment. Some died while others lived to return home. There wasn't a great deal of difference in physical stamina between those who lived and those who died.

'The survivors, however, confidently expected to be released at some future time. They talked about the kind of homes they would have, the jobs they would choose and even described the kind of person they would like to marry. They drew pictures on the prison walls to illustrate their dreams. Some even found ways to study subjects related to the kind of career they wanted to pursue. The doctors taken captive even formed medical societies.

'It is this kind of hope which keeps us pushing ahead, learning new skills, going after a different job, or recovering from a serious illness. It is this kind of hope that makes us try a different road if the one we are on is leading nowhere. It is also this kind of hope which sustains us when we are told there is no hope. Because no matter what our ears hear, what really matters is the hope that is in our hearts.' "

American Ex-Prisoner of War Bulletin
October, 1985, by Stan Sommers

MEDALS AND AWARDS

Sandy's Honorable Discharge from the United States Army lists the following awards and medals he earned:

Victory Medal
American Defense Service Ribbon w/bronze star in lieu of clasp
American Theater Ribbon
Asiatic/Pacific Theater ribbon w/bronze battle star
Philippine Defense Ribbon w/one star

Bronze battle star
Seven overseas service bars
One service stripe
Good Conduct Medal
Silver Star Medal - recommended; papers lost; was awarded.
Distinguished Unit Badge w/two bronze oak leaf clusters

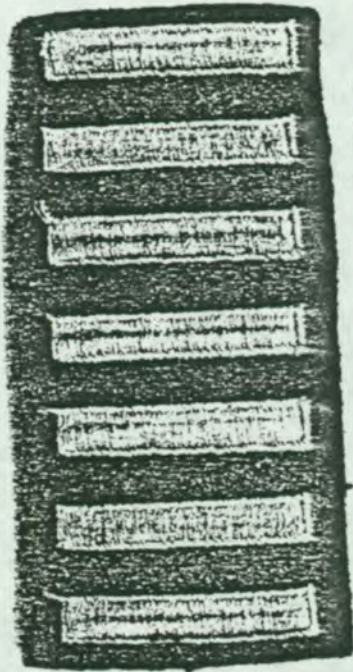
He proudly displays his Combat Infantry Badge.

The Bronze Star Medal he received in 1985 reads:

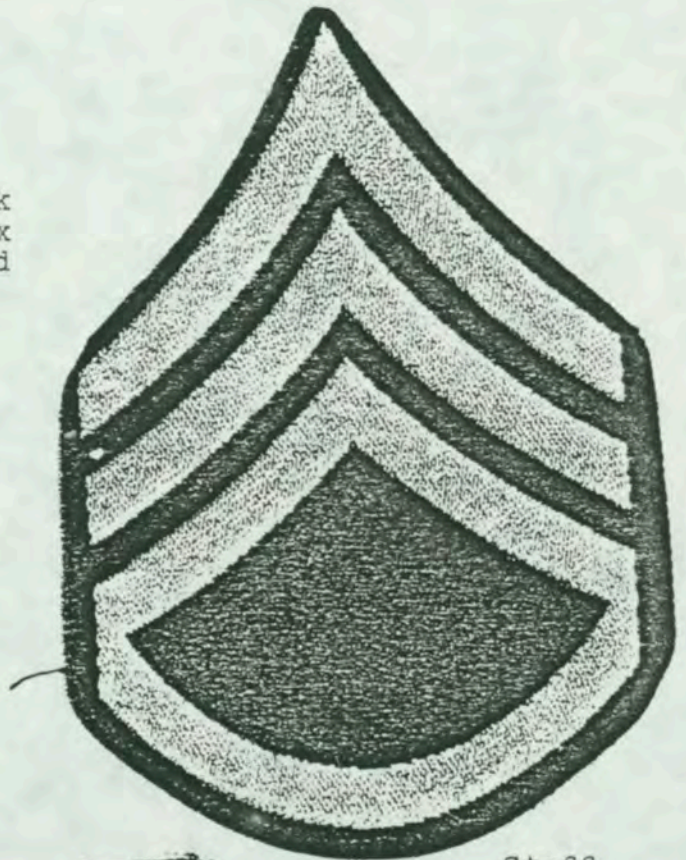
"To Staff Sergeant Owen L. Sandmire, United States Army, For meritorious achievement during combat while serving in the South West Pacific Theater of Operations from 7 December 1941 to 10 May 1942. The actions of Staff Sergeant Sandmire were in keeping with the highest traditions of the military service and reflect distinct credit upon him, his unit and the United States Army."

In 1986 Congress enacted Public Law 99-145, which reads: "Department of Defense Authorization Act of 1986 authorizes the awarding of the Prisoner-of-War Medal to all POWs who served honorably in the service of their country. The law states, 'This medal will be considered a Defense Service Medal and, as required by statute, it will rank in precedence as the highest service medal this Nation can bestow upon a Service member.' The design of the medal having now been completed and eligibility requirements established, the medal should be ready for awarding to these heroes by late 1987 or in 1988. A grateful Nation thanks the POWs for their outstanding heroism! (Chapter 57, Title 10, United States Code.)"

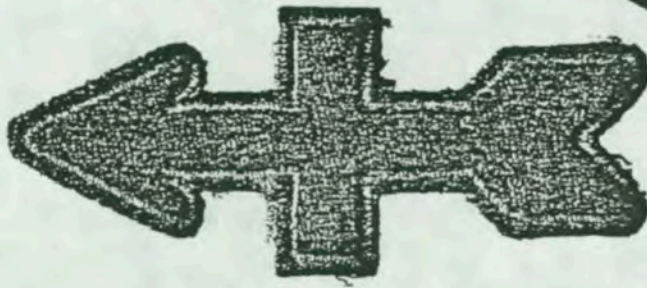
Sandy thought because of lost papers that his recommendation for the Silver Star was a lost cause until we discovered that his discharge papers show he was awarded this high award. We wrote a letter of inquiry. In June, 1988, he received word all his medals would be sent to him within 30 days, including, in addition to all those above, the Bronze Star Medal, Prisoner of War Medal, and Republic of the Philippines Presidential Unit Citation Badge. After 46 years a grateful America recognizes another of its heroes.



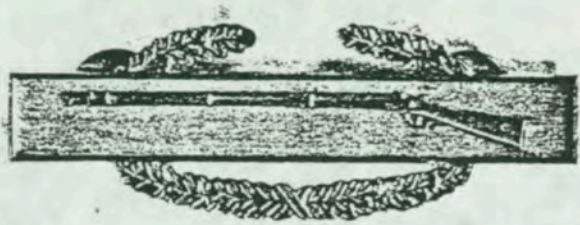
One hash mark
for every six
months served
overseas.



Staff
Sergeant



Red Arrow



Combat Infantry Badge



Top: Army Achievement; Presidential Unit Citation
Middle: American Defense; Asiatic/Pacific Theater; Philippine Defense
Bottom: Silver Star Medal; Victory WWII; Good Conduct-Army

Handwritten: Sandmire

REPORT OF SEPARATION
HONORABLE DISCHARGE *723 N. Johnson*

1. LAST NAME - FIRST NAME - MIDDLE INITIAL SANDMIER OWEN L			2. ARMY SERIAL NO. 20 645 273		3. GRADE S Sgt	4. ARM OR SERVICE Inf	5. COMPONENT 10
6. ORGANIZATION Co A 102 Tank Bn			7. DATE OF SEPARATION 11 May 46		8. PLACE OF SEPARATION Separation Center Fort Sheridan Illinois		
9. PERMANENT ADDRESS FOR MAILING PURPOSES 361 Ira St Richland Center Wis				10. DATE OF BIRTH 24 Oct 18		11. PLACE OF BIRTH Viola Wisconsin	
12. ADDRESS FROM WHICH EMPLOYMENT WILL BE SOUGHT Sec 9				13. COLOR EYES Brown	14. COLOR HAIR Brown	15. HEIGHT 5 10	16. WEIGHT 175 LBS.
18. RACE <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> WHITE	19. MARITAL STATUS <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> SINGLE	20. U.S. CITIZEN <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> YES	21. CIVILIAN OCCUPATION AND NO. Auto Mechanic 5-81.010				

MILITARY HISTORY

22. DATE OF INDOCTION		23. DATE OF ENLISTMENT 16 Sep 40		24. DATE OF ENTRY INTO ACTIVE SERVICE 16 Sep 40		25. PLACE OF ENTRY INTO SERVICE Janesville Wisconsin	
SELECTIVE SERVICE DATA <input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	26. REGISTERED <input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	27. LOCAL S.S. BOARD NO.		28. COUNTY AND STATE		29. HOME ADDRESS AT TIME OF ENTRY INTO SERVICE 216 Riverside St Janesville Wis	
30. MILITARY OCCUPATIONAL SPECIALTY AND NO. Tank Crewman 1736				31. MILITARY QUALIFICATION AND DATE (i.e., Infantry, aviation and marksmanship badges, etc.) RM Pistol 10) 1940			
32. BATTLES AND CAMPAIGNS Philippine Islands							

33. DECORATIONS AND CITATIONS Victory Medal American Defense Service Ribbon with Bronze Star in Lieu of Clasp American Theater Ribbon Asiatic Pacific Theater Ribbon with 1 Bronze Battle Star Philippine Defense Ribbon with 1 *							
34. WOUNDS RECEIVED IN ACTION None							

35. LATEST IMMUNIZATION DATES				36. SERVICE OUTSIDE CONTINENTAL U. S. AND RETURN			
SMALLPOX		TYPHOID		TETANUS		OTHER (specify)	
Sec 45		Sec 45		Sec 45			
37. TOTAL LENGTH OF SERVICE				38. HIGHEST GRADE HELD		DATE OF DEPARTURE	
CONTINENTAL SERVICE		FOREIGN SERVICE				DESTINATION	
YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS	YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS	DATE OF ARRIVAL	
1	9	5	3	11	21	27 Oct 41	PTO
39. PRIOR SERVICE						20 Nov 41	
						15 Oct 43	
						USA	
						18 Oct 45	

40. REASON AND AUTHORITY FOR SEPARATION Dis 20 Mar 46		41. SERVICE SCHOOLS ATTENDED None					
		42. EDUCATION (Years) Grammar 8 High School 4 College 0					

PAY DATA

43. LONGEVITY FOR PAY PURPOSES			44. MUSTERING OUT PAY		45. SOLDIER DEPOSITS		46. TRAVEL PAY		47. TOTAL AMOUNT, NAME OF DISBURSING OFFICER	
YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS	TOTAL	THIS PAYMENT					\$ 2.00 \$20.81 1ST LT B RICE CAPT ED	
3	7	26	\$ 300	\$ 300						

INSURANCE NOTICE

IMPORTANT IF PREMIUM IS NOT PAID WHEN DUE OR WITHIN THIRTY-ONE DAYS THEREAFTER, INSURANCE WILL LAPSE. MAKE CHECKS OR MONEY ORDERS PAYABLE TO THE TREASURER OF THE U. S. AND FORWARD TO COLLECTIONS SUBDIVISION, VETERANS ADMINISTRATION, WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

48. KIND OF INSURANCE		49. HOW PAID		50. Effective Date of Allotment Discontinuance		51. Date of Next Premium Due (One month after 50)		52. PREMIUM DUE EACH MONTH		53. INTENTION OF VETERAN TO	
48.1	48.2	49.1	49.2							53.1	
<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	May 46		Jun 46		6.60		<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	

54. RIGHT THUMB PRINT	55. REMARKS (This space for completion of above items or entry of other items specified in W. D. Directives)	
	Isabel Button Insured ASR score (2 Sep 45) 111 Bronze Battle Star 7 Overseas Service Bars 1 Service Stripe Good Conduct Medal Silver Star Medal Dist Unit Badge with 2 Bronze Oak Leaf Clusters	

56. SIGNATURE OF PERSON BEING SEPARATED		57. PERSONNEL OFFICER (Type name, grade and organization - signature)	
<i>[Signature]</i>		G L STACKHOUSE CWO USA	

WD AGO FORM 53-55
1 November 1944

This form supersedes all previous editions of WD AGO Forms 53 and 55 for enlisted persons entitled to an Honorable Discharge, which will not be used after receipt of this revision.

7. REEMPLOYMENT COMMITTEEMAN COPY (To: State Director of Selective Service for State shown in Item 12)

CAUTION: NOT TO BE USED FOR IDENTIFICATION PURPOSES

ANY ALTERATIONS IN SHADED AREAS RENDER FORM VOID

1. NAME (Last, first, middle) SANDMIRE OWEN L		2. DEPARTMENT, COMPONENT AND BRANCH ARMY NG INF		3. SOCIAL SECURITY NO. (Also, Service Number if applicable) 20 645 273	
4. MAILING ADDRESS (Include ZIP Code) 361 IRA ST RICHLAND CENTER WIS					
5. ORIGINAL DD FORM 214 IS CORRECTED AS INDICATED BELOW					
ITEM NO.		CORRECTED TO READ			
33		SEPARATION DATE ON DD FORM 214 BEING CORRECTED - <u>11 MAY 46</u> ADD: BRONZE STAR MEDAL PRISONER OF WAR MEDAL REPUBLIC OF THE PHILIPPINES PRESIDENTIAL UNIT CITATION BADGE/NOTHING FOLLOWS			
6. DATE 31 MAY 1988		7. TYPED NAME, GRADE, TITLE AND SIGNATURE OF OFFICIAL AUTHORIZED TO SIGN <i>Nola M. Overbey</i> NOLA M. OVERBEY, GS-9, C, SP INQ SEC, USARPERCEN			

DD FORM 215
1 JUL 79
S/N 0102-LF-000-2150

PREVIOUS EDITIONS OF THIS FORM ARE OBSOLETE.

CORRECTION TO DD FORM 214, CERTIFICATE OF RELEASE OR DISCHARGE FROM ACTIVE DUTY

MEMBER - 1

CAUTION: NOT TO BE USED FOR IDENTIFICATION PURPOSES

ANY ALTERATIONS IN SHADED AREAS RENDER FORM VOID

1. NAME (Last, first, middle) SANDMIRE OWEN L		2. DEPARTMENT, COMPONENT AND BRANCH ARMY NG INF		3. SOCIAL SECURITY NO. (Also, Service Number if applicable) 20 645 273	
4. MAILING ADDRESS (Include ZIP Code) 361 IRA ST RICHLAND CENTER WIS					
5. ORIGINAL DD FORM 214 IS CORRECTED AS INDICATED BELOW					
ITEM NO.		CORRECTED TO READ			
33		SEPARATION DATE ON DD FORM 214 BEING CORRECTED - <u>11 MAY 46</u> ADD: BRONZE STAR MEDAL PRISONER OF WAR MEDAL REPUBLIC OF THE PHILIPPINES PRESIDENTIAL UNIT CITATION BADGE/NOTHING FOLLOWS			
6. DATE 31 MAY 1988		7. TYPED NAME, GRADE, TITLE AND SIGNATURE OF OFFICIAL AUTHORIZED TO SIGN NOLA M. OVERBEY, GS-9, C, SP INQ SEC, USARPERCEN			

DD FORM 215
1 JUL 79
S/N 0102-LF-000-2150

PREVIOUS EDITIONS OF THIS FORM ARE OBSOLETE.

CORRECTION TO DD FORM 214, CERTIFICATE OF RELEASE OR DISCHARGE FROM ACTIVE DUTY

36-a

MEMBER - 4

IN REPLY REFER TO

DARP-PAS-AI
Sandmire, Owen L.
20 645 273

DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
ARPERCEN
ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI 63132-5200

AUTHORIZATION FOR ISSUANCE OF AWARDS

TO: Commander
US Army Support Activity
Philadelphia, PA 19101

DATE
31 May 1988

CODE NUMBERS FOR AWARDS

1	MEDAL OF HONOR	14	PURPLE HEART	27	NATIONAL DEFENSE SERVICE MEDAL	40	SERVICE STAR
2	DISTINGUISHED SERVICE CROSS	15	GOOD CONDUCT MEDAL	28	KOREAN SERVICE MEDAL	41	BRONZE ARROWHEAD
3	DEFENSE DISTINGUISHED SERVICE MEDAL	16	PRESIDENTIAL UNIT EMBLEM	29	ANTARCTICA SERVICE MEDAL	42	FRENCH FOURRAGERE
4	DISTINGUISHED SERVICE MEDAL	17	MERITORIOUS UNIT EMBLEM	30	ARMED FORCES EXPEDITIONARY MEDAL	43	BELGIAN FOURRAGERE
5	SILVER STAR	18	VALOROUS UNIT EMBLEM	31	VIETNAM SERVICE MEDAL	44	NETHERLANDS ORANGE LANYARD
6	LEGION OF MERIT	19	WOMEN'S ARMY CORPS SERVICE MEDAL	32	ARMED FORCES RESERVE MEDAL	45	PHILIPPINE DEFENSE RIBBON
7	DISTINGUISHED FLYING CROSS	20	AMERICAN DEFENSE SERVICE MEDAL	33	ARMY RESERVE COMPONENTS ACHIEVEMENT MEDAL	46	PHILIPPINE LIBERATION RIBBON
8	STIC MEDAL	21	AMERICAN CAMPAIGN MEDAL	34	COMBAT INFANTRYMAN BADGE	47	PHILIPPINE INDEPENDENCE RIBBON
9	BRONZE STAR MEDAL	22	ATLANTIC PACIFIC CAMPAIGN MEDAL	35	EXPERT INFANTRYMAN BADGE	48	UNITED NATIONS SERVICE MEDAL
10	MERITORIOUS SERVICE MEDAL	23	EUROPEAN AND MIDDLE EASTERN CAMPAIGN MEDAL	36	COMBAT MEDICAL BADGE	49	REPUBLIC OF VIETNAM CAMPAIGN RIBBON W/DEVICE (1960)
11	AIR MEDAL	24	WW II VICTORY MEDAL	37	EXPERT FIELD MEDICAL BADGE	50	
12	JOINT SERVICE COMMENDATION MEDAL	25	ARMY OF OCCUPATION MEDAL	38	LETTER 'V' DEVICE	51	
13	ARMY COMMENDATION MEDAL	26	MEDAL FOR HUMANE ACTION	39	OAK LEAF CLUSTER	52	

The Secretary of the Army directs that the following awards be engraved according to current regulations and issued to address shown below. (Engraving to be as indicated in classification or below.)

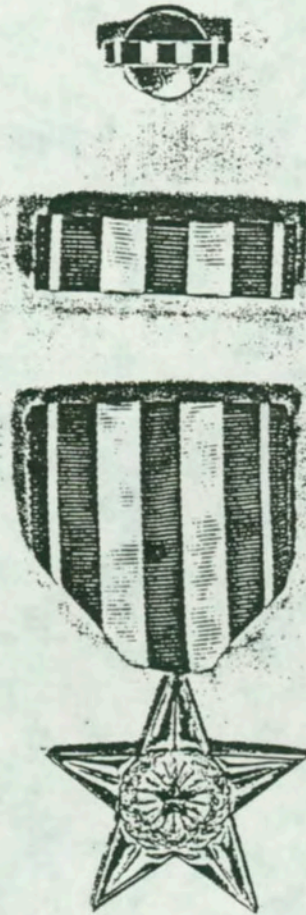
AWARD CODE	STARS		OAK LEAF CLUSTERS		ARROW-HEAD	CLASP	GOLD STAR LABEL BUTTON			
	BRONZE	SILVER	BRONZE	SILVER			ENGRAVE	ISSUE	TYPE	CLUTCH
5							<input type="checkbox"/> COST		<input type="checkbox"/> CLUTCH	
9							<input type="checkbox"/> GRATUITOUSLY		<input type="checkbox"/> PIN	
15							REMARKS EXPEDITE CONGRESSIONAL			
16										
20 with Foreign Service Clasp										
21										
22	1									
24										
45	1									
Honorable Service Lapel Button										
Marksmanship Badge with Pistol Bar										
POW Medal										
/////NOTHING FOLLOWS/////										

US ARMY SUPPORT CENTER
PHILADELPHIA, PENNSYLVANIA 19101
OFFICIAL BUSINESS
PENALTY FOR PRIVATE USE, \$300

POSTAGE AND FEES PAID
DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
DOD-314

Mr. Owen L. Sandmire
290 Palmetto Drive
Venice, Florida 34293

RICHARD W. PEDERSON
LTC, U.S. ARMY
Assistant Adjutant General



The Silver Star
for
Gallantry In Action



THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT
THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AUTHORIZED BY ACT OF CONGRESS JULY 9, 1918
HAS AWARDED


THE SILVER STAR

TO

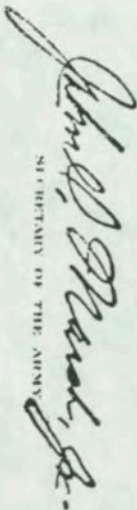
STAFF SERGEANT OWEN L. SANDMIRE, UNITED STATES ARMY

FOR
GALLANTRY IN ACTION

World War II Asiatic-Pacific Theater of Operations
GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON
THIS 31st DAY OF May 19 88


THE ADJUTANT GENERAL




ADJUTANT GENERAL



THE BRONZE STAR MEDAL

awarded for meritorious achievement during combat
(see certificate of award on following page)



THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING: THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AUTHORIZED BY EXECUTIVE ORDER, 24 AUGUST 1962 HAS AWARDED

THE BRONZE STAR MEDAL

TO
STAFF SERGEANT OWEN L. SANDMIRE, UNITED STATES ARMY

FOR

meritorious achievement during combat while serving in the South West Pacific Theater of Operations from 7 December 1941 to 10 May 1942. The actions of Staff Sergeant Sandmire were in keeping with the highest traditions of the military service and reflect distinct credit upon him, his unit and the United States Army.

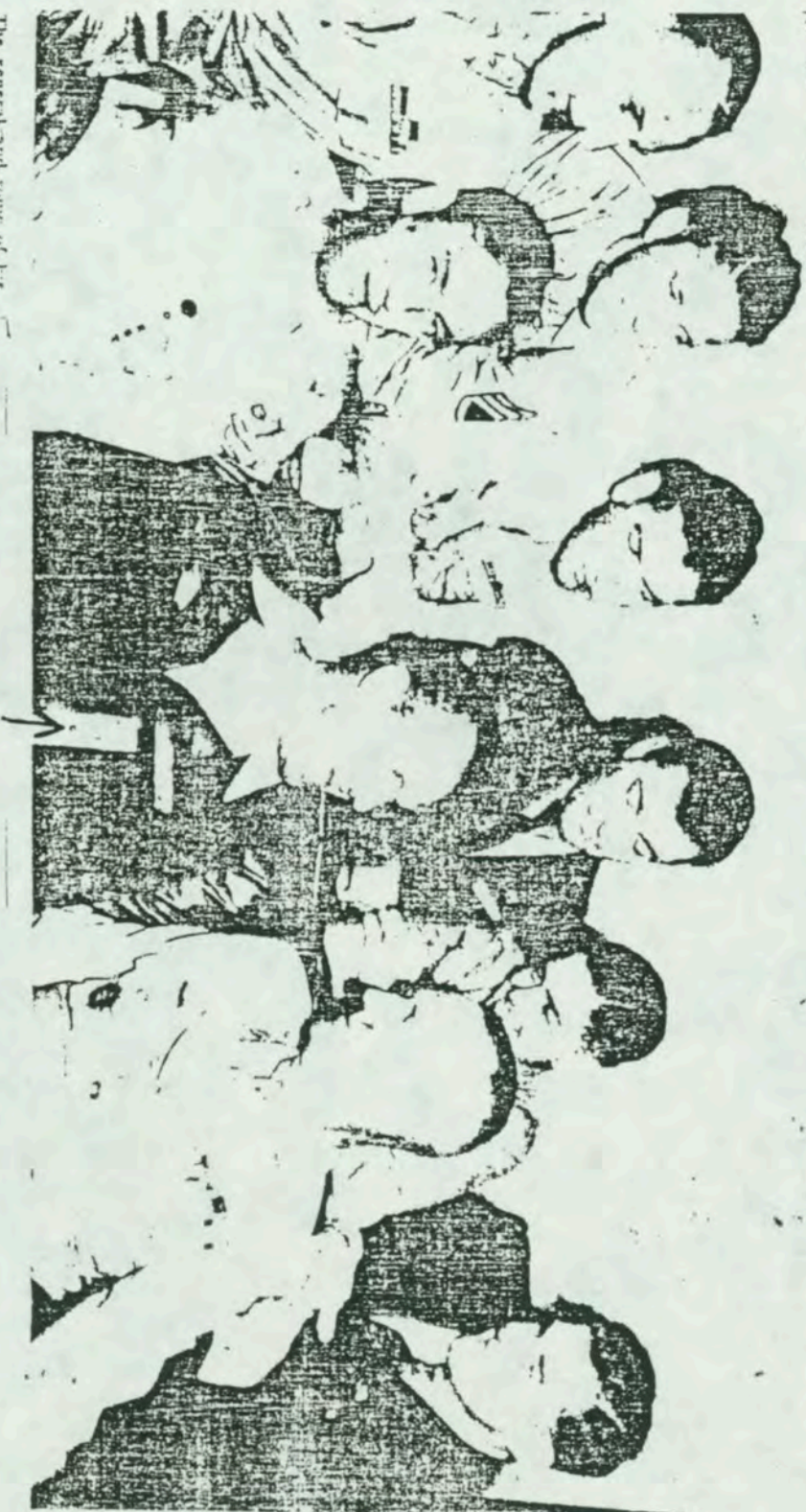
GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON
THIS 22nd DAY OF August 19 85

Donald J. Velando
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL



James D. Stewart, Jr.
SECRETARY OF THE ARMY

Guest for Two Days—Atom Bomb Explosion Pictured



Sandy, sitting on the left of General Jonathon M. Wainwright, shortly after WWII. "Skinny" Wainwright suffered the same as his men under their Japanese captors. The POWs had a great love and respect for General Wainwright.

The general and some of his veterans were in Wisconsin and together beside him are Robert Ryan (left) and Owen Sandberg. In the back row are from left: Wayne Higgs, Lewis Wallisch, Phil Parrish, John Tansley, Leo Horsey and Edward Storz. Storz was one of the chaplains transferred into the 7th Army Group to serve Wainwright.

On May 6, 1988, the 42nd anniversary of the fall of Corregidor and the Philippines, Northern Kentucky University presented a Dedication Ceremony to the 192nd Tank Battalion. A summary of their heroic history was prepared by the University and follows here. Sandy attended this ceremony where he learned there are only about 80 survivors of the 650 men who left together for the Philippine Islands over 40 years ago. About 24 of these were at this ceremony -- a very moving experience for them all.

The ceremony was part of the ROTC Commissioning Ceremony and also honored Colonel William E. Barber, Marine hero of Iwo Jima in WWII and again in Korea.

Of the original 650 men, 400 died in the battle and the brutal Bataan Death March. Sandy is a survivor! One of those few remaining as this is written. It is most difficult, if not downright impossible, for most who read this to realize the agonies, tortures, despair, pain that Sandy and his compatriots endured. Here is a living, breathing, kind, compassionate, caring man who in every respect is an American Hero. He leads his life as best he can and bears his problems silently. Strong as he appears, he needs his friends; he needs understanding; he needs others to tell him "we care".

It was at this ceremony that Sandy learned the name of the Japanese officer (Colonel or General) who told the POWs he only cared how many bodies of POWs he could bury each morning. Even today Sandy becomes infuriated when he tells of this. The name of this cold blooded murderer is/was SUNIOCHI.

A part of the Dedication program follows.

24"

KENTUCKY'S - 192ND TANK BATTALION (NATIONAL GUARD)



BRIG. GEN. JAMES R. N. WEAVER, U.S. ARMY
COL. THEODORE WICKORD, BN. COM., U.S. NATIONAL GUARD
MAJ. ALVIN C. POWELEIT, PROVISIONAL GROUP SURGEON, MED. RES.

"A" COMPANY - JANESVILLE, WISCONSIN
"C" COMPANY - PORT CLINTON, OHIO
MAJ. GEN. BRUCE JACOBS
NATIONAL GUARD, U.S., RET.

"B" COMPANY - MAYWOOD, ILLINOIS
"D" COMPANY - HARRODSBURG, KENTUCKY
MAJ. GEN. BILLY WELLMAN
NATIONAL GUARD, KENTUCKY

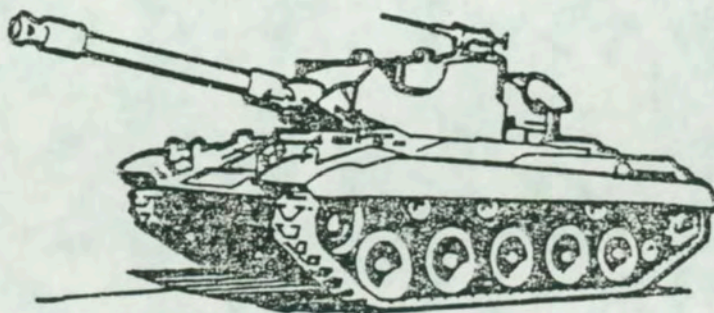
KENTUCKY'S 192ND TANK BATTALION, PART OF THE PROVISIONAL TANK GROUP, IN ITS DETERMINED DEFENSE OF THE PHILIPPINES, APRIL-MAY, 1942, BROKE THE JAPANESE TIME TABLE, SAVED AUSTRALIA, NEW ZEALAND, AND MIDWAY, ALLOWED OUR NAVY TO RECUPERATE AND DEFEAT THE JAPANESE NAVY AT MIDWAY: AMERICAN CASUALTIES, 650 TROOPS OF WHICH 250 SURVIVED. THIS WAS A MAJOR TURNING POINT OF THE WAR IN THE PACIFIC.

PATRONS

LEON BOOTHE, Ph. D.
JAMES CLAYPOOL, Ph. D.
LEW WALLACE, Ph. D.
WENDELL FORD, SENIOR SENATOR
MITCH McCONNELL
JAMES BUNNING

PRESIDENT, NORTHERN KY. UNIVERSITY
PROFESSOR OF HISTORY/ARCHIVIST
PROFESSOR OF HISTORY
UNITED STATES SENATOR
UNITED STATES SENATOR
UNITED STATES CONGRESSMAN

Dedication Ceremony
for the
Kentucky National Guard
192nd Tank Battalion
and
ROTC
Commissioning Ceremony



May 6, 1988
Northern Kentucky University



Opening Remarks James C. Claypool
University Archivist/Curator

National Anthem

Posting of the Colors

Guest Speaker Colonel William Earl Barber
United States Marine Corps, Retired

Introduction of Dr. Alvin C. Poweleit and James C. Claypool
the 192nd Tank Battalion

Remarks and Presentations James C. Claypool
Mrs. Joe Grover, President
Friends of the Library
Dr. Darryl G. Poole,
Acting Vice President for
Academic Affairs and Provost

Narratives: "Weaver's Warriors"
"Five Days at Chosin"

Written By H. Lew Wallace

Editor James C. Claypool

Significance of the Oath Major Gary R. Cole

Administration of the Oath Colonel William Earl Barber

Presentation of Lieutenant Insignia

The First Salute Master Sergeant Walter H. Herrin

1988 Commissionees

May 6, 1988

- 2 LT Stephen W. Brandt
- 2 LT Jeffrey J. Freudenberg
- 2 LT Robert M. Isler
- 2 LT John V. Kloeker
- 2 LT James C. Robinson
- 2 LT Terrence C. Seifert

July 1988

- 2 LT Andrew G. Braun
- 2 LT Teresa R. Moore

December, 1988

- 2 LT Jeffrey E. Chapman

Brief Moments of Glory Weaver's Warriors: The 192nd "Kentucky" Tank Battalion in the Philippines

The men had just finished lunch. It was about 12:30 p.m. They were in a wooded area near Clark Field. Above them, American Army Air Force planes had been active all morning; but at noon the planes landed for refueling and further orders. Suddenly there was the roar of a large number of planes coming from the northeast. The men in the woods decided that the aircraft approaching must be American naval planes. They ran from under the trees to watch the navy in flight. There were a few tank crews around the air field, and some of the tank men had field glasses.

The planes came in waves, in groups of twenty-seven each, flying in perfect formation. The planes were bombers.

"They are Japanese," shouted the tank men. There was, for the men on the ground, what seemed to be an unbelievable, time-frozen moment. But then all hell broke loose.

Maintaining formation, the aircraft dropped their payloads. As the bombers, including dive bombers, passed over Clark Field, Japanese fighters moved in, circling the air field continuously, strafing anything and anyone that moved. On the ground there was motion, most of it futile. Men looked for hiding places. There were few, if any. Some anti-aircraft crews reached their weapons and began firing what few shells there were, all of which exploded harmlessly far below their targets. The P-40 pilots ran for their planes, but only four managed to take off from the rapidly disintegrating runway.

The Japanese fighters—which did perhaps more damage than the bombers—stayed over Clark for thirty minutes or so, then flew in un-molested by gun or American aircraft, leaving the Americans and Filipinos to cope with the damage, death, and horror of war up close. Wrecked planes (which had been most tidily bunched up, much to the pleased surprise of the Japanese), irreparably damaged, including eighteen B-17s, were strewn all around the field. Hangars and quarters were in shambles. Explosions and fires from fuel tanks continued for several hours after the bombing. Amid the wreckage and the fires and the exploding caches of ammunition were the dead—twenty-nine officers, sixty-three enlisted men, and approximately one hundred and thirty-five employees.

Doctors and nurses at Clark, themselves stunned by a reality that few could emotionally grasp, nonetheless coped rather magnificently with the large number of casualties in a station hospital strained nearly beyond its capacity. And so it was that war, long talked about, but an abstraction for most Americans, became a reality of blown-off backs, sheared arms and legs, dangling intestines, and cooked or decapitated bodies at Clark Field, the Philippines, on December 8, 1941.



To say that the United States was unprepared for World War II is to understate boldly. In weeks and months following Pearl Harbor, the American public reeled from shock to shock as it learned that its army, navy, and army air force were falling short in every encounter with enemy forces. What the public did not realize was that American fire power was even more fragile and tenuous than news stories ever revealed. The Philippines campaign was just one

striking example. When Japanese ground forces landed in the Philippines in December, 1941, they did so knowing that the first line of defense, airpower, had been decimated. The Japanese could not quite believe their good fortune. Why the planes were, as it seemed, arranged for mass destruction so long after Pearl Harbor, and so long after General MacArthur and his aides knew about Pearl Harbor, and why MacArthur did not bomb Formosa, from whence the Japanese bombers flew, are still matters of contention these long years after. But so it was. What even the Japanese did not know was how fragile and paper-thin was the second line of defense, American armor. The only tank units in the Philippines were National Guard units, the 192nd and the 194th Tank Battalions.

A bit of history of the evolution of the Guard tank units is perhaps in order. The genesis of these tank units can be traced back to the period following WW I. In 1920, the War Department decided to form tank battalions. Twelve states were chosen for tank companies, these to merge into four battalions. The decision of the War Department was not, however, followed through with vigor, forethought, or planning. Instead of twelve states, eighteen states formed divisioned tank companies, with no effort to co-ordinate them into battalions or to equip, recruit, and train such battalions in any large-scale, systematic way. It was not until the 1940-41 period that the four battalion plan became a reality. On September 15, 1940, just before the beginning of the Selective Service System, the country's first peacetime draft, the Army began moving National Guard units into the regular army. The tank units became part of the incremental mobilization, forming as the 191st, 192nd, 193rd, and 194th.

The 192nd, the "Kentucky" battalion, was the first to organize, reporting to Ft. Knox, Kentucky. Captain Bacon R. Moore, from Company D, (which had been organized July 5, 1932, at Harrodsburg, Kentucky), himself a native Kentuckian, was selected as commander of the 192nd. Captain Theodore F. Wickord, from Illinois, became the executive officer. Organizing the medical detachment was First Lieutenant Alvin C. Poweleit, a reserve officer from Ft. Thomas, Kentucky. Poweleit, who would later become a battalion surgeon, would remain with the battalion from inception to end in the Philippines, sharing the battles, the Bataan death march, and Japanese prison camps with survivors. His remembrances, diaries, insights, and later writings would contribute much to the historical record of the 192nd as well as the general history of the Philippines campaign and aftermath.

The 192nd trained at Ft. Knox from November, 1940 to October, 1941, under the watchful eyes of officers, including General George Patton, sent down from the War Department. Despite obvious problems, especially lack of equipment (most heavy equipment was "simulated"—marked out areas stood for tanks and other heavy equipment; markers were used for guns), the 192nd performed well, and were as well-trained as was possible under circumstances of too little time, too little equipment. The tankers were not, surprisingly and unfortunately as it turned out for many of them, given any formal instruction on survival in the Far East (for the 192nd, though unknown to the men, had already been selected for the Philippines). Such training was, however, given to some of the men through the efforts of Poweleit, who recalled: "I picked up a book,



White Dawn, which told of a British army officer who was cashiered from the British army. It spoke of some of his experiences on some of the islands in the Far East. This officer, no matter where he was, studied the fauna and flora of the area and tried to learn the dialect of the people. This struck me as an intelligent means of survival and I used his ideas well. All the officers, non-commissioned officers and many of the enlisted men, including our medical detachment, read *White Dawn*.

In September, 1941, the 192nd left Ft. Knox for maneuvers at Camp Polk, Louisiana. Before proceeding to Louisiana, men were transferred who were overage. One "casualty" was the Battalion commander, Bacon Moore. Theodore Wickord replaced him as commander. It was Wickord who therefore received the secret orders in October, 1941, that told him the 192nd would be sent from Louisiana to "the Pacific," via San Francisco, for extended maneuvers. On board transport ships, the men learned that their specific designation was Fort Stattenberg, Clark Field, the Philippines. One of the sailors aboard the transport Poweleit was sailing on was Japanese. Poweleit, who had purchased and was studying Japanese grammar, striking up casual conversation with the sailor, found a teacher. He taught Poweleit the fundamentals of Japanese. By the time he reached the Philippines, Poweleit had memorized dozens of words and phrases.

The 192nd arrived in Manila Bay on the morning of November 20, 1941. Tired from the long, monotonous sea voyage, the men were happy to be in the Philippines—even when they learned that the islands were under alert. In fact, few took the idea of alert seriously. Poweleit recalled conversations in the Officers' Club where cocky officers talked of knocking out the Japanese in three or four months—if war were ever to come. In a diary note Poweleit wrote: "We had the usual morning routine. Colonel [James] Weaver had a meeting on German tank warfare," adding, "It seemed to me that we should be learning more about Japanese tanks and planes than about German ones." Illusions prevail in life—until they are rudely pulled apart by reality. Such were the illusions by which Americans prepared for the defense of the Philippines.

Not all of them so prepared, of course. Poweleit himself was one of those who followed Cervantes' powerful piece of psychology: "forewarned, forearmed." He continued his study of the Japanese language. He bought a book entitled *The Flora and Fauna of the Philippines*, studied it, supplementing what he read by hiring a young native to teach him "field work." On November 28, 1941, he wrote " . . . we went into the fields to check on some of the edible plants. . . . He showed me the Cogon grass, the papaya seed, the Alibang-bang that could be eaten. Also, [he] told me about mud-fish and certain types of earthworms that could be eaten." Poweleit's activities amused some of his fellow soldiers. So did some of his suggestions. On December 24, 1941, he noted: "Colonel Weaver issued orders for a complete alert for the Provisional Tank Groups. He appeared to be the only officer that was interested in protecting his unit and in being prepared. I suggested that since we were so near the [Clark Field] airport, we dig bomb shelters. This was greeted by loud laughter and glib remarks."

In the days between December 3rd and December 8th [7th U.S. time] there was less derision, more tenseness among the army troops, but somehow illusion reigned to the very end. Even after hearing about Pearl Harbor, and Camp John Hay in Philippines being bombed, the men around Clark Field identified the incoming planes as "American Navy planes" before lamenting, however briefly, all the undug bomb shelters and foxholes as illusions became shattered realities.

To measure the 192nd's deeds in the Philippine battles, it is necessary to measure them against the supreme strategy of the campaign. Specifically one must fit the 192nd into War Plan Orange, a plan that stretched back to 1922. The plan sketched a response to a sudden, hypothetical invasion of the islands by Japan. It was a plan that went through subsequent drafts. Stated simply, it had three phases. First, the defenders would try to stop the Japanese at landing points. That failing, phase two called for well-planned, strategic fall-backs, until, if necessary, the defenders would move onto Bataan peninsula, with headquarters on the strong-hold of Corregidor, there to hold out until reinforcements reached the islands. The man who did the field work, the surveying of Bataan was none other than General Douglas MacArthur, the recently married (to his first wife) and very recent ex-superintendent of West Point. MacArthur, then a Brigadier General, had reservations about Plan Orange, even as it was adopted by a panel of generals and admirals. He was not particularly enchanted with it in 1941, when the hypothetical situation became fact. But he did implement Plan Orange when it became painfully obvious that the Japanese (landing first at northern Luzon, then by landings on the eastern coast) were not going to be stopped at landing sites by U.S.-Filipino troops.

The tanks were to perform the mission of assuring and covering the retrograde withdrawal of the armies of Bataan. It was a mission easy to assign, difficult to execute. Part of the difficulty lay with the idea of "command." The two tank battalions had been combined into a Provisional Tank Group. Colonel (later Brigadier General) James R.N. Weaver, West Point graduate, a career infantryman for much of his career until his transfer to the Philippines, was put in command of the Group. But there were "turf" difficulties, leaving a clear-cut chain of command as much in doubt that, even after the battle was joined by the Japanese. Weaver often found that his tanks were being commandeered by any general officer who had access to tanks, who used them as he saw fit. (According to Weaver, General Jonathan Wainwright was one of those who frequently claimed "immediate battle commander" rights, countermanding Weaver's orders.)

In odd sort of ways, confusion, in company with its compatriots, luck, chance, and circumstance, can weave favorable designs in the fabric of war. The lack of a fixed command, the lack of a fixed position (tanks, units, even companies moved from one battalion to the other) makes it difficult to trace the actions of the 192nd into "history." And it made it difficult to co-ordinate the tank units in battle. But it also had the very favorable effect of confusing the Japanese. The random, sometimes patternless movement of tanks led the Japanese to overestimate the number of tanks they were facing, made them more cautious than they had any reason to be, slowed them down, and caused them therefore to fall behind their Philippines' timetable.



A "retrograde maneuver" is an army term for retreat. A complicated feat at best, it was a particularly difficult one in the Philippines, for MacArthur was overseeing a double retrograde maneuver, moving at the same time two large forces. The Northern Luzon Force (under the command of Major General Jonathan M. Wainwright) and the Southern Luzon Force (under the command of Brigadier General Albert M. Jones). Compounding the intricacies of the retreat

was the fact that the Forces had large numbers of Filipino conscripts who spoke no English and were in most cases led by Americans who did not speak any of the various Filipino dialects; Americans relied on improvised sign language to convey orders. MacArthur later wrote that the operation was basically simple: "Again and again, these tactics would be repeated. Stand and fight, slip back and dynamite. It was savage and bloody, but it won time." It was not simple. It was quite complex. And it was brilliant.

It was also "pure" MacArthur. He had clearly missed a crucial move by failing to bomb Formosa. He waffled and vacillated over initiating War Plan Orange. But once he did initiate it, he executed it with genius. MacArthur was a walking embodiment of the double helix, the pretty and the magnificent, the attractive and unattractive, overlooked opportunities and grand, unified strategies, combining in such ways that it was sometimes difficult to separate them and truly assess him in any given situation.

But the most obvious strand delineating him in the "defense-fall-back" campaign was "brilliance." General Masahara Homma, commander of the Japanese forces, believed that MacArthur intended to make his stand in Manila. He discounted the mass movements of his enemy's forces toward the Bataan Peninsula as either diversion or disorganized movements of shocked forces. The Japanese obviously had never heard of the "Orange" plan. They had no counter-plan for Bataan whatsoever.

The key to the retreat (or retrograde maneuver) was Calumpit Bridge, a twin-spanned structure (one for a railway, the other for a two-lane highway) which crossed the swift, unfordable Pampanga River.

This bridge was the funnel through which would have to pass all troops and equipment needed for prepared positions in Bataan. The key to a successful run of the Calumpit funnel were the tanks. They had to guard both the Southern and Northern Luzon Forces across the bridge, then cross it themselves before the bridge was blown.

The tank units performed superbly well, though not without equal parts of courage and chaos, clever tactics, and utter confusion. Grand strategy is bloodless and abstract and theoretical in conception, but it is always played out in the human arena of men and arms, in blood, sweat, and tears. The tankers, as was true with almost all troops, were in poor physical condition. Lack of sleep, short rations, and constant alertness took their toll. Dive bombers and strafers persistently harassed the men and tanks, spreading them out on an east/west bias farther than they should have been spread. But they fought well.

Even the medical units fought. In defiance of MacArthur's orders that they should not carry arms, the medics kept their guns. Dr. Poweleit joined one fire-fight, and the noncombatant medical doctor shot to kill. He recalled that on "the road back to our bivouac area, we ran into Major Wickord. We told him what had happened but he said not to mention it, as we were not supposed to have weapons; but [Poweleit added wryly] he commended us for what we did." It was a lapse in orders, but a calculatedly overlooked one.

There were other lapses, some not calculated. One lieutenant simply forgot to relay orders to the tankers [that Poweleit was traveling with] to relocate on the "safe" side of the Pampanga River. A captain from another unit reached them, filled in the order, and the tank unit went hurtling off to try to make up lost time. The unit reached the bridge on the river that the Japanese had just blown.

There was a confusing mill of men and equipment at the site. Someone told Poweleit that one of the M-3 tanks had been on the bridge when it was blown, and that the tank had gone over into the water. Poweleit and others rushed to the water, there to see just

below the surface a track of a Bren Gun carrier. Recalled Poweleit, "I then dropped from the bridge into the water and swam over the gun carrier to climb on top. . . I thought I heard muffled voices, so I dove down in the water and came up under the carrier. I felt a body, which I pulled out and brought to shore, then went back to get the other man. The tank was still hot and I burned my arms and the side of my face while getting the last man out."

One of the men survived his ordeal of fire and water. Poweleit recognized him as a sergeant of communications, attached to the 192nd Tank Battalion. Grand strategy and global war had indeed become personal. (Dr. Poweleit, one should add, was recommended for the Distinguished Service Cross by General Weaver for his exploits. For some reason, unbeknownst to either Weaver or Poweleit, the award he did receive was the Legion of Merit. Such nonetheless is a high-ranking combat medal, one rarely awarded to medical officers. He was also the first medical officer in the armored force to be decorated in WW II.)

Other moments of confusion and error prevailed. The tankers of the 192nd worked their way to San Fernando. Alongside the city were rail lines, on which were parked boxcars, some filled with ammunition. Japanese planes suddenly attacked, setting off the munitions. From Poweleit's diary one reads: "The explosions that followed were terrific. The men who heard the explosions thought it was enemy artillery and moved out. When Major (now Lieutenant Colonel) Wickord came over, he found only the medical detachment and equipment since the rest of the 192nd Tank Battalion had moved to the rear. Lieutenant Colonel Wickord was very angry when he caught up with the tank outfit. He exoriated them for leaving their positions without an order. (Might I add here [continued Poweleit] that Lieutenant Colonel Wickord always tried to see that the order of withdrawal was given to all men, no matter where their unit was located.)"

But in spite of lapses of judgement, in spite of the chaos and confusion, and bridging over the hundreds and thousands of personal, human dramas that piece together war, Plan Orange was working. The light tanks, M-3's, virtually useless in jungles and rice-paddy country, were invaluable to MacArthur's double retrograde maneuver. The tanks held when it was absolutely necessary to hold. As the retreating forces converged on "the" bridge, the Calumpit (in all some 184 vital bridges had to be held and blown at the last moment), the Japanese, perhaps just then sensing that the retreat was a plan, not rout, began massing troops at strategic locations. One such place was Baliuag, in an area near the bridge. Ten light tanks of Company "C" of the 192nd were rushed to the area by General Weaver with orders "to hold the area at all costs." The tanks ambushed a larger Japanese tank unit, scattered it, chased individual Japanese tanks through town, then regrouped near the Calumpit Bridge to engage Japanese infantry. At one point the tankers were so low on shells that tanks were firing at individual soldiers with single rounds of 37mm ammunition. By the time the company withdrew onto Bataan, only two tanks were still operating; but the Japanese had been halted for a strategic long moment.

A platoon Company "B" of the 192nd, temporarily switched to the 194th tank battalion, also "held," and held perhaps under even more harrowing conditions. Reconnoitering for the Northern Luzon Force, five tanks took a narrow road running in the direction of Japanese lines, staying in sight contact of each other. As they rounded the curve, the second tank lost the leader. The driver accelerated to close the gap. Just then a shell exploded behind the tank. The tankers realized they were trapped. There was no room to turn around. The tankers followed the old saw that if your are lost, or

trapped, double your speed. The four tanks hurtled down the road, smashing gun units and road-blocks. Finding a place to turn around the tanks came back along the road, running through gun nests and over Japanese soldiers. Returning to the site of the original attack, they found the lead tank. It had been hit, the crew dead. Then the second, third, fourth and fifth tanks were hit. A few men escaped, but most of the platoon was killed. The men of the second tank were trapped inside the tank. When Japanese soldiers inspected the damaged tank, the men inside pretended to be dead. They survived several Japanese inspections, intense heat, and an artillery attack by American-Filipino forces. After the Japanese, who had seen the tanks roaring up and down, and who again overestimated their number, finally moved out of the area, the men began a three-day trek toward friendly lines. They found two other survivors of the battle along the way. With luck, some timely help from Filipino citizens, they eventually reached Manila, where the wounded were turned over to the Philippine General Hospital. The rest eventually caught passage on a Red Cross boat going to Corregidor. After a brief rest, they went to Bataan, joined what was left of the tank group and fought the Bataan battle until surrender. But the most important contribution perhaps had been made in the initial tank battle, for it was these kind of skirmishes that held the Japanese at bay and away from the Calumpit Bridge for the last crucial hours.

Meantime, the Calumpit Bridge was a veritable mad-house. The Northern Luzon Force crossed first. The South Force, following, both created and was caught up in a two-day traffic jam, as wheeled vehicles of every variety, from trucks to taxis to oxcarts, brought troops and refugees to the bridge. At dawn on December 31, the South Luzon Force started to cross. On the night of December 31-January 1, the bridge was blown. The North and South Luzon Forces became the Army of Bataan. There was one more river—the bridge (at Layae)—to cross. On January 6, 1942, the Army was across. The Layae bridge was blown. Eighty-thousand troops—and twenty-six thousand refugees—were now “safe” on Bataan.

The tank units were the last to reach Bataan. The 194th and 192nd crossed the Pampango on the night of January 6-7, at a smaller bridge at Culis. The 192nd covered the 194th, then crossed too, the last American forces into Bataan. The retrograde maneuver was now complete. From January 7 to April 3, when the Japanese began an all-out offensive against Bataan, the tank units, ranks and equipment greatly reduced, on half-rations, ragged and worn down, continued fighting. The 192nd assumed beach defense of the East coast.

The area held by the Army of Bataan shrank dramatically. That the Philippines had been written off as a “lost cause,” that there would be no reinforcement of the Philippines, the Army understood. That “safe” was a relative word the troops understood. Yet they fought on. The tank units resisted attacks to the bitter end, defending positions and fighting on narrow trails, just as fiercely as they had from the beginning. However, they thought of it all at the time, the tankers, years later, could take consolation from their despair. The Orange Plan worked, in large measure due to the shield of armour the tanks provided. The execution of the Plan—and the continued resistance on the peninsula—altered the Japanese timetable (Tokyo had given General Homma February 8 for the conquest of the Philippines), and in so altering, probably saved Australia from invasion. Bataan was the only glimmer of organized resistance to the swift, spreading and nearly all-encompassing conquests of Japan. The part the tank units played was—and is—little noted. In spare words a War Department citation noted: “This unit contributed most vitally in all stages and under extraordinary handicaps to the pro-

traction of the operations and withdrawal [to Bataan].” Inexperienced, hastily trained, rushed into battle with a vastly superior enemy, disorganized, and disoriented, the tank units did indeed have their brief moments of glory.



— — — And long days and nights of hell. On April 9, 1942, the Army of Bataan ceased all resistance. In the days, months, and years ahead, the men of the 192nd shared the Bataan March, temporary prison camps in the Philippines, transportation in “death ships” to final incarceration in prison camps in Taiwan and Japan. Of the three hundred and twenty five men of the 192nd, only one hundred and twenty survived. There were times when, in filth, pain, hunger, fear, and boredom, those living could have identified with Long John Silver’s words in *Treasure Island*: “And them ‘at dies will be the lucky ones.” Yet, survival is the best defiance. Those who did survive, such as Dr. Poweleit, did so by adapting. Knowing Japanese helped him on more than one occasion, a word or two in his own language surprisingly a surly, or brutal “guard” into a human response. Poweleit “made” medicine from plants and barks. Unlike some, he spurned no chance at food, be it carabou, monkey, dog, or iguana. It was survival at its most primitive level, a struggle for an extra mouthful of food, a struggle to obtain “folk” medicines, a struggle against diseases that robbed one of any semblance of human dignity, a struggle against human nature when that nature has been reduced and debased. In *Behind Japanese Lines*, Ray Hunt, a soldier who escaped the Death March (and fought the war with guerilla forces), relates an incident of utter adaption to situation. Wounded in the foot, his wound developed into a large ulcer. He recalled his experience at a “safe” house:

The ulcer had eaten a hole an inch across right down to the bone. Little beads of decaying flesh honeycombed its sides and stank atrociously. In fact, as soon as I sat down in the house the family dog picked up the smell and kept coming towards the foot, sniffing inquisitively. I kept driving him away. At length one of the Filipino women, who spoke English, noticed what was taking place and urged me to let the dog lick the wound clean. The mere thought disgusted me, but there was nothing to lose by trying. The dog eagerly worked its tongue into the festering cavity and began to lick away the rotting flesh. The pain was excruciating, so bad that I had to stand and hold my foot down to endure it; but when the dog had finished its loathsome task the foot felt better. I stayed there a week. The dog continued its treatments every day, and my foot began to heal. How easily civilization causes us to forget simple things, that from time immemorial animals have healed themselves by licking their wounds.



War is not civilization, whatever part it plays in human affairs. The men of the 192nd fought, were wounded, lived through, in William Manchester’s words, “green hells.” Most died, some survived. They lived and died in conditions far below the civilization that they preferred. But, quoting William Faulkner, the “endured,” and in enduring, they “prevailed.”

And it is tribute to those qualities—enduring, prevailing— that marks this night’s dedication.

CHAPTER II

SANDY'S OWN WORDS

CHAPTER II

IN SANDY'S OWN WORDS ...

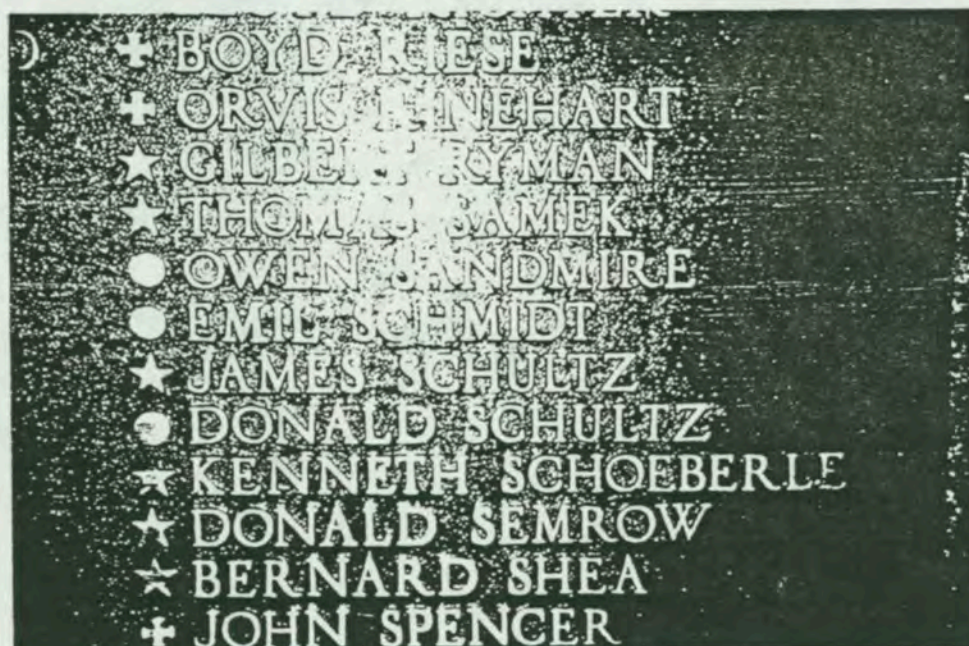
"Well, I was born Owen Sandmire on October 24th, 1918 in Viola, Wisconsin. After leaving home at age 15 I supported myself by making a buck wherever I could -- worked my way through high school. Went into the service when I was 21. I enlisted on September 16, 1940 in the 32nd Division National Guard unit in Janesville, Wisconsin. That was the original Red Arrow Division. They were not up to strength at that time and had just come back from summer maneuvers at Camp McCoy, a yearly thing, and had lost some due to discharges, some too old for the guard, and they wanted to get this thing activated back to normal strength. I'd been out of school a few years just sort of knocking around. Work was sort of rough then if you remember -- back around 1938 to 1940, and I took any jobs as they came along. I got to talking to some guys down at the local beer joint one night about the National Guard taking on members to bring the company up to strength. So I up and enlisted! Went home a week or so later and told my Mom what a wonderful new job I had and she said, "Buddy, why did you enlist?" That's how it all started.

There were 99 of us in the group that left Janesville, Wisconsin. In fact, Dale Dopkins wrote a book called "The Janesville 99" which was published in 1981. There are only 12 of us left. Janesville erected a beautiful memorial to our group -- has all our names on it.

Well, we weren't activated until sometime in November, 1940. They got the troops all together with equipment and took us to Fort Knox, which is the home of the First Armored Division, and we were to be there almost a year in basic training and armored tactics. It was a very eventful year at Fort Knox. It was a nice post -- a permanent post -- and we were in temporary barracks for awhile but then moved into permanent quarters. We completed our training and in the meantime I was promoted from a Private to PFC to Corporal to Sergeant prior to going to Louisiana maneuvers. Those were called Red and Blue maneuvers which were pretty well known as it covered Louisiana, Texas and parts of Mississippi, so we were all over everywhere. This was really the start of our career because of our National Guard activities. We really were preparing for World War II. From the bottom of our hearts we hoped we weren't -- but, yeah. Getting back to the Louisiana maneuvers, that was a training ground for our expedition over to the Philippines. Of course at that time we

JANESVILLE, WISCONSIN MEMORIAL TO "THE JANESVILLE 99"

Of those 99, twelve survive in 1987.



didn't know where we were going. We were issued all new equipment. Contrary to what a lot of people think, I was given a brand new tank -- it had four miles on it and was an M-2. It had a GREAT BIG 37 which is like a pop gun. The tank was a 15 tonner. We were 192nd Tank Battalion when we went overseas. After we got over there there was another tank battalion. General Weaver was the Lt. Colonel and he became General and organized these two battalions into what was called The First Provisional Tank Group, which was the only armored mechanized group they had in the Philippines. We were sent there for a purpose. They knew they were going to be overwhelmed and it was the only recourse they had to delay the Japanese advance. The tank I got had 4 miles on it and I found out when I got to the Philippines that the fool thing was obsolete even before I got it in 1941. We were very poorly equipped. We didn't even have a decent machine to load belts of ammunition for the machine guns. It all had to be done by hand.

Of course the tanks had to be prepared as well as the trucks, the guns, the machine guns, anything we had had to be dipped in cosmoline to be stored because of the saltwater conditions. Things seemed to work out pretty good down there as we prepared to go overseas. Things seemed to be well organized and we loaded all the equipment on a train and headed for San Francisco and went out to Angel Island -- the quarantine island -- for shots and such. If anyone was sick, they shipped them back because they wouldn't ship them overseas. I think we were on Angel Island approximately a week. We boarded an old beat-up scow -- I think it was a World War I transport ship called the USS Scott. There was another troop carrier called the Coolidge which was a luxury liner compared to ours. We shipped out of San Francisco and if I remember right we left sometime around my birthday in October of 1941 and went to Pearl Harbor. In fact we were fortunate enough to be in Pearl Harbor for a few days for rest and relaxation -- R & R. That's really what it was. I enjoyed that! After that we headed out and it was black-outs and zig-zag all the way to the Philippines. We arrived in the Philippines on Thanksgiving Day. Contrary to what you might have heard, we did NOT have turkey. We had slumgullion slung onto our mess kits without benefit of tables or plates or whatever. We were confined to temporary quarters in nothing more than tents -- eight-man tents -- paramedal tents and that was our quarters until the war broke out. Of course they were building facilities, but we never got to occupy them.

We knew nothing about the war coming. Only the high brass knew that. The only suspicion we had was when all hell broke loose. We didn't even know about Pearl Harbor. We got the rebound from Pearl Harbor. They caught us, these bombers on the way back from Pearl Harbor, the next day. They got Stotzenberg, where I was located, which was just across the barbed wire fence from Clark Field. And, of course, they hit Manila at the same time. They just practically eliminated everything we had in the line of aircraft. But we had enough time to get our tanks disbursed and we did not lose a one in this particular attack. There was a lot of bombing and strafing and from then on it was all-out total war. After staying around Stotzenberg for a matter of a few days, we got the word that the Japanese were going to land in Lingayen Gulf. So they took the whole First Provisional Tank Group north to Lingayen Gulf and each tank was assigned one whole mile of beach to protect and patrol against invasion. Well, you can imagine how much of a chance one tank would have against 20,000 to 30,000 Japanese plus the ships that shelled us, plus the airplanes, et cetera.

There was one interesting thing that happened at Lingayen. We had a young fellow by the name of Captain Kelly from the Air Force Unit at Clark Field. He dropped a bomb right down the funnel of one of the warships of the Japanese and, boy, that really set us on fire. We thought we could whip those Japanese today or tomorrow. Of course it was just a freak thing. I can't recall if Captain Kelly ever got back to the states. Just lost complete track of him. (NOTE: In response to my question if this was Captain Colin Kelly who accomplished a similar feat early in the war and was one of the first heroes of WWII, reknown throughout the United States, Sandy replied, "I can't remember his first name, but it could very well be the same man. He sure bolstered our morale.")

From then on it was just a piecemeal retreat from the shores of Lingayen Gulf all the way back to Bataan Peninsula. It was pitched battle after pitched battle because we were the last things to retreat because we were protecting the infantry, the artillery, anything connected with the armed forces. And as we left, we blew the bridges behind us. What we couldn't blow was tough! By then the enemy was coming literally in waves.

I remember it was Christmastime and it was the first decent meal we had and would you believe -- we had turkey -- on Christmas Day! This was Christmas of 1941. This was a blessing because I hadn't had a shower -- hadn't even had my clothes off for 18 straight days. I slept on my tank or in my tank or on the run, or wherever we could get a minutes rest.

And the food was so unreliable we just had to scrounge through the countryside to get what we could. If you could find a chicken or a pig or whatever and cook it wherever you could, you could eat. We didn't spare any lizards, or horses, or mules, or oxen. We slaughtered them and ate them. It was the only means of survival.

My memory fails me now as to the actual date we got back into Bataan. We had served our purpose and we created a perimeter right straight across the northern part of Bataan. That served as a barrier with the Japanese on one side and the Americans on the other. It was a matter of pitched battles wherever the Japanese tried to break through. Our company, which should have been 13 tanks, lost some due to wear and tear, breakdowns, lost in battle or whatever. Our job was that every time a fleet or force of Japanese tried to make an invasion of the western shore of Bataan, we were to contain them in a small perimeter and literally wipe them out. We got involved in four particular skirmishes. I think the most bitter one was when the Japanese had a marine force which was comparable to the Americans. They called it the Fleet Marine Force, which were the very top fighters in the whole marine group. This is what that Japanese invasion force was and I tell you, they were tough to get out. They had these monstrous trees that had roots that looked like great big huge boards about four to six inches thick and they'd dig what we called a "spider hole" -- a hole on top that was just big enough for them to crawl in and they'd pull the cover back on and there would be six- eight-ten Japanese down in these "spider holes", and they'd hole up down in there. One night one of our tanks went beyond our particular lines we'd set up and got into enemy territory. I don't know how they did it -- either a land mine or some way they disabled the tank and we had no way of knowing what happened to those poor guys. The next morning we looked and there sat the tank, just like the night before. But during the night the Japanese didn't even bother to kill the crew -- they just opened the top of the tank -- they knew those guys couldn't get out -- and they filled the tank full of dirt from these spider holes. They had to have somewhere to get rid of the dirt to camouflage those holes, so here these guys were literally buried alive with the dirt that was dug out of these spider holes. We finally got that particular one contained.

By the same token, there are these cliffs along the west coast that were particularly high. There were caves that the water had washed out and the Japanese had to climb down, or up -- we don't know which -- and got into these cliffs and we had one heck of a time getting them out of there. We went out in small boats with the biggest guns we had and kept on shooting in there -- shooting in there -- shooting in there. We didn't have napalm, didn't have tear gas to drive them out. It was just a matter of shelling, shelling shelling until we killed them or they came out on their own. That was one of the worst skirmishes we ever had because they were really tough. "

This interruption in Sandy's narrative is to include the following publication written by Alvin C. Poweleit, MD, FACS, Retired Major Provisional Tank Group so the reader may better understand the brave, noble battle made by our defenders in the Philippines that will forever enshrine their place in the history and hearts of all Americans and free men everywhere.

"PHILIPPINE ISLANDS AND MIDWAY"

"TURNING POINT OF WAR IN THE PACIFIC"

"Midway Island was saved by the heroic action of the combined forces in the Philippines. This was made known to me at the time of the capitulation of the Japanese by one of their generals in Taihoku, Taiwan.

"After the capitulation of the Japanese in August, 1945, I was moved from Shirakawa (Taiwan) to another Prisoner of War Camp at Taihoku, Taiwan. At this camp were a number of Japanese officers (Colonels and Generals). These Japanese officers would not associate with line officers, but did communicate with the Medical Officers as we were told we belonged to the International Medical Society.

"One General in particular, because I could speak his language, and he some English, became very conversant with me. He told me that if it had not been for General Weaver's six battalions of tanks, the Japanese would have taken the Philippines on January 15, 1942. I told him that I was Provisional Group Surgeon and that we had only two battalions of tanks -- the 192nd and the 194th. I also told him that the 194th had two companies and lost one company early in the war; that the Kentucky 192nd had four companies who had one year of training before going to the Philippines. I stated that with our five companies, General Weaver had no infantry to back them up, strategically manipulated them so as to appear to have more tanks than he really had.

"This General told me that Yamashita had taken Malaya, Singapore, Java, and landed some troops on Timor (an island north of Australia) by February 15, 1942. He was ready to take Australia. He also stated that the Japanese timetable was to take the Philippines by January 15, 1942; Malaya, Singapore and Java by February 15, 1942; and Midway Island, Australia, New Zealand by the third or fourth month of 1942; and possible invasion of Siberia.

"When Japan was bombed by Doolittle's men, Admiral Yamamoto thought that the base of attack came from Midway Islands, a circular atoll in the central Pacific Ocean about 1300 miles west of Honolulu, Hawaii (and just east of the International date line) and approximately 2500 miles from Japan. (1)

"February 19, 1942, Admiral Negumo's Pearl Harbor Task Force standing off Timor, launched a devastating air strike on the northern Australian city of Darwin. Flying at the limit of their range, 169 of the crack bomb crews trained at the Misty Lagoon Air Station succeeded in sinking a U.S. Destroyer, four U.S. transports, one British tanker and four Australian freighters in Darwin Harbor; in knocking out 23 allied planes, ten of them beyond repair; and in demolishing several of Darwin's finest buildings, killing 233 Australians and wounding 300 more. In exchange, only five of the Japanese aces were lost. (2)

"In the fearful weeks that followed, Australians braced themselves for invasion. The Australian Army was already committed to England, Africa, India, and the crumbling fortresses of the British Empire in the Far East. At home only 7000 Australian regulars remained to fight. In New Zealand the same conditions existed as in Australia. (3)

"Admiral Yamamoto, the hero of Pearl Harbor, wanted to land an expeditionary force on the undefended north coast of Australia. General Yamashita, the hero of Singapore, seconded Yamamoto and offered to lead the invasion force himself. (4)

"General Tojo, the Prime Minister, and most of the elders in the general staff meeting spoke against the Yamamoto-Yamashita plan. In reviewing the arguments of both sides, Hirohito decided that the invasion of Australia and Midway could be postponed until after the conquest of Burma. (5)

"Hirohito announced his decision with characteristic obliqueness at the liaison conference in the Imperial Headquarters held on February 23, 1942. He also knew that the Japanese new perimeter reached within easy flying range of Australia, and except for the U.S. forces on Bataan and Corregidor, 1600 miles behind the front lines, it contained only guerilla pockets of resistance. (6)

"This posed a threat to their supply lines, and as the Japanese General told me, as long as the Philippines held on, it saved Australia, New Zealand, and Midway from being invaded. He told me that if it wasn't for over 500 to 1000 tanks which broke up their timetable, they would have taken the Philippines on January 15, 1942. I told him we had only 100 tanks. He asked me how I knew this. I told him I was Provisional Tank Surgeon. (He knew of the 192nd and General Weaver, Division Commander.) It also allowed our Navy to recuperate and defeat the Japanese fleet at Midway.

"If Midway had been taken, we might have lost our recuperated Navy. The General told me that if Japan would have taken Midway, the Japanese were going to send hundreds of Kamikazi pilots in planes loaded with bombs to Midway.

"Our tank defense -- 192nd (four tank / ^{companies} and the 194th's two companies (one was lost), without infantry, held the Japanese at bay and broke their timetable.

"What did winning the battle of Midway mean? The most immediate fact, of course, appeared in the tangibles -- men and materials lost. One must also consider the intangibles -- what might have happened and did not. But had Yamamoto fulfilled his project of taking Midway and destroying Nimitz's carriers, the next program on his agenda was to turn to the Australian and New Zealand campaigns. Had he succeeded in cutting the Australians and New Zealand, MacArthur's forces would have been isolated and the Japanese in total command of the South Pacific and Indian Oceans. Japan would have held Southeast Asia for many a sad day. And in the meantime, possession of Midway would have given Japan the means to harass at least the Hawaiian Islands and even our west coast. (7)

- "(1) The Rising Sun - John Toland
(2) (3) (4) (5) (6) Japan's Imperial Conspiracy - David Bergamine
(7) Miracle at Midway - Georges W. Prang, Donald Goldstein and
Katherine V. Dillan"

A further interjection here: About seven months after Sandy related the foregoing few pages, I asked him to tell how he came to be recommended for a Silver Star. He told me, "Well, I was recommended for the Silver Star but I guess the papers got lost because I never did get it, which is understandable in the midst of battle, capitulation and 3½ years as a POW." However, in writing this book we dug out his discharge papers and found, much to his surprise, that he was, indeed, awarded the Silver Star. It is probably sitting in the warehouse along with five tons of medals due other heroes which were never delivered. We've written inquiry about this matter and as this is written are awaiting a reply.

The following five pages relates what he was able to recall of the times and events of the Silver Star recommendation plus several other events.

His original narrative, in his own words, picks up again on the sixth page following. Here, also in his own words, is the Silver Star incident.

"On January 6, 1988, on the radio, a news commentator told about the Allied Forces setting up and establishing lines all the way across the peninsula 46 years ago, January 6, 1942, and this was the start of the siege of Bataan. The capitulation of Bataan occurred April 9, 1942, so these American and Philippino forces held off the Japanese for a little over three months -- enough to really screw up their timetable. The west side of the peninsula lines seemed to be getting the brunt of things and were getting beaten back, and every once in awhile the Japanese would put on a push and then they would call up the tanks. Most of us were on the west side of the peninsula so they called us in to shore up the breaches where the Japanese had broken through. As we got lines established a little farther back, we would retreat and wait til some further breaks in lines.

We happened to be at kilometer post 208 at that time. I had been sent up to the main road that goes around the perimeter of the peninsula on road guard and the rest of the company was out on bivouac a mile or so down in the jungles. So big old "Photo Charlie" kept coming over. We didn't pay much attention to him because he was there day after day after day. We thought we had the tank camouflaged sufficiently. In the meantime we had dug bomb shelters -- just shallow ditches big enough for four people to lay down during a bomb attack, and if we didn't get a direct hit we thought we'd just get covered with dirt or shake the hell out of us. It wasn't too long after Photo Charlie had been around one day when, doggone, this glide bomber came in and laid a bomb right alongside the tank. Fortunately the tank was between us and the bomb where it dropped. Even the tank deflected a lot of it where normally it would have half covered us up. Well, I tell you, it didn't take us long to get that tank out of there and get it back down in the jungle where they couldn't see it.

Some of this gets a little hazy, but I think it was just a few days after that that I contracted dysentery for the first time. This was during the fighting, before the capitulation, so where I got it I have no idea. Probably from contaminated water. Anyway, the Japanese had broken through again and we had kind of taken turns, the tank commanders, to go up there. I was in no position to go up there as I was flat on my back and sicker than a dog. So they sent a replacement -- a fellow by the name of Bill McCullough. He went up to the front lines trying to shore up the breach and doggone if his tank didn't run over a land mine. It just raised hell with his leg. To this day I don't know if he lost that leg or not. I kinda lost track of what happened to him because actually he was kind of a deadbeat. I believe he's out in Arizona now. But actually this may have been one of the luckiest things that ever happened to me

because who knows where I would have gone. I may have missed it, or I may have hit a worse one -- who knows what would have happened. In a way I'm kind of glad I had amoebic dysentery because of that. Otherwise I'd never wish I had amoebic dysentery, believe me! Anyway, this was one of several times where the Japanese had broken through when our tanks were sent up there. Fortunately I missed out on this time because I was the one who was supposed to have gone but didn't because of this attack of amoebic dysentery.

I think I told before about these BIG Japanese -- I think they had to have been at least 5'10" or something like that. They had to be big in order to get into this elite Japanese corps. It was equivalent to the American Fleet Marine Force - FMF they called it. This is where the Silver Star action comes in that you asked about. The Japanese landed and made a beachhead on the ocean side. They didn't come by land. They came by barge or whatever. They established the beachhead. These are the ones I told you about who would dig these "spider holes" alongside these monstrous trees. The roots weren't round as we are familiar with here. The roots were flat and ran up and down. Some of those roots were a foot thick and two or three feet high and made a perfect defense against bullets and even small cannon that we had wouldn't penetrate it. Armor-piercing would, yeah, but explosive would not. One of the tanks in our company got stalled out there trying to drive these Japs back and during the night when the Japanese were digging these spider holes, they may have shot the men or threw a grenade in there or very probably just buried them alive but somehow they put the dirt from these spider holes into the tank so there was no sign of digging. No sign of any dirt. At night they would come up out of these spider holes and, man, they would just raise hell. It was a terrifying experience never knowing what was going to happen.

The following day one of our men in our company -- I believe his name was Corporal Bruce -- had gone in doing some reconnoitering and he got shot. Well, here he was literally out in no-man's land and he couldn't get back. So myself and a fellow by the name of Hopple from Company B and two others whose names, so help me, I can't remember, we scrounged our way out there with a stretcher, got him on the stretcher and started bringing him back when two of the guys, I believe it was two, got shot carrying this guy out. I didn't get a scratch carrying this guy out and I presume the fourth guy didn't either. Anyway, the two that were shot were pretty bad and so was Corporal Bruce. We took them in an ambulance -- of course there were no ambulance drivers around, so I was a "handcuff volunteer" to take them to the hospital. So down I went, down this

Bataan highway, whatever the hell they called it. Had to go all the way down to Marveles and back up the other side, the bay side of the peninsula to get to the hospital. Well, hell, the rocks were just -- aww -- they were just great big cobblestones -- not fit for truck driving. Fine for tanks, but for vehicles and trucks it was almost impossible. Anyway, when I got them over there they were all dead. I guess this one guy lived a day or so but all died with the exception of myself and this other guy who helped bring them out. This is where I was recommended for, but not awarded, the Silver Star. Whatever became of the papers -- well hell, I know what became of the papers -- they just never got anywhere, just like everything else, burned, destroyed, lost or captured. So that takes care of that.

There were some other tank battles but my memory is so hazy I'm not going to relate those. That one I was lucky enough not to go up on, and the one where we repulsed the landing they made on the ocean side of the peninsula. Incidentally, we never took any prisoners. They either buried themselves or they buried the dead in these spider holes. What weren't killed we shot and buried them.

One more incident. On our retreat back from San Fernando back toward Bataan, when we were going to establish this defensive line all the way across the Philippines, we set up a defense line one night with our tanks that were left. In the jungles over there you can imagine how dark it is when there's no moon. When the moon is out it's pretty decent, but when there's no moon it's just absolutely black. Well doggone if those Japanese infantry troops didn't literally attack those tanks by hand. They didn't have machine guns, fortunately. They just swarmed around us with hand guns and rifles and whatnot. Well, what were we to do? We couldn't lower our guns down far enough to shoot them. If you stuck your head out the tank to shoot them with your pistol, man, you were a dead man. So all we could do was gradually retreat out of that mess. Well in the meantime, one of the tanks in our company, about in the middle of this retreat, doggone if one of these Japs didn't come up and lay a magnetic type mine, armor piercing, on the top of the front, you might say, about where the bow gunner would sit. When that thing went off, zing, right through! Fortunately it only took from his calf down -- that part of his leg off. His name was Emil Schmidt. (NOTE: Emil Schmidt's name is listed directly below Sandy's on the Janesville Memorial. See picture.) There were two Schmidts in the company, Emil and another guy. I can't think of his name. We called him Zippo.

This was another terrifying thing over there. You never knew when they were going to attack. You couldn't tell a Japanese from a Philippino when they did infiltrate. I do remember this one particular occasion where this Emil Schmidt had suffered the leg injury -- literally an amputation. The commander's name was Campbell, Sergeant Campbell. He was sitting up there with a 30 caliber machine gun mounted on the turret of the tank. They weren't designed to be shooting down on the ground, literally right down beside the tank. They were designed to shoot ahead of the tank in an open field. Well, this Japanese was coming up with that magnetic mine. The Sergeant with the machine gun knew he couldn't shoot him and didn't know enough to take out his pistol and shoot the guy. There were fires raging around there from tanks that had been hit and with the confusion in general, it was a helluva mess. How we got out of it I'll never know. Had the Japanese had any anti-tank guns or any artillery, man, it would have been a mess because we were pretty concentrated in this one line and there seemed to be only the one escape route to get to the main road. This is where they started nailing us because you could only go so fast. Thousands of troops on the road, and the trucks and the tanks and everybody retreating. And this is just about one of the cases. That's one bad thing about being in a tank. You are subject to attack.

Our Army had 155 howitzers. They had six of them in whatever they call these groups -- I guess plain old artillery. Seems it was our job to protect those guns. They were mobile. We'd hook on to them with these special vehicles. You could haul them on down the road, but you just didn't pick them up like a sack of flour. It took a lot of preparation to set them up and it took a lot of preparation to tear them down so they could be transported by truck. Well, why we always got stuck with guarding those things, I don't know. That's the first thing that would draw fire. Just as soon as they started shelling the Japanese, up would go Photo Charlie and they'd find those guns and the first thing you know here would come the dive bombers and they would pepper the hell outa them. The only thing we could do was set them up on as temporary a basis as we possibly could, throw all the fire we could, do all the damage we could, knock them down as quick as we could and get them out of there before the Japanese could find out where we were. That's the only recourse we had. As a result you realize they just weren't that effective. We couldn't get enough fire power to do a lot of damage. It was more or less a morale thing as far as the Japanese were concerned as they never knew where these 155s were coming from. That's a pretty good size shell. I think it's a six-inch and it does a lot of damage when it hits.

One more thing that is kind of a humorous thing. We were on the retreat on the east side of the peninsula coming from San Fernando down to Mariveles when we were coming

down into the Bataan peninsula. We had no protection whatsoever against the Japanese aircraft, the bombers, the dive bombers, the fighter planes or whatever. Forrest Knox and I and another guy had confiscated two aircraft machine guns, the types mounted in the wings of the P-40s. They fired extremely fast. The run-of-the-mill Browning machine gun fires about 450 rounds per minute. These things will fire in excess of 1,000 rounds per minute because they were cut-down versions of the machine gun. They were much lighter and as a result would heat up much quicker. That's why they used them in aircraft because as they flew the air coming around the barrel would keep them relatively cool if they weren't used too much. Well, this is all well and good, but it's a little difficult to hold those fool things while you shoot them. They came in pairs. So we went to a native -- a farmer I guess -- he had rice paddies there. We wanted to know if we could borrow his calasa. A calasa is a two-wheeled cart pulled by one or two small ponies they used for taxi service. In this particular case I don't know what they used it for -- if it was a wagon or if it was a calasa. Well, he said, "How much are you going to pay me?" We didn't have any money so we gave him an I.O.U. and signed it "Uncle Sam". I think it was for ten dollars or ten pesos or whatever it was. Anyway we took the one axle off and dug a hole, stuck the axle down in the ground sticking straight up and mounted the wheel on the top. Then in turn mounted the machine gun on that wheel. All the way around the wheel we dug a trench about six feet deep. Now I tell you that was one helluva job to set this thing up. But any time any aircraft came in we could get on these two machine guns and start firing away if they were anywhere within range. Well I don't know if we ever even scratched one but we sure burned up a lot of ammunition. They never found us -- never detected us. We never got strafed, bombed or anything. Knocky and I just had a ball building that fool thing and shooting at those planes. We often talked about that and wondered if that guy ever got his money from that I.O.U. signed "Uncle Sam".

"During the course of all these battles which all take gas and ammunition, which we were sorely short of, and running out of food, ammunition, gasoline, and our vehicles were going to pot, we were down to the point where we couldn't do a thing except for a major crisis where the Japanese had broken through and we would try to seal up the hole to make sure they didn't break through.

As of now I can relate only as to my particular instance, my particular tank and my particular platoon because we were spread out pretty thin along the west coast. In the Philippines the mileage is by kilometers and as you go up the west coast of Bataan it is really rugged. I mean great big cobblestone roads. For awhile I had the misfortune of being Reconnaissance Sergeant and trying to ride an Indian motorcycle with all the controls on the opposite side of a Harley-Davidson I trained with at Fort Knox. This went on for a couple of weeks and they finally got another reconnaissance man so I got back into my tank.

I happened to be at kilometer post 208 and Mariveles, which is the southern tip of the Bataan peninsula -- about 125 kilometers from San Fernando which was our starting point. Our unit was pretty well thinly spread out over this west coast of Bataan. We must have been in this particular location for about two weeks before we finally got the word that there had been a surrender. Of course we were just about dead on our feet anyway because we couldn't do a thing. We were out of gasoline. We still had some ammunition but the food was down to practically nothing. We were killing everything we could find in the jungle -- birds, lizards, snakes -- the mules, horses and water buffalo had long since been gone. The rice was practically gone. Very little, if any vegetables or wild fruits of the jungle that we could live on. Well, the word came down that we could destroy all of our ordinance equipment which was tanks, machine guns, cannons and so forth, but the quartermaster equipment which was trucks were to be turned over to the Japanese. I, unluckily, got the job of destroying all the tanks we had left. So I took them back in the boonies as far as I could drive them before they just stopped and tried to get them in a semi-circle with the engines facing me. Then with my own tank I fired rounds of armor piercing ammunition into the back end of each one of these tanks which ruptured the gas tank, ruined the mortars and what not, and then fired high explosive shells into each one of these individual tanks, setting them on fire. By the time I got through with them they were practically useless except for scrap metal. I understand that during the course of the war they salvaged all those tanks out of the jungle and sent all that scrap metal back to Japan. They utilized the quartermaster equipment -- the Jeeps, the 2x2s, 4x4s and 6x6 trucks.

In fact when I got to Manila on detail I had driven quite a few of those American vehicles that the Japanese had confiscated. At the time of the surrender the Japanese had absolutely no organization, no way of knowing how many troops there would be, what they were going to do with us -- nothing! We were on our own to get from kilometer post 208, which was at least two miles down into the jungle, out to the main highway. I guess they called it the West Bataan highway for want of a better description and we were to get to Mariveles which was to be our assembly point for all the troops -- Philippino, American or whatever. It took us two days to get down there. You either walked, or hitched a ride or however you could get down there. We were halfway in good spirits because we thought the war was over for us. We wouldn't have to worry about getting killed and the enemy would feed us and clothe us. But we were in for a very rude awakening, believe me! The first thing they did when we got to Mariveles was to shake down everybody. They took everything and anything that we had, even our shoes if they fit them. They'd take them off of us. All night long I had a little duffel bag with my personal articles like a toothbrush, toothpaste and maybe a razor. My watch I hid but they found that. My Elgin watch that I had bought back in the states. Everybody was literally stripped -- just nothing. Of course there was no organization. They had raw rice so we filled our pockets with raw rice and started on this march from Mariveles -- started on the so-called Death March. For how many days it took us to get to San Fernando, we ate raw rice -- all the way up there -- trying to wash it down with whatever little water I could find. I never had any meat of any kind, no vegetables -- just raw rice and cooked rice that the Japanese had given us, not along the way, but at night when we settled down. We would have to sit on the ground with our feet and knees drawn up to our chest as tight as we could and the next guy with his knees right against your back and that's the way you'd sit all night, just like this. Huddled, just like that, all night. And this went on for the first three nights. You can imagine how we felt without much food, no rest, no sleep, and worrying about the guards because if you moved they'd beat the hell outa you or use their bayonets, or shoot you, or behead you or whatever -- whatever their mood was. And this kind of treatment went on all the way up that Death March -- all the way up to San Fernando. I remember a particular incident yet of a fellow in our outfit whose name was Bernard Shay. That may not mean a whole lot to people, but he was a really good guy. He was the Captain's orderly. During maneuvers one time he accidentally laid the Captain's air mattress on a spike and punctured it. Well, of course, this enraged the Captain no end and from then on we called Shay "Spike".

When we got to San Fernando, we were caged in, like a prison compound that's when the people really started dying as a result of this Death March. We had to dig big holes and they just started throwing bodies in there like pieces of wood. And they threw poor old Spike in there, but he wasn't dead. And he tried to crawl out! And every time he'd get to the top of the hole, the Japanese would hit him in the head with a rifle butt and knock him back down again. And he'd come to and start crawling back up again and they'd belt him in the head again! And they kept doing this until finally they killed him and threw him back down in the bottom of the hole. Then they covered up the hole and started digging another one for the rest of us that started dying along the way.

We were at this particular compound for less than a week. We couldn't have lasted there. There was nothing there. No food! Nothing! They finally herded us into these small boxcars. They were probably half as big as an American regulation boxcar. They jammed us in there so tight -- absolutely so tight -- that you could pick your legs up and not even fall down we were jammed in there so tight. And we stayed in those boxcars like that until we got to Camp O'Donnell. If I remember right, we were put in the boxcars about noon and got to Camp O'Donnell about noon the next day. We were in those boxcars about 24 hours with no food, no water, no nothing! O'Donnell was really the hellhole, to me, of all the prison camps I was in. This Japanese General told us he was only interested in dead Americans. I can't think of his name -- something like Yakimoto or Locomotive or something like that. He was in charge of this camp at O'Donnell -- the original camp where the bulk of us came from the railroad station at San Fernando up to Camp O'Donnell. I related the boxcar bit where we were packed in like sardines -- where you couldn't fall down if you wanted to. When we got to camp and got things halfway in order as far as the Japanese were concerned, this General got up and gave us the ins and outs, the do's and don'ts or whatever, as far as prison camp life is concerned. In his own words he said, "I don't care how many of you are alive in the morning. I'm only interested in the dead ones in the morning. I have no concern about you people whatsoever. I'm only concerned with the dead ones." This, apparently, was the order he got from the top guns. The more who died, the happier he got, the less he had to feed and worry about.

Men were sick and dead and dying all over the place. They did not have the people separated. Those with diphtheria, those with contagious diseases other than diphtheria -- beriberi, malaria, amoebic dysentery -- it was just one massive hospital -- that's what it was.



(Marine Corps Photos from Acme)

On the infamous Bataan Death March in April, 1942, American soldiers stop for a moment of rest. The Japanese had taken their hats, giving them no protection from the blistering sun. The hands of those shown below are tied behind their backs, their faces streaked with blood and grime. These photos were stolen from the Japanese by Filipinos during the occupation.



Knights of Bushido by Russell



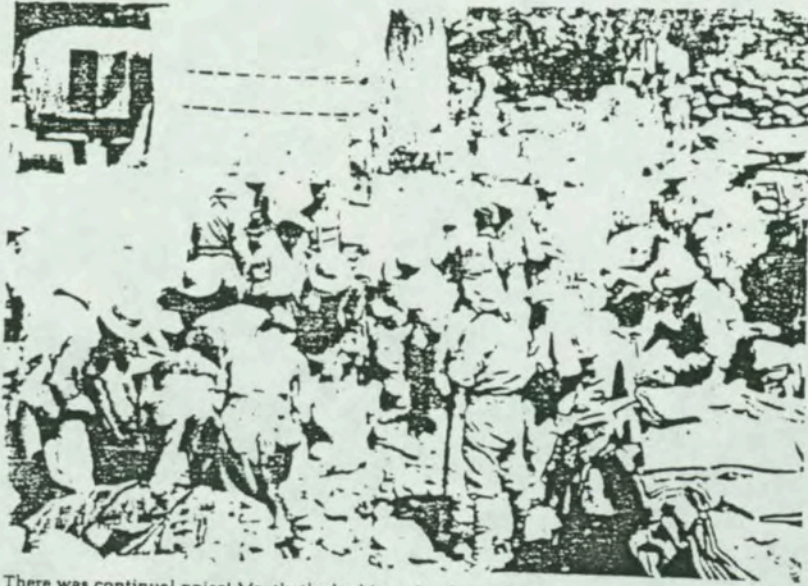
(Wide World Photo)

The Death March from Bataan nearing its end with a thinning file of prisoners approaching Camp O'Donnell carrying comrades who dropped along the way and had to be carried on improvised stretchers. This Japanese photograph was captured in the Philippines.



These United States soldiers did not complete the Bataan Death March. The U.S. Marine Corps announced that this picture was stolen by Filipinos from Japanese.

(Wide World Photo)



There was continual noise! Mostly the barking of orders in Japanese . . ."

I had dysentery pretty bad but there wasn't anything I could do about it. You didn't stop on 'the march' because if you did you were dead."



Death March by Donald Knox

I got really sick and was sent to Zero Ward. That's the last ward before they throw you in a hole and bury you. I guess I was partly delirious because I wanted to see some of my friends on the other side which was not classed a Zero Ward or hospital area. I started over there. Well, doggone, I got halfway over there and I couldn't make it, so I started crawling. I crawled all the way across this camp. I talked with my brothers and rested. Then I started back. I remember I couldn't make it. But I kept trying and eventually I crawled all the way back. This must have taken one afternoon to the next morning to get over there and back. So I thought, "Oh boy, this is not the place for me!" This was before I got diphtheria. This time in Zero Ward was the result of amoebic dysentary. It really knocks the sap outa ya! It really drains you. I thought, "There's only one way I'm gonna live and that's to get out of this camp and get on a detail that I know is going out every day to repair bridges, roads and air strips or whatever damage we had done on the retreat from the south of the Philippines as well as the north of the Philippines, converging on Bataan. Had we known when we were blowing these up that we would be the ones that had to fix them, we probably wouldn't have blown them in the first place. But that's beside the point. They had to be repaired because the Japanese said so and they had the manpower -- which was us! One of the first details they took out was to go back into Bataan and start salvaging equipment that we damaged, specifically the tanks and any weapons or equipment in there. It was up to the American POWs to drag it out, up to San Fernando which is the start of the rail line, before they could ship it to Lingayen to ship back to Japan or to Manila. This was really a brutal detail, down in the jungle with malaria and amoebic dysentary and beriberi which really took a lot from us. It's really a matter of water retention in your system. You can't get rid of the water because of the diet. The kind of rice we had was the bad kind that doesn't do anything for you. It's BAD for you. The Japanese ate it because they had stuff to go with it. It was supplemented. My legs were like stove pipes. You could stick your thumb down into your flesh an inch and it would just lay there like a big hole. If you cut yourself or got wounded, you didn't bleed much -- it was all water. That's typical beriberi.

These details come and go -- come and go -- and finally they came up and said they needed something like 300 men. They were going to go to Manila. I thought, "Oh boy, that's the place for me," so I volunteered, and at least a dozen fellows I knew, we went to Manila. I don't remember how the devil we got there. I presume we got there by rail. From O'Donnell to San Fernando -- from San Fernando to Manila -- right -- by railroad. We holed up in an old bowling alley that Julian Teodoro had built for his employees. He owned a huge shoe factory, The Angtuby Shoe Factory. He made shoes for the Philipinos, the Americans, whatever. A Jap Sergeant came through there looking around, looking around, and he came up to me -- why he picked on me I'll never understand -- but he made me understand he wanted ten men for a detail. In other

words, you pick out ten men and you be here in the morning! I got a special detail for you." I thought, "Oh boy, being with ten men instead of 200 is a lot better detail than the rest will get." So I picked out the ten best men I could find -- all my buddies. In the meantime Colonel Wickord, who was the commander of what used to be the 194th Tank Battalion -- he was the company commander of the company of National Guard Units out of Maywood, Illinois -- he got wind of it. Colonel Wickord was an overbearing son-of-a-bitch. As a POW he'd betray his own brother. He was a rotten, no-good thief, a crook. I've got absolutely no use for him whatsoever. He was as rotten as they come. He made it through prison camp and was a big wheel -- exploited the fact he was a POW. Apparently nobody blew the whistle on him. And we had another guy who was married to a Japanese woman, and here he was a POW and he was as loyal to the Japanese as he could be. I don't think he lived very long after we got out. Somebody got him! He was a dragged out jerk who threw his weight around.

Back to this detail of ten men -- the next morning Colonel Wickord was there. He was going to volunteer for this detail and he was going to run it. Meanwhile I found out that this Japanese sergeant's name was Nakamura. Colonel Wickord said that he would take care of the men and he would be the captain or honcho or whatever. And Nakamura gave him to understand that Sandy was his number one man and he'd better just stay back. "No officers -- no officers!!" So I think he kind of put Wickord in his place.

We stayed in the bowling alley all the rest of this time. It so happened Nakamura was a sergeant in the construction unit, like the American Seabees. It was our job to scrounge up anything and everything we could that would build an airport, or build a bridge or repair buildings or whatever. And that's all we did for almost a solid year was run all over the city of Manila and about 30 miles north, south, east and west of Manila -- well, you can only go three ways I guess -- scrounging up materials. He (Nakamura) got a crazy, harebrained idea one day that he needed lumber. So he knew a white Russian who had a small boatyard and he had some small tugs that were 18 -- 20 feet long. So we confiscated six of them and went down to the -- I think they called it the Pasig River. On the south end of Manila there is a monstrous lake called Laguna -- Laguna de Lac -- whatever you want to call it -- and they had a tremendous raft of logs. We moved these six tugs up in front of this fool thing and tied them all together. Tied this monstrous raft of logs and went across Laguna Lake. It seems to me it was about 90 miles long and we could only go about one-half mile an hour. It seemed like every other hour one of these things

would break down. A pretty good friend of mine from Presque Isle, Maine, by the name of Garland -- can't think of his first name -- was a pretty good mechanic. Well, I had done quite a bit of work on engines myself. Another guy by the name of Curly Combs from Indiana was a welder -- a real good welder out of ordinance, I believe, so between the three of us I was the so-called captain, Garland was the mechanic and Curly Combs was the welder. We managed to keep these fool things going all the way down to the sawmill.

One day one of the boats had broken down in the back. With the three of us in the front, when anything broke down one of us would jump over and when one of the tugs came along, we'd grab ahold and pull ourselves in and fix it. Unfortunately, Curly got underneath one of the tugs and they swung a monstrous prop -- probably two feet in diameter -- and it started at his hip and just chop, chop, chop, chop all the way down his leg and just laid his leg wide open. My goodness, you could just lay your whole hand in those wounds. I never, never realized how that guy ever overcame that, but by golly the last time I saw him -- and I've never seen or heard from him since -- was when we left Manila, and he was still alive then. We were there for about a year. That was the last time I saw him.

In the meantime we got over to this sawmill and managed to get this raft up to where they could pull the logs out one at a time, take them up into the sawmill, cut them up into boards and we went back a week or so later and had to take all of the tugs back. Then we confiscated a bunch of trucks and went back to the sawmill and loaded all the lumber we had taken down in the form of logs and brought them back to Manila. My goodness, that was the darndest detail I ever got on. Fortunately the Japanese had taken all kinds of food. I will say I had probably the best treatment in a prisoner-of-war camp on that two-week detail getting that raft down to that sawmill and taking the lumber back. They really provided us with food. Not any rest to speak of because we'd just go, go, go, go. But they were right with us. They'd go 12, 16, 18 hours and expect us to follow suit. I suspect that's why they gave us halfway decent food. They had a job to do and wanted it done. This went on for -- oh, I don't know how long. We had different details all over Manila.

I got to know a Philippino family just outside of Manila. I've forgotten their name, but they were real good to us, but Nakamura didn't care because this Philippino did him a lot of favors. Now this Philippino was a little bit on the shady side, confiscating, but they made us welcome in their home and we had dinner with them. Nakamura thought this was just great. But when the Americans started to come in and

drive the Japanese out of Manila, they suspected that this guy was playing both sides of the fence, which he was. Doggone if they didn't cut his head off. Yup! He was part Russian and part Philippino and he married a Philippino woman and they had I guess half a dozen kids. They lived in a typical thatched hut with the bamboo floors. But they were really wonderful people. They were awfully good to us! In fact, one of my friends from Janesville even corresponded with those people after we got back to the states -- the wife, of course, and the children, which to me was very interesting.

As far as the details were concerned with the Manila thing, that was about the extent of it. We just scrounged everything we could for the Japanese that they wanted for their war effort.

Shortly before this detail terminated, I got diphtheria. Oh man!!! I was a sick cookie!!! I went to the Japanese doctor and apparently he knew what I had because he said, "Open your mouth", and I did, and he said, "Na-sa-na! Na-sa-na!" which is "no good" or "oh, no". He gave me an aspirin and said to go to bed. I went back and laid down on the floor and just passed out. I laid there just like a vegetable for about six weeks. I lost all control of my bodily functions -- laid there in my own filth, urine and excrement for six weeks. Prior to my getting diphtheria, Julian Teodoro, the owner of the bowling alley and shoe factory I mentioned, had made arrangements with the Japanese, the guards and the Philippino collaborators you might say, that he and his son and this POW detail should have their picture taken on the steps of this shoe factory. Well, I still have that picture -- the original. It's the same one they used in the book "Death March". I don't know how long before they got the pictures developed but they gave each one of the POWs in that detail one of those pictures. As a result of this diphtheria I couldn't walk, I couldn't see, every time I tried to swallow it would come out my nose. My bodily functions -- I had absolutely no control over any of my bodily functions. I was a mess! I picked up that picture and I couldn't see it. Right then I cried like a baby for half an hour because I couldn't see that picture of my POW friends. How I ever got that picture back with me I'll never know. I still have the original in my possession. I've had copies made, and a negative.

I never really did recover from diphtheria when they loaded our detail on to trucks and headed us back to Camp Cabanatuan -- I think it was #1 -- the largest prisoner-of-war camp on the main island of Luzon. I was in Zero Ward for I don't know how long when word came down from the medical department that anybody who had had diphtheria and was going to be shipped to Japan to have their tonsils out. I asked the doc what he thought and he said, "Well, if that's what they think is best, and I do too, you had better have them out."



1. Mike Dunn (Mikeoo).
2. Althea.
3. Buckner.
4. Peplar.
5. Lollar.
6. Alva Chapman (Chipper).
7. McKnight.
8. Joe Erington.
9. Medic (Goosie).
10. Andrews.
11. Piggot.
12. Forrest Knox (Knocky).
13. Mickalo.
14. Dick Walker.
15. Pappy Steen.
16. Owen Sandmier (Sandy).
17. Garland (GaGa or Gar).
18. Aaron Combs (Curly).
19. Lt. Crosby.
20. Numb Nuts.
21. Son-in-Law.
22. Julian Teodoro.
23. Orderly.
24. Transferred.
25. Colonel's Driver.
26. Nakamura (the Bull).
27. Shit-for-Brains.
28. Mickey the Rat.
29. Carpenter.
30. Long Tall, or Harvard.
31. Kondo.

187

#16 is Sandy; #12 is Sandy's good friend Forrest Knox; #26 is Nakamura, the guard who trusted Sandy; #18 is Aaron Combs, severely injured by a prop; #28 is Mickey the Rat who for 45 years has beaten Sandy repeatedly night after night in nightmares; #31 is Kondo who savagely murdered nine prisoners-of-war.

This camp was located on Rizal Avenue in Manila, P.I.
Taken about January 1, 1943.

So they were doing one or two a night. That was the only time they could operate was when the lights were on. They had a little 60-watt bulb hanging from a cord from the ceiling and I sat there in a chair in front of that light bulb for, oh my gosh, it seemed like an eternity. And the doctor had a needle and gave me a local and he sat there with a knife and started to awhackin' and awhackin' and awhackin' and finally got down to the point where he could use his so-called harpoon. It was like a lasso so he could snare it and pull out the rest of the tonsils that he couldn't cut out because they were in there too deep. Then I went back to Zero Ward in the barracks. In the morning my ration was dry, hard rice. Can you imagine trying to eat dry, hard rice when you had your tonsils out the night before? I just was not able to eat for, I imagine, three or four days before the worst of the soreness got out to where I could swallow without strangling. I finally wore off the effects of this diphtheria and managed to get enough rice and soup or whatever they had to get my strength back and finally went back to the main camp. That may have been a mistake because the first thing you know you're out on the farm or out on the airport where we literally hacked an airport out of nothing with a beat-up old wheelbarrow, a shovel, a hoe and a rake and made a landing strip for airplanes to bring supplies in and out of Cabanatuan. The rest of the prisoners-of-war were put out on a farm where we raised our own vegetables, literally self-sustaining. We couldn't raise rice. They had to bring in the rice. But we raised sweet potatoes. We ate the vines, made soup out of that. I really can't remember anything that we raised outside of the sweet potatoes. All we ever had were sweet potatoes, sweet potato vines and rice. That was about the extent of it. Once or twice a month they'd throw out a few flakes of pork-- not beef because they don't believe in eating beef -- and it was typical of that dried in a doggone prisoner-of-war camp. My weight had dropped to 85 pounds while I had diphtheria.

Fortunately, the latter part of my stay there I got into a Japanese galley as a cook. There was nothing we could steal because they watched us like a hawk because they knew we'd steal anything that wasn't nailed down. They got pretty good rations of food and had these big cauldrons probably six feet across that we would put the rice in because they had hundreds of troops there as guards for this POW camp. They did give us pieces of shim that we used to scrape the crust out of these cauldrons. That was our rations. Scorched rice. I tell you, it was a real treat compared to that plain old boiled rice. It had a little flavor to it anyway. The burned part -- the charcoal -- was probably good for dysentery. This was another thing rampaging through the camp: malaria, dysentery, pellegra, beriberi, dengue fever, and of course body lice. Body lice -- oh my God!! There was nothing we

could do for them except a solution we put on that looked like eggs. It smelled just like rotten eggs. In fact, I suspect it was just that -- rotten eggs. It was the only thing that would give us any relief from those body lice.

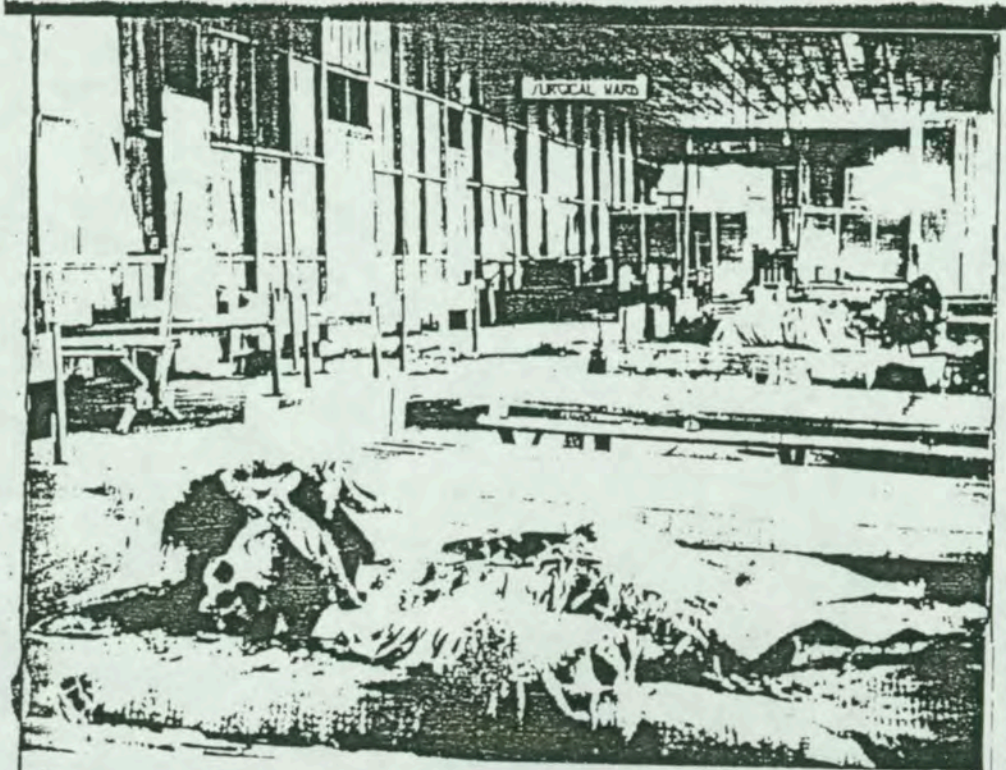
The Japs had some garbage cans in a restricted area. We weren't allowed in there but I'd go in there anyhow. If I'd have been caught, they'd have cut off my head. But I'd scrounge down in that garbage and you'd be surprised how much food I'd come up with. And I'd eat it, maggots and all! When you are starving, you'll eat anything.

Some poor guy found a dead rat, all bloated and probably full or rabies -- rotten! And he started cooking that rat and was going to eat it. Well, the smell was so terrible the rest of us realized what he was doing and stopped him -- took it away from him -- before he could eat it. It would have killed him for sure.

I'm sure you're aware of what honey buckets are. All we had were open slit trenches to serve as latrines, toilets. And it all had to be gotten rid of. They used it for fertilizer on the crops that we ate. Of course that's been going on for years over in Japan and China. We called it "night soil". It's a common fertilizer over there.

For about a year this was pretty common routine. Work on the airport every day. Probably out of a month we had maybe one or two days off. Every other Sunday. Or if the Emperor snorted or sneezed or something like that, we'd get a day off. It was very unpleasant. Hot! Sticky! Cold at night! Hotter than Hades in the daytime! There was a shortage of water. Now that is something!! It was a real art to take a full bath in less than a canteen cup of water. It is a real art and I've done it many, many times. When I think about the kids nowadays standing in the shower for an hour and letting the water just cascade down their bodies, it just makes me sick to think how that water is being wasted. Water is so precious!! I still have a mania -- even with my wife about wasting water -- and food!! My God!! I just can't stand to see food wasted. In fact that's probably why I get so fat because I can't stand to see it wasted, so I eat it. It's a real sore spot with me. My wife and I have our ups and downs with this food wasting.

In the night you could hear it! Someone would be listening at the water spigot for the water to come on. First thing you know some guy with a bamboo pole about four feet long with the chains from the canteens hanging on that would be trying to fill about a dozen canteens. Six or eight on each pole. And he'd sit there an hour to fill up those canteens to take back to the barracks to his buddies. Just about the time he'd get the last one filled, they'd shut the water off. They had very specific times that they would turn the water on but they never let us know when it was.



(Signal Corps Photo from Acme)

This was the surgical ward of the hospital at Davao Penal Colony, on Mindanao, Philippine Islands. In reality it was a charnel house. When American troops entered it, they found here the remains of more than 75 Filipinos and Americans.



U.S. medical corpsmen excavating charred remains of some of the 145 American soldiers and Marines burned alive by the Japanese at the prisoner-of-war camp at Puerto Princesa, Palawan, Philippine Islands.

(Signal Corps Photo from Acme)



Living examples of maltreatment and undernourishment at Japanese hands were these five prisoners liberated by American forces from internment at Santo Tomas University prison camp in Manila.

(Wide World Photo)

(Courtesy of 'Illustrated')

John Sharp of Leicester, England, one of the worst treated of all the prisoners of war to survive. Attempting to escape while working on the Burma-Siam railway, he was captured and for three years two weeks was held in the torture gaol in Singapore, of which twelve months were spent in solitary confinement.



Knights of Bushido by Russell

Knowing the Japanese, at that time, with their equipment, the pump would break down at least once a day and they didn't know how to fix it. So they got some Americans over there to fix it. They had just a little generator with a bare minimum of lights around it -- like a 60-watt bulb every 50 or 60 feet around the perimeter of the camp so the guards could see whatever they could see with a 60-watt bulb. The generator was just as subject to breaking down as the water pump was. So half the nights we were pretty much in the dark. They had this escape thing pretty well down pat. They put us in squads of ten. If one escaped, the other nine were shot. Of course that discouraged a lot of escapes. I know for sure of one occasion down in Palawan, way down in the southern part of the Philippines, where this one "suicide squad" as we called them, was killed. This one poor prisoner-of-war went crazy and went screaming toward the gate. He didn't have a chance. They gunned him down. He'd just gone completely off his rocker. Well, they killed the other nine. In that picture we had taken there at the shoe factory in Manila, in the front row on the right hand side, that Japanese Kondo was the one who killed the other nine Americans. That I never knew until I got back home. Forrest Knox from Janesville National Guard Unit, one of my best friends, told me about it. He also told me that Nakamura, the Sergeant who was in charge of this unit I was on in Manila, was a drug addict. He wasn't all that bad where he got to be a raving maniac but he was on drugs almost every day of the week. Had the Japanese known that I think they would have cut his head off long ago. And he got away with that. Can you imagine that?!

I've had a lot of interesting talks with Knocky (Sgt. Forrest Knox) and if he had lived and you could have had a chance to interview him, it would open your eyes and fill your ears with lots of stories. He had a knack of getting to know just the right things and the right people at the right time so he learned about a lot of things I'd never even heard of. And of course, a lot of it I can't remember.

So we went on going to the farms and building this airport and things were fairly routine as I mentioned before until it came time when the Japanese began worrying about the American invasion of the Philippines. They wanted to get rid of as many Americans as they could because they needed all the manpower they could get over in Japan and China in the steel mills and coal mines, the railroad yards, wherever they could use cheap labor. So they started moving American personnel out of the Philippines. They had a marshalling area. I can't remember the name of the dock but it was one of the largest and best equipped shipping docks in the world, which was out of Manila.

Here they came, shoving all these POWs -- five hundred or a thousand at a time -- putting them down in the holds of these old tramp ships -- Hell Ships is what we called them -- and they shipped us off to Japan. Prior to my having left the Philippines there must have been at least a half-dozen of these Hell Ships that were bombed by our own people -- American bombers -- without them knowing they had American prisoners on board. There were no markings of any kind to let them know these were troop ships with American prisoners on board them. This is how I lost one of the best friends I had at Fort Knox, a fellow by the name of Harvey Riedeman. Whatta guy!! A very promising young man, was a good golfer, socialized real well, had a job in the bank and he just had it made. He went down on one of those ships. He was a strong swimmer, a real sportman, so he managed to get ashore, and he saved several of his friends. But they got him and put him on another ship, and doggone if that one didn't get bombed, too. Well, doggone, he just didn't make it that second time. I lost a lot of friends as a result of that.

We left in, I think it was October, the latter part of October, 1944, we left the Philippines on a ship we called the "Moti Maru". Moti means "wait" in Japanese and it seemed that was all we did was wait. From Manila to Formosa we were loaded down with rock salt. They put planks on top of that rock salt and that's where we lived for two months -- in the hold of this ship. And that, my God, was absolutely the lowest point of my 3½ years as a prisoner-of-war. It was absolutely hell!!! You had to walk up a ladder of about 20 steps to get topside. They had toilets literally hanging over the side of the ship. You had to climb up to use the facilities, whatever they were, and everybody and anybody had amoebic dysentery or something wrong with them. You can imagine what it was like waiting your turn climbing up this ladder with guys up ahead of you sick, either throwing up -- or whatever -- all over you. Then after you got out on the thing and relieved yourself and came back down the ladder you tried to find where you were sleeping, and they were just packed in there like sardines. You'd try to find your way in and someone would hit you because he figured you were trying to take his place or rob him. It was really something! And it was like that for two solid months with just absolutely the barest minimum of food and water. And the damn Japanese were back there taking showers in fresh water and here we were literally dying for just a half ounce of water. By God, I don't know how the hell I ever made that. I really don't understand it!

We got to Formosa and they unloaded that salt and then we went from there empty up to Japan. We got into some pretty

rough water and that doggone ship was like a cork bobbing in the water. Her nose would go down and the stern would go up, and the big old propeller would set there and shake with no water around it and all of a sudden the stern would go down and the nose would go up and away she'd go. This went on for about ten days that it took us from Formosa to, I believe, Mogi, on the northern tip of Kyushu, a big port in Japan, which is where we landed. They took us by ferry to the main island of Honshu.

We were marched from there -- this was in December of 1944 -- with very little clothing which was somewhat suitable for the tropics but not for Japan. My God, about half of those guys just froze on the way to the compound.

They took us by train up to Fukuoka. When we got there, there were about 150 English prisoners from the Singapore area. There were 250 of us Americans together with these 150 Englishmen, making 400 in this compound, living in these ramshackled barracks. No heat! Absolutely no heat!! Nothing but a straw pad like a door mat in the front of your house and every bit as hard, on the bottom with whatever you could find to cover up to keep you warm.

The only heat we had was only for the simple reason that they had kinda like a spa, typical of the Japanese, a big old area full of warm water. When we came out of the mine, we would take off our clothes and jump in there, which would take the chill off you and also the majority of the dirt. Then you jumped in another one next to it that had clean water where you could rinse. That was the only source of heat we had other than these braziers. We'd take all the washings from the coal mine, just like mud, and we'd make these mud balls and burn them. That was the only heat we had. And the barracks was just like outdoors, in the elements. They had no windows or doors -- nothing -- so it sure didn't do much good -- just to warm your hands. There was no way you could put your rice on there to warm it. Oh, no!! Oh, man, no way!! All you could do was warm your hands, your face or your duff. But never, NEVER would they allow you to warm your rice. You couldn't even put a slice of bread on it to halfway toast it. Huh-uh!! That was a no-no!

Two meals a day. You woke up in the morning and they gave you a small piece of bread and about a cup of rice. You could either eat it there or take it to the mines, or eat half of it there and take half to the mines, whatever your choice was. Well, that had to last you anywhere from 12 to 18 hours, while working in the coal mine, in the rock, drilling holes, or in the coal loading those cars and pushing them out by hand. This would go on for days and days and days -- weeks on end -- without even a day off!! I can understand how some of these guys died over there because it was just sheer torture. It was hell! There was just no rest!! And the Japanese were

just as bad. They would drive themselves like they were crazy and, of course, they expected us to do the same thing but on about one-tenth the rations that they had. They had all they wanted to eat. They had to pour it out because they couldn't eat it all.

We lived approximately one mile from the mine. There was a downhill grade all the way to the mine. Going there in the morning when you were halfway fresh was OK. But then coming out of that mine and having to walk up that long, old hill after you had to work 12 to 18 hours -- boy, I tell you, by the time you reached the barracks you were ready to just about drop dead. By the same token they had a long ramp going from the mouth of the mine into the bowels of the earth. When we went down in the morning we had a tram that would give us a ride down. But coming out at night, the thing was always broken down so we had to walk all the way up that long incline to the top of the mine. Getting out of there, then having to go up this other mile to the camp, it was comparable to walking about 15 miles on level ground because it was uphill all the way.

It was really rough in the mine. Of course there was no heat down there -- always about 50° so you needed some kind of protection against the elements. There was dripping water all over the place. No drainage. No ventilation to speak of. Unfortunately I got into the pneumatic drill, drilling into the wall of the face of the tunnel, to create a tunnel in the veins of the coal so we could get at it. This was my job for a solid year, working with a doggone air hammer on the face of that granite or whatever it was. It was really hard. I don't know what the devil kind of stone it was, but it was really hard, and it took a lot of drilling to get through that. We'd drill all day long and the last thing we'd do would dynamite. The only time we got to sit down was when the Japanese would set all the dynamite. Then they moved us back 50 to 100 yards and then blow that face. The face of the tunnel was approximately 18 feet wide and 8 to 10 feet high. The blast would blow out 6 to 8 feet of rock. Well, the shift that came on after we left, it was their job to clean up that mess that we made. By the time we got back the next morning, they had that mess cleaned up and we would start all over drilling new holes and blasting out more rock. As I said, this went on for about a year.

Along with this very monotonous camp life, the Japanese thought we should be taught the rigamarole they were taught as soldiers, so we were taught close order drill. We had to learn the commands: "magi nari" is right face, and "troot skay" (phonetic spelling) or "SKAAAAYY" is attention, and of course column left, column right, fast march, to the rear

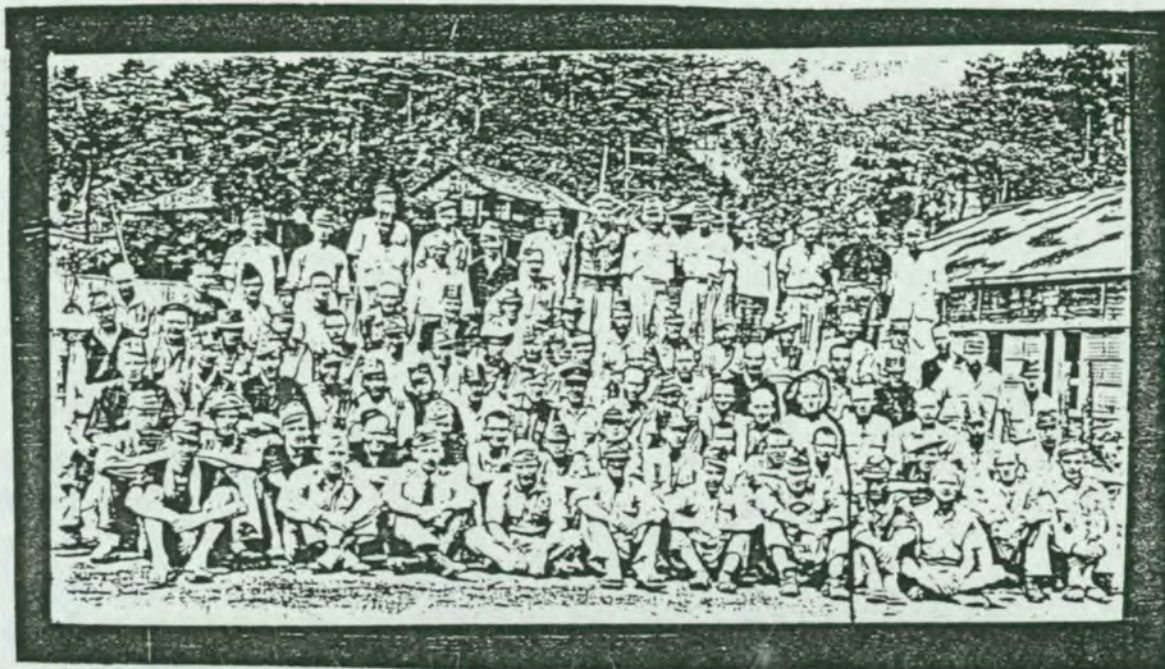
march, and all this stuff that went with it. This happened about three days a week that we had close order drill along with our tenko, which is roll call or reveille. This was regular as clockwork -- tenko -- always counting noses. They just didn't trust anybody. They were downright mean if you couldn't learn their language. They weren't about to learn ours. We had to learn theirs. They inflicted punishment upon us for just no reason at all. If you were too doggone tired to understand a signal or a command and you made a mistake, the first thing you know they would just belt you in the head, usually with sumurai swords, which was very effective.

We were out there one day and this one particular guy was so doggone sick anyway, I think his mind was starting to go. Well, he started taking off and the Japanese thought he was trying to escape. All he was trying to do was to kill himself. He ran just as hard as he could and ran up against a stone wall and just knocked himself flat. He kind of came to and he looked back and he started to run again and ran into that stone wall again. This time he knocked himself out. The Japanese kicked the hell out of him trying to get him up and on his feet but he was out like a light. But we managed to get him and carry him back to the barracks and I don't know whatever happened to that poor guy. Something just clicked in his mind and he went off his rocker. It was that simple!

The usual stockade was there where they took you for solitary confinement. Not necessarily all the solitary confinement cases, but you were put in jail, literally, for any kind of infraction. Big deal!!

Our wages was one yen per month. This was from the goodness of the emperor. And at that time a yen was equivalent to about ten cents American. It wouldn't buy anything. It wouldn't even buy a cigarette, which is another thing. We had guys in camp who literally starved themselves to death for a lousy cigarette. They'd give their food away for a cigarette. We called them "twofers" -- you give me one today and I'll give you back two if and when we get any cigarettes. You know what ten yen would buy -- in the first place there were no cigarettes. You could use tobacco and roll them using the pages out of a New Testament. I will say New Testament pages made good cigarette paper. I can't imagine how many New Testaments -- the pages were about 4 inches high -- were burned. Mine had long since been burned up in cigarettes. It seems so silly now, but the very basic, simplest needs of life were just like treasures. Food and clothing are absolutely a must!! When you don't have those two basic essentials for life, I tell you, things are rough.

POW CAMP LOCATED AT FUKUOKA, JAPAN



↓
Sandy

The tall man partially hidden in the last row, third from left, we believe is John Benson, a mutual friend of Sandy and the author. These are John's words: "We worked every day in the Philippines - up early - calisthenics - double time to the field - work all day long regardless of the weather - heat was killing; rain - double time back - calisthenics - and then not permitted to sit down or even to lean against the wall upon penalty of death until a bowl of rice was given about one and a half hours later. The Philippino people would line the streets as we'd double-time back and secretly give us the V-for victory sign. If they were caught, they were killed. I saw small children who would see the victory sign and give it and be seen by the Japs. I saw them taken to the airfield and tied to posts. I saw the Japs cut their hair with bayonets, burn them with cigarettes, cut, stab, torture them in any way imagineable and then behead them, or bayonet them, or shoot them. I mean these were small children who didn't even know what they were doing -- some as young as two or three years of age."

And it was cold over there. Japan is not like northern Wisconsin where I lived, but it's still cold. It just took an awful lot out of the men. It really did! But the one blessing we had was this bath, like a sauna, I mentioned before, made out of concrete about 10 or 12 feet square and about 3 feet deep in which warm water, almost hot, was poured and in which we could take a bath. The first thing we'd do when we came from the mine was take off our clothes and dive into this sauna. You can imagine what this was like after 500 men coming out of working in a coal mine used it. It was almost like soup and just as black as a scuttle of coal. Fortunately they had a smaller one where we could go and rinse off. But this first one -- oh my gosh -- I think if it wasn't for the fact it was heated, I don't know how many people would have died from disease transmitted from 500 guys taking a bath in that water. Oh boy! We would come out of that mine absolutely black. I was fortunate. Well, I wouldn't say fortunate. I worked in that rock and you get silicosis -- that stuff that gets in your lungs. Well, coal will do that to your lungs eventually, too, but that rock will do it about ten times quicker. Rock dust -- your body just can't absorb it. I worked in that a solid year with no protection whatsoever. I did have a little piece of GI wool blanket that I rigged up and put over my mouth, and about every five minutes I'd take the thing off and shake the dust out of it and put it back on. I had a couple of strings tied on it. It was like three inches square -- barely enough to cover my nose and my mouth. When I'd take it off it was absolutely white on the outside -- this rock dust that I probably would have inhaled if it hadn't been for that little piece of blanket filter.

After we got out of that so-called sauna and got back to our barracks and got our clothes on, it was dinner time. The kitchen was like a tent with absolutely no heat. We had these braziers -- about 18 inches in diameter and maybe two feet high. We'd take the coal that was washed at the mine and make like a mud. We'd take that mud and make like a snowball and put them into these braziers. After a time it would dry the moisture out and it would burn like charcoal. It would put out a tremendous amount of heat. You can imagine what good a half dozen of those would do in a building that was about 40 feet wide and 60 to 80 feet long -- with no windows. You'd just warm your hands and freeze your back, or try to warm your back while freezing your front. They wouldn't let you cook on it. Absolutely not!

We did have a bakery that was run by the English. They were the only ones that knew how. They wouldn't let the Americans in. They made loaves of bread about 10 inches long and about 4 inches square. And these loaves were cut into four pieces and this was part of your 24-hour ration -- a piece of bread

along with your cup of rice. In the evening when we came back they had two great big -- about 50 gallon drums -- full of watery soup. You might just as well have drank a glass of water, but at least it had some flavor and it washed down the rice they gave you and the piece of bread you might have saved from morning. The rations there were worse than we had in the Philippines. Fortunately in the Philippines we raised the food we'd eat except for the rice. Of course we had no tea, coffee, sugar, nothing. Sweet potatoes and the vines and the rice and once in a great while some rotten fish or caribou -- water buffalo. That was the extent of the meat. Life in Japan was very similar to Cabanatuan because it was a day by day monotonous routine that just about drove a man crazy. It was plain hell!! It sure was!!!

My friends Chipper and Bushaw, and a guy by the name of Peterson were in the same camp together, and a fellow by the name of Waggoner, a real sharp guy, about 6'4" and about 240 pounds -- a real sharp guy -- all Navy and proud of the fact he was Navy. He just would not take orders from Japanese. No way! He was used to giving orders in the Navy. Well, the Japs really put it to him -- beat him -- put him in solitary, then drag him out and beat him some more and throw him back in solitary. They finally killed him. He died as a result of his beatings. Well, the day they opened those gates of the camp when the Red Cross arrived, those guys got ahold of that camp commander and they literally just tore that guy apart -- just mutilated him. Just downright cold-blooded murder. And Chipper told me, "I don't know when I ever got so much satisfaction as I did from seeing that guy treated like he'd treated so many of us. That commander was directly responsible for Waggoner's death. He'd take the guards down there to bring him out, and stand there and watch them beat the hell out of him, and then throw him back into solitary, which was like -- God only knows, but I can imagine. When you hear of things like that you absolutely lose all faith in those people. I wouldn't trust them in any way -- right now -- no way -- none of them!! It's born in them, those yellow bastards, and they'll never outlive it. They think they're civilized but they're still a bunch of savages! They really are! If it hadn't been for that war, they'd still be back in medieval times, like they were before MacArthur!

(NOTE: As Sandy related the above incident, he became more and more tense. The anger and fury -- downright fury -- were very obvious in his very controlled voice.)

In my opinion any POW who meted out punishment to those inhuman murderers when the war ended deserves a medal.

The lowest point of my physical condition was when I was down to 85 pounds. Right now I weigh 210. In service I weighed about 160 to 170 pounds, so I lost about half of my weight.

How did I survive? I don't know. I just don't know!

In the seven months that elapsed after Sandy related the forgoing, he was able to recall a few more incidents which follow:

"I was watching this movie one night on TV -- kind of a documentary called 'Back to Bataan' and by gosh, there at the end of the picture was Kenny Mize marching along as a POW. I'll never forget that because he was a bull 'shipper' from way back. I mean, I'd tell him, 'Kenny, if you did all the things you told us you did, you'd have to be 150 years old.' He was in his early 30's then. Kenny, Dudley Sheahan and Bill Price from Terra Haute, Indiana, and a fellow by the name of Piggett, those guys were together. Mize told me when the Japs started invading Corregidor, the only weapons they had were little 37 field pieces on a tripod and the fool thing was too light to go down far enough in the front to fire at the Japs, so Sheahan picked the fool thing up, grab the lanyard in his teeth, jerk it and fire -- drop it down -- reload -- pick it up again and grab that rope, the lanyard, in his teeth and jerk it and fire again. Well, the enemy was just coming in waves and you'd think a guy like that standing up firing that thing with his teeth and doing the damage he did, that they'd get him, but how he lived through that I don't know. He was something else. Rough and tough as they come. Old Dudley!

"Captain Wright was our first casualty. In the first part of the war we were retreating down this main road and we found out the Japanese had a habit of doing what the Americans do -- instead of walking down the middle of the road you walk down the ditches. Well, the Japanese did that with their tanks and laid land mines. Well, we'd never been trained in land mines -- I didn't even know what the fool things were. So Captain Wright said, 'Sergeant, get the men back. This mine doesn't look right and may go off.' He tried to release it and bingo -- it literally blew him apart. He was made Captain prior to coming from Wisconsin to Ft. Knox. He was in our original group and made Company Commander maybe a year, give or take, prior to being inducted into federal service. He was a home-town boy but not well liked because he was a real gung-ho type of guy and I'm glad for it as we had the best company in the whole battalion -- The First Provisional Tank Group -- out of ten companies. Our company had the best ratings, the best basketball team, the best softball team, the best marching unit, the best scores in weapons, tank driving, Thanks to him. He expected us to be smart and we did it. He was killed in the first two or three weeks of the war.

"Another guy, Captain Brunner took over when Captain Wright was killed, and Brunner died, too. Then the surrender came and we had no commander whatsoever. I tell you, it was a low blow when we found out our skipper got killed. It really lowered morale. We never had that kind of leadership after that. When we were in those tanks and we were either attacking, or whatever, he was right up in that lead tank, you bet your life, he was right there yelling, 'Come on you guys, let's get going. You go that way, and you go that way.' He was a real leader! Unfortunately he wasn't well liked because he was that way and any disciplinarian is not well liked. Like in the Marine Corps, the Drill Instructor -- they hate those guys with a flame of passion.

Sandy is a camera buff. He has his camera with him almost constantly. He had one during the battle of the Philippines and tells:

"I got rid of the camera after the surrender. I had pictures that the Japanese would have cut my head off had they found them. I took battle pictures -- tank battles -- infantry battles -- air battles -- whatever. I knew that these pictures I had taken were absolutely a no-no for the Japs. I took whatever I could find that would protect them -- tarpaper, bags, rolls, anything I could find, and dug a hole by a great big old tree about two feet deep and buried that film in it. Who knows if they are still there -- I have no idea. This was at kilometer post 208 which is on the west side of Bataan. I'll never forget that! Kilometer post 208! Whoopee!

"Air Raid" was the name we gave this Japanese guard. He got this name for the simple reason that if things didn't go just right he'd just blow up. He had a short fuse. The first thing he'd do is just start beating on people -- just to relieve his frustration.

It was Air Raid who nailed me with that pick handle. Boy, that really decked me! We were getting ready to prepare potatoes for planting. You had to have one or two eyes per section. I'd done this for about a week but Air Raid didn't happen to be there. So I was sitting there biding my time. 'Oooooo -- oooooo,' he said. I looked up and he said words to the effect, 'Do you understand how to do this?' I said, 'Yes' and he said, 'Oh, a smart ass, huh!' and he came over and belted me one in the head with that pick handle because I guess that he thought I was saying I knew more about planting potatoes than he did. He was satisfied! He knocked me down! Knocked me out! I had a concussion but what can I do about it? I was in camp but was in the hospital for about ten days or so. Hospital in Cabanatuan means you lay there on half rations until you die or recover enough to leave.

But you know what happened to Air Raid? He went to town

and got mixed up with the wrong kind of woman and got VD. Had the Japanese found out they would have axed him. They didn't mess around. How the hell we came up with it, I don't know but we managed to get some sulfanilamide. We got that guy fixed up and he did a turn about. A different man -- just like a minister. That real hell-raising S.O.B. just turned completely around. Well, that was a big favor for us, and it sure was for him, too. He would have gotten his had they found out he had gonorrhoea. I guess he realized what it could be like to be on the other end of things. And he stayed there at Cabanatuan the entire 2½ years we were there.

We lived off what we could grow in Cabanatuan. We grew pursley -- a common ordinary weed that we'd make soup out of. We used to feed that to the chickens at home. We'd harvest the potato vines with whatever slop we could find and make a gruel -- with rotten fish heads if we could get any. And we grew these big dikons or digons -- I don't know which -- a big radish that was full of water.

"The Japanese would build this fool lake -- shows you what kind of engineers they were -- built this lake lower than the surrounding area to catch rainwater. When it rained, instead of going down the irrigation canals, we would have to take water from one side with a bucket and put it over on the other side. And boy, when you stand bent over on your head all day long with that bucket and some damn Japanese up there with a rifle threatening every time you try to straighten up to relieve the strain in your back -- I hated that detail.

Up in Japan when I had that galley detail, we had to get up about 3:00 in the morning and the guards would escort us to the galley -- real early -- and this was our opportunity for we "so-called cooks" to get our work done and grab a couple winks of sleep. In the meantime, it was also a chance for someone to scrounge rice or sugar or whatever they could find and put it in a sack, run across the street and throw it over the fence to the barracks where someone would be waiting for it. (This galley was for the Japanese guards -- not the POWs and to be caught stealing food was death.) This one particular morning I told Eddie DeGroot, "Get your fanny up across from the galley and I'll see if I can scrounge a sack of sugar." Well, we got all our work done and the guard sacked out in the storeroom on top the sacks of rice and I got ahold of about five pounds of sugar and beat it across to the fence to where Eddie was waiting on the other side. I no sooner got it thrown across the fence when I heard what I thought was a guard coming down the road with these hobnailed boots. I swore up and down 'cause if that was a guard, my name is mud because they would have cut my head off right then if I'd been caught stealing rations of any kind. It turned out to be one of our guys who was late for

work. Boy, I never had such a sense of satisfaction in my life that I got away with it, but by the same token, I was never so scared in all my life either. Even during the war, in actual combat, I never had such a scare as that.

"I think the worst detail we had was at Cabanatuan. They were building some kind of an airstrip up there probably for light planes, but I don't know. And this was literally slave labor. We had some kind of beat up heavy duty hoe, and maybe some axes and shovels and some real beat up wheelbarrows you could barely push. We had to level this best we could and extend it over the high spots and move to the low spots -- all by hand. All done just like the old Chinese slave labors of years and years ago. Actually coolie labor. Half of us would go to the farm and half here. We'd work a day or a week and then go work on the farm. One was as bad as the other although I think the airstrip was a little worse because we were right out in the open. Of course the farm was, too, but at least you could steal a little something once in awhile to eat -- but nothing to eat at this airstrip but dirt and rocks -- that's all there was.

"After we were released from POW camp and coming home on a hospital ship, this nurse was asking around all the troops she could talk to if anyone knew Lt. Reed. We were going through this typhoon and the word got to me. I ran across her one day and asked, 'I understand you're looking for information on Lt. Reed.' She said, 'Yes.' Well, I was not with him but was in the same company with him and I knew what happened to him. And my God, you know me -- I'm outspoken, always manage to say the wrong thing at the wrong time, but I did manage to tell her the complete story. There was some kind of a delaying defense action in these stinking rice paddies. It was in the dry season. You could run across these paddies like you do a football field. They attacked with some kind of knee mortars or conventional mortars, I don't know. But he was on top of his tank trying to get all his men in and doggone, he was the last one in when that mortar lit on top. Blew his legs off to the knees. There was just no time to do anything. He just bled to death. She was a registered nurse and lives in Louisiana, and I had to tell her this. They had planned to marry. He was a nice guy. Going overseas between Hawaii and the Philippines took two weeks. He was good enough that he studied up on the Philippines and gave us that information topside and we'd sit and listen to this guy talking. It was very helpful and informative. I really enjoyed it. He was the only guy I know of who tried to help the morale of the troops because it wasn't good. Everybody was seasick.



▲ Santo Tomas prison camp internees Lee Rogers and John Todd.



▲ 100 days as POW - 100 lb. weight loss.



▲ POWs at Cabanatuan Camp 3 beaten with club.



▲ American POWs about to embark on a Japanese hellship from Bilibid.



▲ An American POW suffering from dry beri-beri being treated in Bilibid.

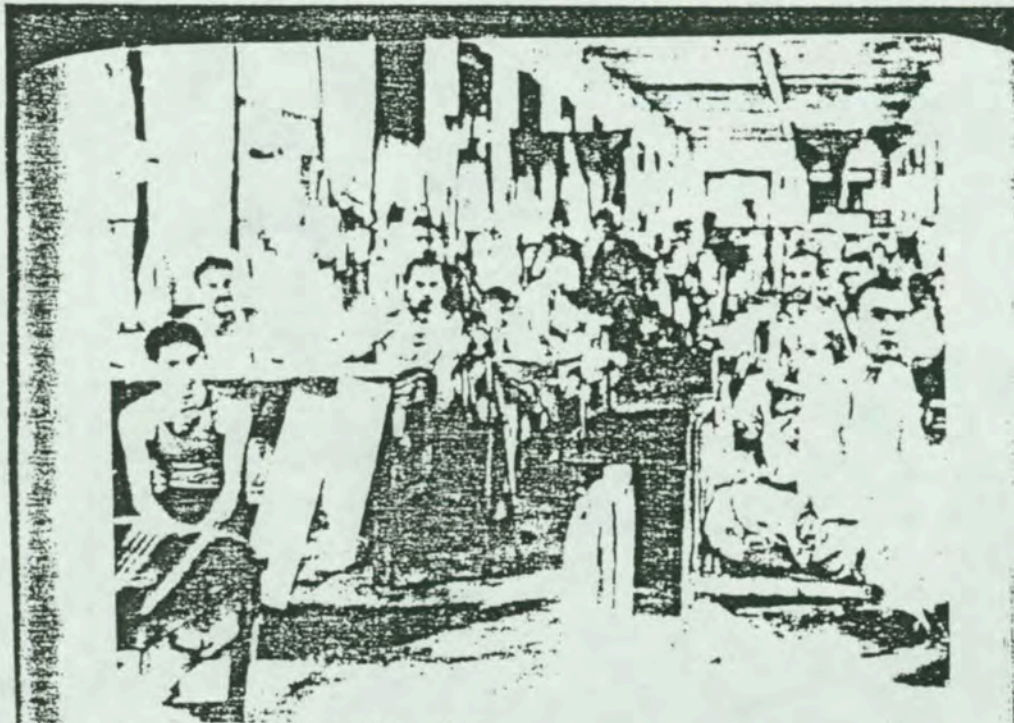


▲ Bilibid POW hospital ward, Philippine Islands.



▲ Bataan Death March, May 1942.

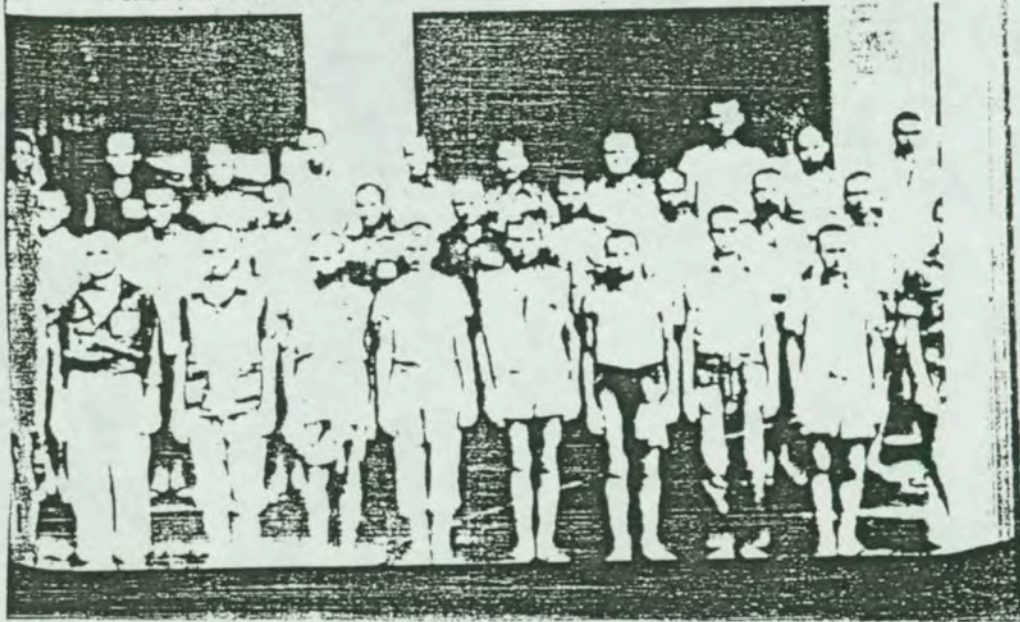
Photos from AMEX-POW Bulletin



The hospital ward in Bilibid Prison, Manila.

DEATH MARCH by Knox

A detail of American POWs in the Philippines





Pfc. Michael McMullen, Omine Machi (coal mine), Japan.



Pfc. William Wallace, in worn Japanese Army overcoat, Niigata, Japan, Winter 1944-45. "I had amebic dysentery. . . . The Japs put me in isolation."



Pfc. Andrew Aquila, Fukuoka Camp No. 3 (steel mill), Tobata, Japan.



Pfc. Roy Diaz, Yokkaichi (copper smelter), Japan, June 1945. "I got the bulk of the log on my back. Hell, I think, I'm going to be paralyzed."



Dying of beriberi, Bilibid Prison Hospital.

DEATH MARCH/Knox

CHAPTER III
DEATH MARCH QUOTES

III DEATH MARCH QUOTES

Some of the men captured with Sandy are quoted in the book The Death March by Donald Knox. Sandy has requested I include some of that information. It follows here:

"I was sitting in this enclosure just numb by this time from heat, from the lack of food, and from the lack of water. We're all sitting down in shit, because people had dysentery and there was no place for them to go. There was one water spigot for thousands of guys. If there was any shoving or pushing in the water lines, the guards would come over and beat you. One of the guys from our Headquarters Company got four inches of bayonet in his ass, and he didn't do the shoving. A Filipino did something, but our guy got picked out. He started to run but slipped and fell. A guard lunged at him with his bayonet. Then they dragged him over to a slit trench full of shit and kicked him in. This guy's arm kept coming out of the trench and the Japs kept pushing him back. If they didn't kill him with their bayonets, they made him drown in shit." Cpl. William Hauser, 192d Tank Battalion.

"...I saw the Japs had a big hole dug across the road and they were throwing people in. Whoever couldn't get up off the bodega's floor was being carried out and thrown in the ditch. Some would start to crawl out and the Japs would knock them on the head and throw them back in. Then they filled the hole -- alive or dead, it didn't matter any." Pvt. Leon Beck, Antitank Company, 31st Infantry.

Transportation at times by boxcar is described: "The boxcars sat in the tropical sun with the doors closed. ...The heat from inside hit us in the face. ...Into the oven we went and protest be damned, the doors were closed. The hours that followed are almost indescribable. Men fainting with no place to fall. Those with dysentery had no control of themselves. As the car swayed, the urine, the sweat, and the vomit rolled three inches deep back and forth around and in our shoes." Cpt. Hubert Gater, 200th Coast Artillery (AA).

"A Japanese officer...said that Caucasians had been enemies of the Orientals for 100 years and would always be enemies. He said these things real harsh. You might say, hysterical." 1st Sgt. Houston Turner.

"I remember when I first arrived at O'Donnell, General King telling some of the fellows ...'You men remember this. You did not surrender. You were surrendered. You had no alternative but to obey my order.'" Pfc Wilburn Snyder.

"The further we went into captivity, the worse it became. It gets to the place where it's unbelievable to the imagination of a person who was not there. You will eventually say, 'Well, you could not possibly have endured the inhumane treatment that you were given and still survive.' But, I learned the human body can suffer nearly everything and still survive." Pvc William Wallace.

"Each man on this picture has a story. ... Owen Sandmire, sergeant out of A Company. This man was friends with the Bull and was the real boss of our detail. ... Sandmire's authority superseded any American officer we had. If a man decided he didn't like our group, Sandmire could get him a transfer. ... (How they met was) a Jap gunso came to the front door of this temporary prison stockade, and said he wanted ten drivers. By sheer chance the man he asked whether he could drive, pretending he was turning a steering wheel, was Owen Sandmire. Sandy, as everyone called him, had a boundless amount of enthusiasm. It was an odd thing, but that little Jap and this big prisoner became friends almost immediately. So Sandy agreed to supply ten drivers." Sgt. Forrest Knox.

"I thought I heard someone call my name. It wasn't until the third time that I found the man. He said, 'Mac, don't you know me?' I said, 'No. Who are you?' I hadn't any idea. Then he told me. The last time I'd seen him he weighed over 200 pounds. Now he weighed closer to 100. He was matted all over with feces." Pfc Michael McMullen.

"Everyone looked the same. That thin, everyone lost their facial characteristics. It was like watching a horror movie. Guys were like walking zombies. Skeletons walking towards you with skin hanging on the bones. You could hide your hand behind a guy's shoulder blades, they were sticking out that far. It was almost impossible to believe. Heads looked like skulls. Then there was the color -- yellow, white, grey. Their eyes were just yellow. It was enough to make you want to lie down and die. ... There was just too much reality at one time." Cpl. William Garleb.

"...they were burying 300 a month." 2d Lt. Hadley Watson.

"How do I describe a packed, hot, filthy, stinking ship's hold that turned slowly into a mad house? We called them 'Hell Ships'. ...As a guy goes crazy he starts to scream -- not like a woman, more like the howl of a dog. We were locked in there solid, wall to wall. Tight, so you couldn't put your feet between people when you tried to walk. I don't know how to describe heat, there was no way we measured temperature. We were all practically naked by that time because we had taken off everything in order to cut down on the heat. It must have been 120 or 125 degrees in that hold. The Jap's favorite trick was to cut off our water. ...When they cut it off, guys started going crazy. ...I walked across that hold, stepping on people, to where the officers were. 'What are you going to do?' He wouldn't answer me. I knew he was conscious 'cause his eyes were open. I grabbed him and shook him, 'What are we going to do?' The guy couldn't talk. I looked around. They were all the same -- zombies. ... I began talking to a friend of mine whose name was Garland. ...He asked me to make sure his wedding ring got back to his wife. 'I got it hid here in the binding of this Bible.' I told him sure I would, but that if he hung on, by morning they've got to give us water. ... He said, 'Oh, shit, Knocky, it just isn't worth it.' He was dead by morning. The ability to survive is mostly mental." Sgt. Forrest Knox.

"There was madness. Claustrophobia and total darkness. There was the heat. The desperate need for air. The temperature must have been near 120 degrees. There was thirst. They sat there in that oven in their own sweat. When all the liquid was gone, men became desperate. They went mad. Some drank urine. Some turned vampire. They tried to drink the blood of the sick men who couldn't resist. Men were murdered on that ship." Capt. Marion Lawton.

"Many died of suffocation. Some were murdered by Jap guards as some of the prisoners tried to crawl out onto the deck." Capt. Marion Lawton.

"For the men captured on Bataan, 1945 began their fourth year of chronic starvation. More important than their physical deterioration, the treatment they received in Japan began to work on the minds and spirits of the prisoners. The threads which precariously laced this captive community together began to unravel. Unable to prevail, the human spirit now endured and hoped only to survive. Under the Japanese, life had always been flint hard. Now, in Japan, it became more and more difficult, and by the summer of 1945 it verged on the impossible." Donald Knox.

"We cleaned the villagers out of their dogs. I'd eaten nearly everything else -- cats, rats, snakes, monkeys. To stay alive, mister, a man will do almost any damn thing." Cpl Ishmael Cox.

"I passed out. That was the most wonderful feeling I can remember in prison camp. ... I thought: Death can't be that bad if it feels like this. What a wonderful feeling it was to pass out." Pfc John Falconer

"One time I had one of the local Japanese doctors go on sick call with me. Everyone had the same story, diarrhea. ... We found that just five grains of compressed Japanese brewer's yeast, called ebios, would be enough vitamin B to turn things around. Finally this Japanese doctor said to me, "Are you fortune-telling, doctor?" "What do you mean?" "Don't you examine them?" he asked. I said, "No need. They're all alike."

"He (Japanese guard) was absolutely the most sadistic man I ever met. He used his saber as a club sometimes with, sometimes without the scabbard." Pfc Jack Brady.

"I don't know if you've seen people in pain, I mean seen pain written all over someone. Blood running out their nose and mouth and ears. That's the way it was." Cpl Ishmael Cox

"During our first two months in Japan, several prisoners underwent surgery in the mine hospital. These operations were done either without anesthesia or with very weak local anesthesia, and the patients were returned to us in rather severe shock." Capt. Thomas Hewlett, M.D.

"The Japanese commander called us into the compound and told us that if the war did not end by October, 1945, three-quarters of the Japanese population would die. There was no doubt in any of our minds that we would be in that three-quarters."
J. J. Carter.

"They had cut down on food allowance so much we figured that if we weren't home by Christmas of '45, we would simply fade away." Pfc Jack Brady.

"(After we were liberated) finally we were taken to the harbor where we boarded the hospital ship Marigold. We had all our clothes thrown away and then they dusted us. We needed it. Afterwards, I was called into a small room where an American officer, he might have been a doctor, questioned me. He asked what kind of work we'd done in camp and what our rations were. I began to tell him and he interrupted me. 'I'm not interested about back yonder, what were you eating the last few months?' I told him. 'How many hours did you work?' I told him. He said, 'Now before we go any further, let's understand, I don't want to hear war stories. We're after information. I have sense enough to know you can't work those hours on the food you say you were given and live.'

'Well, let me tell you something,' I said. 'You're going to hear a lot of things that you won't believe. I don't need war stories either. I have my own -- all I want. But what I'm telling you is facts. You don't sit there and call me and the other liars. Let me warn you about something. You better be awful careful. Some men here are not all together. They've been beat and starved and have had to live in their own excrement. They're not going to let you sit there and call them liars. They're not going to warn you, but they're going to try and kill you.' He shouted, 'Let me stop you right there. You're talking to an American officer and that kind of talk could get you court-martialed.' I laughed right in his face: "Would you please tell me what you, as an officer, or this whole Army could do, that hasn't been done to me in the last 42 months?" He said, 'Get out of here. Just get out.'" J. J. Carter.

"I hold my country responsible for being uneducated as to the type of people the Japanese are. I hold them responsible for anything they do for those people 'cause they're not human. You give them the same chance today and they'd treat us the same way again. Anyone who buys a Japanese automobile is as un-American as a traitor." Pfc Victor Lear.

"(My wife encouraged me to attend a reunion of Bataan and Corregidor survivors. I reluctantly agreed.) When I got there the experience hit me immediately. It was so important to see people who had gone through what I'd been through, who had turned out to be decent and proud human beings, people I was glad to see. I just felt a brotherhood and a love I didn't know existed."
Capt. Marion Lawton.

"Company A of the 192nd Tank Battalion was a Wisconsin National Guard unit formed in Janesville, a small farming community a half-hour drive from Madison. After the war Janesville put on its Corn Exchange Building a Memorial to The Dead and Living Who Fought at Bataan. The plaque lists the 99 men of Company A who went off to the Philippines in 1941. As is the way in rural towns, these men were either related to each other by blood or marriage, had gone to school with each other, dated each others' sisters, shopped in their fathers' stores, played ball together on the town team. Sixty-five of these men died in service." Footnote, p. 472 Death March. Today, in 1987, only 12 survive. Owen "Sandy" Sandmire is one of those 12.

"You know, when we got home there wasn't a damn thing done for anybody. In my case they asked me if I wanted to apply for disability. I said I certainly do. After I reenlisted in '46 the VA came through with 50 percent disability, temporary, based on the sicknesses I had -- malaria, dysentery, scurvy, and all the rest of the junk. Some of the fellers didn't do that. They just got home, got discharged, and said, 'good-bye'. Today they're hurting bad. I mean, these guys are sick. When we got back, we weren't given any real counseling of any type. A lot of guys needed psychiatric help. They needed to be reindoctrinated or debriefed, something to ease them back into the mainstream of America. The guys have problems. I can't sleep at night. My feet burn. They drive me crazy. I got hit by a rifle butt back here on my shoulder. My whole neck is sore up to my ears. Sometimes I pop aspirin or Tylenol all day long. Don't do a damn bit of good. We go to the VA and they won't do a damn thing for us. That's what gets me right in the pit of the stomach. They tell us that we have to prove our ailments are service-connected. Why should we have to prove it? The records are missing, if there ever were any. Think the Japs kept records of the beatings given us in Cabanatuan? Goddam it, we were there! Just being there is enough! To try to prove something to some quack American doctor with the AMA saying, 'We don't understand anything about malnutrition. We've never seen what you have. We don't believe you.' How in hell would they know -- they weren't there and they don't even try and find out. If we get ten minutes with one of these doctors, any damn doctor, we're lucky." Pfc Robert Brown.

"When I got back to the States I still had five or six stitces in the top of my head. For no reason a Japanese civilian threw a large chunk of coal at me. It knocked me cuckoo and cracked my skull. A Limey doctor and Navy corpsman stitched it up. The scar is still there. Although I mention it every time I go, no VA doctor has ever looked at my head. I draw 10 percent disability (1979). I know of men who never left the States who are drawing 100 percent disability. This is one of the things which has made me angry with the VA -- their inconsistency in the way they treat people. But you don't want to hear about that." Pfc William Wallace.

"Nightmares - I climbed the wall ... was drenched ... screaming. Everybody who was a POW of the Japanese goes through this."
Staff Sgt. Harold Feiner.

"I felt rotten all the time. I took the hookworm cure ten times. Because the treatment was worse than the worms, everyone else called it quits. Results of every exam were the same. I was perfect. I complained about my eyes. Got another eye test. Perfect. Only one problem -- I couldn't read the menu posted in the mess hall. When I had a cold and blew my nose, I could blow air through my left ear drum. Got it busted when a Jap slapped me around. I kept asking, 'What did you say?' The medics got exasperated: 'What the hell's the matter? You deaf?' Another ear exam. Must have had a dozen doctors look at it. Nope -- perfect again. ... sleep walk at night ... hallucinations ... walk in my sleep, standing, shivering, not knowing where I was. No one helped. I felt utterly trapped. It was the toughest battle I fought and I fought it alone.

The survivors of Company A, 192d Tank Battalion finally made it home to Janesville.

"Chipper: ...Jap tried to part his skull with a gun butt. Rest of his life he had a tender spot on the back of his head and terrible headaches. ... VA said he developed all his medical problems after he came home. There were no records, medical or otherwise. (They said) problems were not service-connected and he couldn't prove anything. He died of a stroke.

"Wes: Could write a complete medical book on what happened to him overseas. He is blind in one eye and deaf. Diabetes. Leg is dead and walks with a cane. VA gave him 40 percent disability.

"Red: Mother nature cured him of beriberi. He's been dead from the knees down since 1944. He can't see and can't feel the ground. He falls down a lot. People always say, 'Red's drunk again.' He falls when he's sober, too. The VA says no connection with his being starved at Cabanatuan.

"Bud: Alcoholic, divorced. Has cancer. Doctors said he'd die two years ago. He was a good man when we needed one. Being a survivor means you never quit. So he hangs on.

"Boyd: My tank driver. Died of a stroke the first year home. I always suspected schistosomiasis, but stateside doctors never heard of it -- and I'm not entitled to a guess.

"Orvis: Wound up in Mukden. Came home skinny as a rat. When discharged, he had an X-ray that proved he didn't have TB but they got live germs on a spit test. Finally found it with oblique X-rays - hidden by collar bone and shoulder blades. VA said not service-connected because their X-rays didn't show it in 1945. ... operation ... emphysema ... oxygen tube 1½ years ... died with 20 percent service-connected -- 10 percent for nerves, 10 percent feet.

"Howard: He wore a name tag around his neck on a string that said 'BLIND' so the Jap guards would stop beating him for not bowing when they walked by. The VA fought him tooth and nail for 25 years before they finally admitted he was blind. There is no such thing as starvation.

"Sandy: I was with him for two years. He asks me, 'What happened?' He has almost a total memory loss. It is one way to stand the pain of remembering.

"Myself (Sgt. Forrest Knox): A classmate was the interviewer at General Motors so he told me confidentially, 'GM can't hire you. You're a wreck. There is no way you could do a day's work, and we can't support you just because you're a veteran.' Just two weeks before the Army told me I was in perfect condition and didn't need any help. I was learning my new lessons.

Owen "Sandy" Sandmire: "I can't talk about my experiences as a POW except to another POW. Only they understand."

"You cannot measure a man till you strip off civilization. Plain courage is a shining thing when you see it." Sgt. Forrest Knox.

(The following incident related by Forrest Knox in Death March was one I planned to omit until Sandy laughingly told me about it and said, "Naw - go ahead and put it in." Sandy's version was not as blunt and of course, part of it he couldn't remember, so we quote verbatim "Knocky's" version.)

"(We managed to get ahold of) a couple of quarts of clear 190 proof alcohol -- 'P-40 Juice.' Cut to about one-half it made a real nice tea. This night we sat around and joked and laughed until lights out. ... P-40 Juice also had other uses. Sandy had a bad case of 'Inky,' which is what we called a fungus infection that seemed to like the skin of our balls. The skin would swell, turn red, and when it cracked, leak fluid. The Japs thought it was funny as hell. Their medic would have you stand on a short table and paint you with iodine. The guards used to gather to watch us jump and holler. One night Sandy came in drying himself from the shower. Of course he had been into the 'tea' or he would not have thought it, but he wondered aloud whether P-40 Juice would cure the Inky. So he dipped his finger in and touched himself. He waited and nothing happened, so he poured some more on his belly and rubbed it in. The trouble was he hadn't waited long enough. He was standing there naked, drinking some more tea, when the fire hit. He howled like a raped ape. He ran into the shower but the cold water did nothing. Then he ran back to gulp some more tea and then back into the shower. He managed to make about three fast trips before the tea caught up with him. He passed out cold as a mackerel on the floor. We ganged around him, trying to lift him up the stairs and get him to bed. But a wet, limp drunk is hard to carry, so it proved very difficult. On the way up the stairs some serious suggestions were made like pouring P-40 Juice all over him so all we'd need to do was steer him to bed. Some of our humor was rough, but no one was that hardhearted. The next day he was sick. Too much tea and he still had his Inky."

"My problem is my memory runs together. Kind of like a coon dog who won't follow a single scent. I'm amazed at what I remember, though. I can't imagine anyone forgetting. But Sandmire don't even remember being there. He was a big man and the Japs just loved knocking him down. He got so many concussions from being belted, he has almost a total memory loss." Sgt. Forrest Knox



A typical Japanese prison camp guard

Someone sent this to Sandy. He got such a laugh from it, we want to include it. A note in the margin said: "Something I made up years ago. Had the picture blown up to 5 foot photo. Someone at a convention stole it."

C. T. Allen"

THE FORMER ENEMY

Remember -- Nobody is perfect. Each one of us is a mixture of good qualities and some perhaps not-so-good qualities. In considering our former enemies we should remember their good qualities and realize that their faults only proved that they were after all, human beings. We should refrain from making harsh judgments of them just because they happen to have been dirty, rotten, atrocity committing no-good sons-of-bitches.

A FORMER POW

PART II

A SEARCH FOR TRUTH

A gathering of information regarding the United States cover-up for over forty years of atrocities and medical experiments performed by Japanese Unit 731 on Prisoners-of-War in Mukden, Manchuria, in exchange for the data gleaned. While POWs suffered all their lives right to the day they died and are told by the VA they must submit "proof" their health problems are service-connected, the "proof" is "classified" and withheld. And as testified by the Army archivist/records keeper, over 99% of said records were returned to Japan and no records kept here. An incredulous Chairman of the U.S. House of Representatives Committee investigating this subject asked, "Didn't you keep microfilm of them?" The Army replied, "No!" My personal opinion is the witness is lying, but there is no way I can prove that. I just cannot believe that information important enough to be classified and covered up for over 40 years is now unimportant enough that it is returned to Japan with NO COPIES HELD IN THE UNITED STATES.

In a letter dated March 29, 1988 from John S. Edwards, Colonel (Ret.) Junior Vice Commander of American Ex-Prisoners of War, I received a copy of "Proposal for a Planning Grant." Via this means it is hoped to write the history of POWs of this century for U.S. History books. We must let future generations of Americans know and understand what these American heroes underwent in their struggle to preserve a free America. WE MUST NEVER FORGET THEIR EPIC STRUGGLE!

CHAPTER IV

A SEARCH FOR TRUTH

MEDICAL EXPERIMENTS ON POWS AT MUKDEN, MANCHURIA

OBSTACLES TO THE SEARCH FOR TRUTH

My husband, Charles J. Lewis, U.S. Navy on the U.S.S. Canopus fought in the battles of Bataan and Corregidor in World War II. When the Philippines fell, he was captured by a vicious enemy and held Prisoner-of-War for 3½ years. His blindness and many health problems common to all POWs captured by the Japanese finally resulted in his premature death at age 61 in 1983. He was one of those held at the Mukden, Manchuria prisoner of war camp -- the subject of this chapter. His life is written in the book COURAGE PERSONIFIED which was completed in the spring of 1985.

In August, 1985, I received a phone call from Bert Riggs, a friend of Chuck's, who was with him at Mukden, asking if I had heard of the breaking news about the medical/germ/bacterial experiments at Mukden. Up to that point, I had heard only vague rumors -- nothing definite. Then Bert said, "You realize Chuck and I and the other guys there were subjected to this, don't you?" My shock, anger and absolute rage welled within me and when I was able to think, determined to find all I could about this horror.

The POW did not realize he was a guinea pig. I tried to remember if Chuck said anything and recalled him telling about the glass rods inserted in their rectums and how, as he said it, "You know, those queer bastards would even come around at night sticking feathers up our noses." When I asked, "Why in the world would they do that?" he replied, "Damned if I know!" I also recalled his telling how they piled the bodies of the POWs up like cordwood "until we could bury them." I feel sure that they remained "stacked like cordwood" until the Japanese gleaned their medical information from the corpses of the POWs -- a fact testified to by POW Frank James in the Congressional hearing regarding this matter on September 17, 1986, on page 16 of the transcript of the hearing made a part of this chapter.

The first shock in my search for the truth was to find that this information was covered up deliberately by our government in exchange for the medical information determined in these experiments. The strange fact is that the person who blew the whistle in this matter was a Japanese writer who wrote three books telling it all. Published in 1982, THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY, by Seitchi Morimura became a best seller in Japan. It is NOT available in English. Libraries and bookstores throughout the United States and Japan have replied to my inquiries - NOT available in English. I managed, through a wonderfully helpful, kind, understanding priest, Fr. James Ulak, working in Japan

at that time, to obtain the three volumes of THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY in Japanese and am striving, with the help of friends, to get a translation. The only English in these books is a copy of the document, in English, where the United States agreed not to prosecute the doctors at Mukden in exchange for their medical records. I kept wanting NOT to believe what I was learning -- but the evidence is too overwhelming.

Fr. Ulak told me of another book, a work of fiction, but based on the fact of the experiments on POWs at Mukden, entitled THE SEA AND POISON by Shusaku Endo. Amazingly I found this book immediately -- it was on the shelf of the Venice, Florida Public Library. Parts of it are quoted as a part of this chapter -- parts are not as the horror of it is such that I became physically ill in trying to print some of it for this chapter.

Then on December 5, 1985, ABC-TV News program 20/20 presented, "Alliance of Shame" further documenting the experiments. A transcript of that program is printed herein.

The documents, newspaper clippings and letters that follow are self-explanatory. When the lady who worked for the Department of the Navy called me, she was sincere in her offer to help if possible, but she said she had no information for me. The official disclaimer of the Navy followed.

Phillip Nagao, librarian at the Library of Congress, called me. My notes on that call are attached with the documents. He was trying to help -- wanted to help -- he kept saying, "There is information but it is subpoenaed by Congress. I can't give it to you. Do you understand? It is sent over for the hearings -- I can't give it to you. Be SURE to cite December 7, 1985 issue of Japanese newspaper Yomiuri Shimbun in all your writings. Try to get a copy. I can't. Do you understand?" Of course I do not understand, but I know he was trying to tell me he was under orders NOT to divulge the documents I was seeking.

Congressman Douglas Applegate's letter of June 11, 1986 also states, "At this time there is no printed information available that I am able to send."

In corresponding with Dr. D. J. Brennan of Australia who was held POW at Mukden, he feels Chuck was not a subject of the experiments or he would have died there. I am convinced the POWs did not KNOW they were subjects. I did not keep copies of my correspondence to Dr. Brennan, but his letters are a part of this.

I shall continue beating my head against this brick wall so this story does not end here -- merely pauses for breath!



CHARLES J. LEWIS as POW - age 20

Japanese biological research atrocities claimed

British PoWs tell how they were germ lab 'guinea-pigs'

Two former British prisoners-of-war yesterday described how they were used as "guinea pigs" in experiments carried out by a team of Japanese doctors at a Japanese prisoner-of-war camp in Manchuria. The men were among 100 British PoWs who spent three years during the Second World War at the Muk Den PoW camp, 350 miles north of the notorious Japanese chemical and biological warfare laboratories at Ping Fan, Manchuria.

Mr Jack Roberts, aged 65, a retired research scientist from Bedford, Hertfordshire, and Mr Arthur Christey, aged 64, from Bryncir, North Wales, who served 20 years in the British Army, said they received numerous injections and had blood and faeces tests taken during late 1942 to 1945 at Muk Den.

Mr Roberts, a sergeant at the time working in the camp hospital, said he was told the experiments on him and other British and Australian PoWs were for "medical research".

"We were given injections and told they were inoculations

for tetanus and other diseases. We were also given injections and told the injections were vitamins," Mr Roberts said.

Mr Roberts, who appears in the TVS film to be broadcast tomorrow about Japanese wartime atrocities by members of the chemical and biological warfare unit, codenamed "Unit 731", claimed he did not know that such a unit existed until a few months ago.

"All I know is that a team of strangers, supposedly doctors and scientists, came to Muk Den. They carried out experiments on us and they left", Mr Roberts said in London yesterday.

The film claims that members of Unit 731 visited the Muk Den camp to carry out tests on dysentery and malnutrition.

"I managed to avoid some of the injections because I didn't trust Japanese vaccines," Mr Roberts said.

In the film, shown to the Press yesterday, Mr Roberts told how he remembered prisoners being measured with calipers and bodies being dissected by visiting Japanese scientists.

"It was pretty obvious to me that we were being used as guinea-pigs for some reason that we were not aware of and that we hadn't been told about," he says in the film.

Yesterday he said he still did not know whether the "strangers" who came to the camp were from Unit 731.

Mr Roberts said he contracted tuberculosis at the camp and had "fairly normal health" until about 10 years ago, when he suffered a stomach haemorrhage.

Thirteen hundred American PoWs arrived at Muk Den at the same time as them, but Mr Roberts said the Americans were weak and in a bad way.

"They were sent in hell ships from Manila - 400 died in the first winter from the severe cold and lack of food."

However, Mr Christey said Muk Den was a "holiday camp" with better living conditions than in most camps.

"We were given some rice and blankets, unheard of in some camps. We wondered why we had better conditions although the camp itself was still terrible."

Yesterday, Mr Christey, a father of five, said he saw Japanese doctors removing the internal organs from the bodies of the American PoWs who died in the first winter. "We were told it was for research," he said.

"We had our suspicions... we knew that some sort of research was going on, but what?" he said.

He said he had 19 injections during three years at the camp and countless blood and faeces tests. "We still don't know whether we were experimented on by the Unit 731."

What was in the injections they received also remained a mystery. Mr Christey, who retired from the British Army as a sergeant, suffered a "collapse" 15 years ago and has not worked since. "I collapsed totally at home in England," he said.

He said 10 comrades, all former PoWs at Muk Den, had said they suffered a similar collapse.

Major Robert Peaty, who was the senior British officer at Muk Den, said from his home in Winchester yesterday, that he knew that a Japanese team had visited the camp, as described by Mr Roberts and Mr Christey.

But Major Peaty said he did not know that a Unit 731 existed. "The first I heard about Unit 731 was during the past few months," he said.

Major Peaty kept a diary at the camp and extracts from the diary will be used in a book about Muk Den by British PoWs.

In the diary he lists a number of tests of the prisoners' blood and faeces. He remembers that the Japanese did not wish to discuss the tests and made it obvious that he would not be welcome to pry into the tests.



Arthur Christey, suspicions



Jack Roberts had injections



Robert Peaty, who kept notes

An image

TVS defends approach to Howe

Monday, August 12, 1985

Wisconsin
Milwaukee Sentinel

Japan did germ-war tests on POWs, TV show says

MO AUG 12 1985 *2

London, England —AP— In a television documentary to be shown this week, survivors will describe how the Japanese conducted deadly germ warfare experiments on hundreds of American prisoners during World War II, newspapers reported Sunday.

The documentary says the Japanese experimenters escaped US prosecution by sharing their data.

The program is to be shown in Britain Tuesday. The Observer and The Sunday Telegraph newspapers published details of the hourlong documentary by TVS — a regional arm of Independent Television — Britain's independent commercial network.

The documentary apparently offered the first descriptions from witnesses of the alleged experiments.

A 1981 article in The Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, a US publication, first suggested that the Japanese carried out experiments on American prisoners in northern China.

The article quoted a 1956 FBI memorandum to substantiate the charges and said US authorities chose not to try the Japanese involved, accepting their test data instead.

No survivor of the alleged experiments ever surfaced. It was not clear why witnesses would have waited until now to appear.

The tests were carried out on American, British and Australian soldiers at a secret Japanese prisoner-

of-war camp at Mukden in northeast China, former soldiers who said they survived such tests were quoted saying.

The war veterans were not named in any of the accounts.

The victims were quoted as saying the tests were performed by a secret branch of the Japanese Imperial Army known as Unit 731, and that the tests included injecting US, British and Australian prisoners with deadly germs and then charting their illnesses before they died.

The documentary will include interviews with witnesses, describing how as many as 3,000 Japanese petty criminals and dissidents were dissected alive, frozen to death in refrigerated chambers or tied up and left in fields where mustard gas bombs were exploded.

A similar account was given in 1982 by a Japanese best-seller, "The Devil's Gluttony."

The book, by Seichi Morimura, described the unit by saying it killed as many as 3,000 Chinese, Soviet and Korean prisoners in germ experiments.

The documentary did not say how many Allied prisoners of war died at Mukden in the alleged experiments.

The exact period of time in which the experiments took place was not given.

The documentary said more than 1,000 American soldiers, who sur-

vived the infamous "death marches" after Japan overran the Philippines in 1942, were among those shipped to Mukden, along with about 100 British and Australian prisoners of war.

In the winter of 1942, out of 1,450 prisoners at Mukden, 430 died, mostly from dysentery and paratyphoid, the documentary said.

Paratyphoid is a bacterial disease that causes the formation of abscesses in bones, joints and lungs.

Dysentery is an inflammation of the intestine, characterized by frequent bowel movements.

TVS lists the names of Japanese scientists who allegedly were granted immunity from prosecution for war crimes in exchange for sharing the results of their experiments with US intelligence and bacteriological warfare officers in the months after Japan formally surrendered on Sept. 2, 1945.

US authorities withheld all evidence of Unit 731 from the trials of Japanese war criminals in Tokyo, which ended in April 1948, TVS said.

The program — titled "Unit 731: Did the Emperor Know?" — said two decrees by Japan's leader, Emperor Hirohito, led to the creation of a germ warfare headquarters at Pingfan, 350 miles northeast of Mukden in Manchuria, but it was unclear whether Hirohito knew of the alleged wartime experiments on humans.

Monday, August 12, 1985
Milwaukee Sentinel (Wisconsin)

Show describes tests on POWs

MO AUG 12 1985 ST

London, England —UPI— Japanese doctors conducted Auschwitz-style experiments on American and other POWs during World War II but were allowed to go free by US authorities after the war in exchange for test results, it was reported Sunday.

A television documentary to be broadcast in Britain Tuesday alleges that several of the doctors who performed the experiments are still alive and hold senior posts in Japanese medical and academic institutions, the Sunday Telegraph and The Observer newspapers said.

The documentary produced by TVS Television — citing recently declassified US and Japanese documents as the basis for its information — says the Japanese performed tests on American, British and Australian prisoners of war to see if Anglo-Saxons reacted to disease in the same way as Asians.

The scientists injected Allied POWs with germs, including agents that caused typhoid and plague, and charted the course of their illness, the documentary alleges. The effects were compared to data obtained from tests on Asians.

Men were also frozen to death during tests of their tolerance of cold, and others were placed in open fields where gas bombs and germ bombs were exploded, the documentary says.

As many as 3,000 POWs, including Soviets and Chinese, died in the experiments conducted at a camp known as "Unit 731," deep inside Japanese-occupied China, the documentary alleges.

US authorities, with the approval of Pacific military commander Gen. Douglas MacArthur, granted the Japanese scientists immunity from prosecution after the war in return for data from the experiments, according to the documentary.

The existence of the camp was first discovered and revealed by a group of university students in Tokyo.

1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582
September 1, 1985

Department of Defense
Washington, D.C.

Attention: Department of Navy

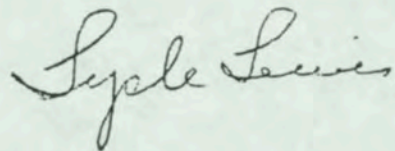
Re: Freedom of Information Act
Prisoners of War - WWII - captured at Corregidor
Human experiments on POWs held at Mukden, Manchuria

Gentlemen:

Several years ago there was a spate of publicity concerning experimental drugs/bacteria/who-knows-what injected into prisoners-of-war held in the POW camp at Mukden, Manchuria during WWII, and said experiments kept secret after the war by some agreement with the Japanese. Please send me all information in your files concerning this matter.

My husband, Charles J. Lewis, now deceased, was a subject of these injections, as was his friend Bert Riggs now fighting for his life, and many of their POW buddies. Of 1400 men in the camp who were injected, 420 died within 3 months after these experiments. Bert and Chuck were both extremely ill. It is too late to help my husband, but if I can find out anything at all that might help Bert and those still living, I want to try. Please help me. Don't turn your backs on these men struggling to survive. Won't someone there take this letter to heart and try? These men gave everything for our America. Please, one American there in Washington, ~~hear~~ hear me!?

Sincerely,



Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J. Lewis)

Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone: 813/377-0111



DEPARTMENT OF THE NAVY
OFFICE OF THE CHIEF OF NAVAL OPERATIONS
WASHINGTON, DC 20350-2000

IN REPLY REFER TO
5720
Ser 09B30P/5U313182
September 16, 1985

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, FL 33582

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This refers to your Freedom of Information Act request of September 1, 1985, and your telephone conversation with Ms. Doris Mattingly, a member of this organization, on September 12.

During that conversation you explained that you were seeking information concerning an agreement made between the U.S. Government and Japan to keep secret those experiments made on U.S. prisoners-of-war during World War II. Ms. Mattingly advised you that she had contacted an official from the Naval Historical Center but failed to identify information responsive to your request and recommended you contact the Department of State. At that time, you withdrew your request.

In view of the above, your request is returned.

Sincerely,

G. R. Aitken

G. R. AITKEN
Hd, PA/FOIA Branch
By direction of the
Chief of Naval Operations

Enclosure

same letter sent to University of Tokyo Library
Hongo 7 - Chome,
Bunkyo-KU, Tokyo, Japan

September 24, 1985

Tokyo Metropolitan Central Library
#5-7-13 Minami-Azabu,
Minato-KU
Tokyo, Japan 106

Re: THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY by Seitchi Mortmura

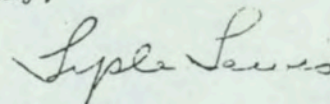
Sirs:

The above book was a best seller in your country in 1982.
I have been unable to buy a copy printed in English here
in the United States. Is there an English publication?
If so, will you please inform me how I may obtain a copy?

I am most interested in obtaining a copy as my husband, now
deceased, was possibly a subject of the experiments described
in this book.

I would very much appreciate any information you can send
me to help me in my search for a copy of this book in English.
Thank you.

Yours truly,



Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, Florida 33582
United States of America

TOKYO METROPOLITAN CENTRAL LIBRARY
5-7-13 MINAMI AZABU, MINATO-KU
TOKYO, JAPAN 〒106
Telephone: 03-442-8451

October 5, 1985

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, Florida 33582
United States of America

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This is in reply to your letter dated September 24.

We regret to say, AKUMA NO HOUSHOKU -- this is the original title of your seeking book -- seems not to have been translated into English by now.

We searched several kind of trade bibliographies and some other reference books, but we could not find any clue about an English publication.

If you want to get further information, we advice you to inquire the author in person. The address is as follows;

4-3-141 Midorigaoka
Atsugi-shi Kanagawa-ken
Japan 243

Sincerely yours,

島田若葉

Wakaba Shimada
Reference Librarian

UNIVERSITY OF TOKYO LIBRARY SYSTEM

GENERAL LIBRARY. HONGO 7-3-1 BUNKYO-KU

TOKYO 113, JAPAN

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, Florida 33582
United States of America

Dear Madam:

We received your letter order dated Sept.
24, 1985 regarding:

The Devil's Gluttony by Seiichi Morimura
printed in English. Please ask to "Leo Publicity
Ltd."

Address No. 301 Katsura Bld.
13-1 Saka-machi
Shinjuku, Tokyo

*sent
11.19.85*

We are very sorry for being late to answer.

Yours sincerely

風間 孝

Tsutomu Kazama
Photocopy Section
Readers Service Division
General Library

October 11, 1985

Mr. Seitchi Mortmura
4-3-141 Midorigaoka
Atsugi-shi Kanagawa-ken
Japan 243

Re: AKUMA NO HOUSHOKU

Dear Sir:

I am trying to obtain a copy of your book in English which translates "The Devil's Gluttony". The Tokyo Metropolitan Central Library suggested I write you directly.

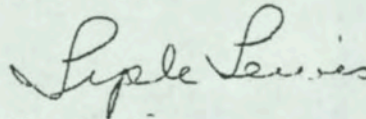
I am very interested in obtaining a copy in English as I have just learned that my husband was a subject of these experiments. He died two years ago, but a friend who was with him in Manchuria called me and told me they had been injected.

Please let me know if I can obtain a copy of your book in English, and also how I can obtain any information on this subject at all. I will be most happy to send you the money if you will let me know how much to send.

I am most willing to pay for any copies of your research materials as well.

Thank you in advance for any consideration and help you can give to me in my search for the truth. Thank you.

Sincerely,



Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Florida 33582
United States of America

April 12, 1986

ABC, Inc.
1330 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10019

Attention: Barbara Walters

Dear Miss Walters:

After the Dec. 5, 1985 showing of the Mukden, Manchuria prisoner-of-war camp where the Japanese conducted bacterial experiments on POWs, I wrote you sending you names of those I am in touch with who were there and a copy of my book about my husband, who I learned was also a subject. It was most emotional for me to see the film of the camp as he had told me about the plane coming over taking pictures - I realized he was down there and had been severely beaten when he responded to a guard's question about what he thought of the plane and he said, "Good." It was so unbelievable that I was watching it on TV after his death and know he is there and what is happening on the ground.

I was so overcome when I wrote you I forgot to ask how to obtain a copy of the film or video tape of this segment. He is so much a part of it I will do anything to get a copy. Please let me know how to go about it and the cost and I will respond promptly. It will mean a great deal to me, my family and especially our grandchildren.

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis

Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J.)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone 813/377-0111

*unable to obtain video tape -
written transcript follows*

ABC NEWS

Show #546

7 West 66th Street, New York, N.Y. 10023
Transcripts: Box 2020, Ansonia Station, New York, N.Y. 10023
Press contact: Maurie Perl (212) 887-4099
Audience Relations: (212) 887-3421

20/20

December 5, 1985

AV WESTIN Vice President & Executive Producer
HUGH DOWNS Host
BARBARA WALTERS Host

"Dad Would Want to Die"

JANICE TOMLIN Producer
TOM JARRIEL Correspondent
Additional video courtesy of WCVB-TV, Boston, MA
WNEV-TV, Boston, MA

"Shopping by the Book"

BERNARD I. COHEN Producer
JOHN STOSSEL Correspondent

"Alliance of Shame"

PETER WILLIAMS Producer
HUGH DOWNS Correspondent
Slides courtesy of Centers for Disease Control

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Copyright © 1985 by American Broadcasting Companies, Inc. This transcript may not be reproduced in whole or in part by mimeograph or by any other means, without permission.

TRANSCRIPT CHARGES: One to ten copies, \$3.00 each; additional copies, \$1.00 each. Be sure to indicate air date and subject or participants. Send order with payment to Box 2020, Ansonia Station, New York, N.Y. 10023. Annual subscriptions available at \$95 per year. Indicate starting date and enclose payment. All orders must be prepaid. Make checks payable to 20/20.

CANADIAN VIEWERS: Due to excessive bank clearance charges, Canadian checks are not acceptable. Please send U.S. dollar bills or International Money Order in "U.S. Funds."

Transcript produced by Journal Graphics, Inc., New York, N.Y.

December 5, 1985

HUGH DOWNS: Good evening. I'm Hugh Downs.**BARBARA WALTERS:** And I'm Barbara Walters. And this is 20/20.**ANNOUNCER:** On the the ABC newsmagazine, 20/20, with Hugh Downs and Barbara Walters:**WALTERS [voice-over]:** Tonight, Paul Brophy, a hero, a loved husband, and the father of five.**KAREN OLSON:** And he said to me, "If I can't sit up and kiss two of my beautiful daughters, I may as well be six feet under."**WALTERS [voice-over]:** Paul Brophy has been comatose for two years, but modern medicine is keeping him alive.**Dr. RICHARD FIELD:** He's a long ways from dead.**WALTERS [voice-over]:** His family wants to let him die. Should the courts allow it? Tom Jarriel on the issues and emotions — "Dad Would Want to Die."**DOWNS [voice-over]:** And mail-order catalogs. They've got sit-at-home shoppers in a buying frenzy; offering convenience and whatever you need. But the competition's tough. Is your favorite catalog a winner? Consumer correspondent John Stossel reports on an industry that's soaring: "Shopping by the Book."**WALTERS [voice-over]:** And this Japanese general conducted germ warfare experiments on people during World War II, injecting POWs with lethal bacteria. Were Americans human guinea pigs?**GREGORY RODRIGUEZ:** From the time we left the Philippines, they were experimenting on us.**JIM BIRD:** They done many strange things that we never could understand.**WALTERS [voice-over]:** The secret was kept for decades. Why did Washington cover up, and who was behind an "Alliance of Shame"?**DOWNS:** If you were in a coma — not terminally ill, but you had virtually no chance of regaining consciousness — would you want to be kept alive? Maybe you've discussed that with your family. Paul Brophy, who has been in a coma for over two years, had discussed it with his family, and tonight in Massachusetts they are caught up in a legal battle to honor his wishes.**WALTERS:** When a final decision is made in the Brophy case, it could set a legal precedent, because for the first time the courts will decide whether artificial feeding can be withdrawn from an individual who is not terminally ill. Tom Jarriel has explored the issues and emotions brought about by what happened to Paul Brophy.**PAT BROPHY, wife:** Thank you, Jesus, for bringing us here tonight together as a family. Bless us, O Lord, and these thy gifts which we are about to receive from thy bounty, through Christ our Lord, amen. In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, amen. Okay, let's eat.**TOM JARRIEL [voice-over]:** Once a week the Brophy children return to the family home where they grew up. This is a big Irish Catholic family, close knit, brought closer together by tragedy. There is no room for an empty chair; the five Brophy children now have families of their own. But the head of the household is not here for this family reunion. Paul Brophy is unconscious in a nearby hospital, unaware that an emotional battle over his life has put him in the center of a national debate. His family, those who know and love him best, have gone to court in an effort to force the hospital to let him die. But their private decision has turned into an important test case over when life support can be stopped.**Dr. RICHARD FIELD, hospital physician:** What is being asked in a pat...

to put into a floppy disk and then into a computer. The printer prints out your order and prints your mailing label. Then the order goes to the warehouse where a picker picks it, and gives it to the packer who packs it, and gives it to the mailroom which ships it out. The computer even decides which shipping service is cheaper, United Parcel or the post office. And off it goes to us.

Is all this good for the consumer? You'd think it would be: most catalog companies don't have to pay high rents for downtown locations, and they don't have to pay for as much sales help. *[on camera]* So you'd think that when you buy from a catalog the goods would be cheaper. Are they? Well, we conducted an informal survey. We compared the prices of dozens of items in these catalogs, and found that most of the time the catalogs were not cheaper than stores.

[voice-over] For example, this Canon Sure Shot cost \$189 through the Spiegel catalog, but \$169 in stores we called. This designer dress from the Honeybee catalog cost \$198; in department stores it cost the same. Now, although some products cost less, the moral of the story is: don't count on shopping by the fireplace to save you money. *[on camera]* On the other hand, at least you don't have to deal with all this. I hate to shop.

DOWNS: It is an easy way to shop. I get so many more catalogs than I did in years past. Are there that many more around?

STOSSEL: It's not so much that. I got about 50 also, but Barbara Walters was saying she got none this year. The reason is that they can't afford to send catalogs to everybody. Each one costs about 50¢ to print and send out, so they have to find likely customers. And the most likely customers are people who buy from other catalog companies. So they sell names from one to the other; your name is sold for about 7¢.

DOWNS: I have bought from catalogs; I think that explains it. Very good, John. Do you want—

WALTERS: Yeah, could I borrow your catalog, and then I could maybe— I'll pay you 7¢.

DOWNS: I'll be glad to give you—

WALTERS: I'll be sorry I said this.

DOWNS: I'll give you mine.

WALTERS: Well, next, before the atomic bomb, some people believed germ warfare would be the ultimate weapon. This Japanese general was one of them. He experimented on World War II POWs. Were these Americans among them? Hugh reports on an "Alliance of Shame," right after this.

[commercial break]

DOWNS: Tomorrow in Washington this retired Army colonel will hold a news conference to tell what he knows about one of the best-kept secrets of World War II. It's about Japan's human experiments in germ warfare. And what he has to say could lead to a congressional investigation. That could benefit some former American POWs, who believe Japan's germ warfare research group, known as Unit 731, used them as human guinea pigs. Bits and pieces of this story have emerged over the past few years, but now a British journalist, Peter Williams, has advanced the story, and recently he came to 20/20 with dramatic accounts by both survivors and members of Japan's Unit 731.

[voice-over] The mastermind of Unit 731 was General Shiro Ishii. From 1935 through World War II, his obsession with germ warfare would cause the painful death of some 3,000 people. To study and perfect the killing capacity of biological weapons, Ishii's unit cultured strains of deadly bacteria such as anthrax, typhoid fever, even bubonic plague. He assessed their effectiveness by performing autopsies on his victims. A former colleague of Ishii's, who has requested anonymity, says Ishii's obsession with biological warfare began around 1925.

FORMER ISHII COLLEAGUE *[through interpreter]*: I had the impression that Commander Ishii saw this as a means whereby Japan could conquer the world. At that time, of course, the atomic bomb had not been invented, and the matter of whether the world could be conquered by biological warfare was a topic of much debate.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: Ten years later, Ishii created this headquarters for Unit 731. It was

located at Pingfan, in Japanese-occupied Manchuria. A camp at Mukden was also used by Ishii. Americans, as we'll see later, would suffer and die there. But Pingfan was always the center of Ishii's operation. By World War II, some 3,000 scientists, technicians and soldiers were encamped at Pingfan. Prisoners brought there became human guinea pigs. Early victims were selected from prisoners such as these — Chinese soldiers and dissidents captured when Japan invaded Manchuria. They were systematically injected with some of the most deadly bacteria known.

Prof. TAKAO MATSUMURA, World War II historian: This document shows that 14 cases of the germ of tetanus were given.

DOWNS [voice-over]: Professor Takao Matsumura uncovered some of Unit 731's original records. He showed Peter Williams those dealing with tetanus. Untreated, it brings painful infection and then death.

PETER WILLIAMS: So 10 days after the experiment, he was dead.

DOWNS [voice-over]: The records bear the name of Unit 731's Dr. Naoe Ikeda. Williams, with his Japanese interpreter, went to talk to Ikeda, who today operates a clinic that specializes in blood disorders.

WILLIAMS: Does he recognize these documents, about his work in Manchuria on tetanus experiments?

INTERPRETER [speaking for Dr. Ikeda]: He doesn't know.

WILLIAMS: But will you ask the doctor why he doesn't want to talk about his work?

DOWNS [voice-over]: Experiments went beyond tests with bacteria. A postwar trial in the Soviet Union brought details of freezing experiments. A printer for 731 tells what he saw.

NAOJI UEZONO, former 731 member [through interpreter]: I made a brief visit to the frostbite laboratory. In there was a freezer chamber having a temperature of minus 50 degrees centigrade in which two White Russians, without any clothes on at all, totally naked, were inside the chamber hugging one another. Observations were being made of them, and they ultimately died.

DOWNS [voice-over]: Dr. Hisato Yoshimura supervised frostbite experiments. When Williams visited his home, Yoshimura's wife came out.

INTERPRETER [speaking for Dr. Yoshimura's wife]: He's still in bed. He had a very bad cold.

WILLIAMS: When he gets up, do you think he would talk to us about it?

INTERPRETER: She doesn't believe he will talk to you.

DOWNS [voice-over]: In fact, of the surviving doctors and scientists contacted by Peter Williams, only one was willing to accept responsibility. Today he is a vice president emeritus at the Kitasato Hospital and Research Institute in Tokyo. Documents link Dr. Shiro Kasahara with experiments that killed 101 men.

Dr. SHIRO KASAHARA, former 731 member [through interpreter]: I can't accept the figure of 101. I never counted them, but it is incredible. I cannot believe it.

WILLIAMS: What about your part in the work of Unit 731 — do you have any conscience about that?

Dr. KASAHARA [through interpreter]: I feel very guilty about what I've done, and I think I did wrong.

DOWNS [voice-over]: But how were Americans added to the pool from which Ishii drew his victims? Well, in 1942 Japanese victories in the Philippines netted them 30,000 American POWs. Some were put on ships bound for Korea.

GREGORY RODRIGUEZ, Sr., Mukden POW: They took us from the tropics to a cold climate, and that took its toll on the prisoners, and all this time I feel like it was a systematic way of them testing how much the Americans or British and Australians could endure.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: Some 1,400 Allied prisoners, mostly Americans, were taken to the camp at Mukden. Once there, they were subjected to rigorous examination.

JIM BIRD, Mukden POW: They measured our skulls, our height. That's when they took our blood tests, also.

FRANK JAMES, Mukden POW: They come through and they had everybody bend over, and they had little glass rods. And everybody got one shoved up their rear end, you know.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: In the camp severe dysentery and malnutrition were rampant. American survivors believed that germs and bacteria were spread in a variety of ways.

Mr. RODRIGUEZ: I was lying in my bunk in the barracks and this Japanese, I thought he was a guard, he came in and he had a feather. And he ran that feather up and down under my nostrils. And then I discovered that this was one of the methods that they used to get prisoners to ingest bacteria.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: The Mukden POWs who survived were liberated in 1945. Before that, some 400, mostly Americans, had died. Autopsies were performed on the bodies.

Mr. JAMES: The bodies were put up on the autopsy tables and they would cut them up and so forth, and get their organs, their parts of organs, whatever they wanted, that they put them in the containers, that were marked with the same numbers that was on the POW tag.

Mr. BIRD: They done many strange things that we never could understand.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: It is only in recent years that these men have tried to understand. Around 1980 word got out that Japan had tested germ warfare. Declassified documents proved it. They mentioned the Mukden area and indicated an American coverup. Ishii and his men were shielded from war crimes prosecution by the United States. In return, the U.S. got Ishii's data on human experiments. Washington has refused to elaborate on these reports, but now Peter Williams has located this retired Army colonel who helped arrange a deal between General Shiro Ishii and General Douglas MacArthur. After the war ended it was MacArthur who was governing Japan, and many Japanese, fearing they'd be prosecuted for war crimes, went into hiding. And yet Ishii and his unit were in a position to bargain.

Mr. UEZONO *[through interpreter]*: The most technically advanced country in bacterial technology was Russia, followed by Germany and then Japan. These three countries were very progressive in this field, but America and of course England were not so advanced. America desperately wanted to acquire as much knowledge as possible about bacterial technology.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: Seven thirty-one's Dr. Ryoichi Naito was Ishii's link with MacArthur. Naito, who spoke English, made contact with Col. Murray Sanders, who was investigating reports of Japan's germ warfare research. Each man tried to determine what the other knew, Sanders, getting nowhere, threatened that a new and tougher investigator would be brought in. It worked.

Col. MURRAY SANDERS, WWII Intelligence: He appeared the next morning early with a manuscript that was fundamentally dynamite. This said in essence that the Japanese were involved in biological warfare.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: And Sanders had also asked the key question, had they used human guinea pigs? Sanders wrote on the document that Naito said "No." Sanders then went to MacArthur and suggested a deal, that the United States offer immunity from prosecution for war crimes in return for Japan's germ warfare research.

Col. SANDERS: He said, "Well, if you feel you cannot get all the information, we are not given to torture. There's nothing we can do about it."

WILLIAMS: So offer them the deal.

Col. SANDERS: So we offered him the promise as coming from General MacArthur, and get the data. I went back to Naito and said— told him that we would not prosecute. This made a deep impression, and the data came in waves after that.

DOWNS: But was the deal solid? If MacArthur learned of the human experiments, would

Ishii and his men face charges at the trial of Japanese war criminals?

WILLIAM WEBB, trial judge *[voice-over]*: From beginning to end, the customary and conventional rules of war, designed to prevent inhumanity, were flagrantly disregarded.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: The Tokyo trial began in May 1946. Behind the scenes Ishii was providing U.S. Army scientists details about his work. In May 1947 MacArthur radioed the War Department: "Experiments on humans were . . . confirmed tacitly by Ishii." So MacArthur knew the truth. Why weren't Ishii and his men among those charged with war crimes? Because to do so would have meant public disclosure at this trial of Ishii's germ warfare research and it would have given the Russians data that the United States considered vital to national security.

While the trial was still in progress, the U.S. weighed the cost of his decision not to prosecute. In September 1947, the State Department warned MacArthur. "It might later be a source of serious embarrassment to the United States." It was a price the U.S. was prepared to pay. No 731 members were prosecuted at the Tokyo trial. It ended in 1948, and in two years of proceedings, Unit 731 was never mentioned. But just a year later, the Soviet Union prosecuted 12 of Ishii's men. That trial produced testimony that American prisoners had been experimented on. The reports reached the United States, but MacArthur's denial was immediate. He stated he had no knowledge of any human experiments. Meanwhile in the Soviet Union, the 12 were given sentences of up to 25 years. As for Ishii himself—

Col. SANDERS: I am told that he gave a series of lectures that included human testing of infectious organisms in a special camp in the United States. He went into detail as to the method of injection and reaction of the prisoners, and he gave some results.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: Ishii has since died. Other members of 731 went on to lead successful lives. Dr. Hideo Tanaka was a plague expert; he became director of a Japanese medical university. Dr. Yukimoso Yagasawa, who worked on ways of spreading disease, became secretary of the Japanese Penicillin Association. Dr. Tachiomaru Ishikawa was a pathologist; he became a university professor. Dr. Takeo Tamiya, Unit 731's recruiting officer, became president of the Japanese medical association. And Dr. Naito, Ishii's tie to MacArthur, was the driving force behind the Green Cross Corporation. It has become one of Japan's most successful drug companies.

Today, how does Murray Sanders feel about the deal?

Col. SANDERS: I think it was a mistake. But my only excuse is that we never would have obtained the data that we got if we hadn't done something like that.

DOWNS *[voice-over]*: But the evidence of a high level coverup has angered America's Mukden POWs. Since the war, many of them have suffered chronic ill health.

Mr. RODRIGUEZ: From the time I've come back, I've suffered with fevers. And then I went to doctor after doctor, went to specialists, and they can't determine what it is.

Mr. BIRD: Our government should have notified us, so we could have been on the lookout for any repercussions from the experiments. And I'm very disappointed in our government that they've done this.

MAN, Mukden POW: I think it's pretty terrible, and I think our government should 'fess up and try to even help the few of us that are left.

DOWNS: Barbara and I want to talk about this in a moment. We'll be right back.

[commercial break]

DOWNS: You know, these POWs that we saw want desperately to be heard so that their case is known.

WALTERS: How many are there that we're talking about?

DOWNS: Probably some hundreds, but there are 30 known to be survivors of the Mukden area camp. And some of them in kind of rough shape.

WALTERS: But what is it that they hope will happen now?

DOWNS: What they want really is that these documents be released so that their doctors can

get access to medical facts that will be helpful in preserving their health and enhancing it, because they don't know really what was done to them. They weren't in on that.

WALTERS: So they can't say to their doctors it's this or that, can you help me. What are their chances of this happening?

DOWNES: Well, Montana Congressman Pat Williams has got legislation, he's pushing this to help all POWs in this area, and he wants Congress to investigate what happened, and wants above all so that there isn't the secrecy that impinges on the health of these men.

WALTERS: It's just an amazing story, isn't it, after all these years.

DOWNES: Isn't it amazing what pops up? We learn more about history as time unfolds, but perhaps something can be done for these fellows.
We're going to be back in a moment.

[commercial break]

DOWNES: And now here's Ted Koppel with a word about tonight's Nightline.

TED KOPPEL, ABC News: Hugh, coming up on Nightline, it's a fleeting sight and the experience of a lifetime. Seventy-six years of waiting, and Halley's comet is here again. We'll talk with astronomer Carl Sagan. Hugh?

DOWNES: That's Nightline, following your local news. Don't forget Barbara's special Tuesday night at 10:00 Eastern time.

WALTERS: Right, I hope you'll watch. And that's 20/20 for tonight. We're in touch, so you be in touch. I'm Barbara Walters.

DOWNES: I'm Hugh Downs.

WALTERS: And for all of us here at 20/20, good night.

1/13/86

Honorable Pat Williams
U.S. Congressman from Montana
Washington, D.C..

Dear Congressman Williams:

I learned via the 20/20 program on ABC-TV December 5, 1985, about your efforts on behalf of the POWs subjected to the atrocities of bacterial experimentations on prisoners-of-war by the Japanese during WWII at the camp at Mukden, Manchuria.

In May of 1985 I learned from another POW who was with my husband at Mukden that he was a subject also of these experiments. He *(my husband)* died two years ago but he told how the Japs would awaken them at night by brushing their noses with feathers. Of course he had no inkling why. They had injections but did not know what.

The reason for this letter is to thank you for your work on behalf of these few survivors of that hell-hole, and also to send you the names and addresses of those POWs at Mukden who still survive that I am still in touch with. I do not know what, if anything, they can add to your investigation but want to be sure you have their names.

S. Bert Riggs	337 Whippoorwill Pt., Virginia Beach, VA 23452 phone 804-463-1673
Francis E. "Tommy" Thompson	PO Box 432, West St., Hitchfield, Conn. phone 203/567-5432 06759
Ray E. Cohen	6549 W. 77th, Los Angeles, CA 90045 phone 213-670-1741
Ross Chisholm	1832 Vasque Dr., Firebaugh, CA 93622 phone 209-659-2469
Morris Fuerst	1016 Mayette Dr., Chico, CA 95926
John B. Lippard	4744 Princess Lane, Del City, OK 73115
Wybo F. H. Semmelink	PO Box 2207, Palm Beach, FL 33480

If I can be of help in any way, please let me know. Bert is the one who informed me he and my husband were recipients of the atrocities.

God Bless you,

Lysle Lewis

Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J. Lewis)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582
phone 813/377-0111

MARYKNOLL MISSIONERS

〒102 東京都千代田区紀尾井町六番二号
メリノール宜教会

6-2 Kioi-cho, Chiyoda-ku
Tokyo, Japan 102

James Ulak
ULAK

May 15, 1986

Dear Russ,

Greetings from Tokyo and my apologies for taking so long to respond to your letters. Things have been kind of crazy around here...namely, I've spent three out of the last five weeks in the hospital. I've been having considerable trouble with kidney stones and uremic poisoning. The doctors are still trying to figure out what is bringing this all on...diet or whatever? Anyway, the pain has subsided although the stones don't want to cooperate and pass smoothly.

I'm just starting to get back into gear, begin^{ing} to answer correspondence and resume my research. In the next few days I'll try to track down the book you are requesting. I doubt if it is available in English. Actually, there have been some interesting television documentary programs treating the business of medical experiments conducted on prisoners of war and also about various chemical warfare projects that were secretly operated by the Japanese Army in Manchuria. Gradually, things seem to be coming to light. I hope I can be of some help.

Tokyo has been a mad house. First the Summit (which didn't seem to accomplish much except to spend lots of everyones tax Dollars), and then the visit of Prince Charles and Diana...people really went wild over them???

I spoke with Texas and Springfield on Mother's Day and from what I can tell everyone seems to be going well. As you know, Dennis has had a lot of difficulty with fear of flying. However last week he took the bull by the horns and went up in the company plane. He got through the experience and is ready to try again. So that progress seems to be a big load off of his mind. Jeny and Michael are well. The folks were visiting in Housem and just got back to Springfield last week. Always on the go and, naturally, always eager to check on the progress of the "golden grandchild." Of course, you know what that is all about, having lots of experience in that department.

I hope this finds you all thriving and greeting what should be more pleasant weather. I'll be in touch within ten days or so with either the book or more information. Please give my love to all in Morton, Pekin and Peoria.

With warm regards,

Jmu

P.S. Forgive the sloppy typing - but its better

May 22, 1986
Tokyo

Dear Russ,

Just a short note to let you know that I found copies (yes, copies) of Akuma no Hōshoku by Morimura Seiichi. The book has been published in three sequential small paperback volumes. You'll get the picture when you receive them. On the lower binding of each volume you will see the numbers 65, 66, and 73. The books should be read in that order. I have asked around and these have not yet been translated into English. I will keep checking into this. Sorry that I don't have the time to do it for you, but as you can see, it would be a major project. I hope that your friend is able to find someone who can render these books meaningful.

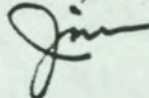
Russ, the price of the books comes to a total of about \$8 and the postage another couple of bucks. I really don't want you to send me any payment because by the time a check is processed or money changed (especially on such a small amount) you lose a few dollars in the service charges. Hardly worth it. If you feel like you need to do something, treat Aunt Helen to a cocktail and say its on me. O.K.?

The books will arrive under separate cover, I assume a few days after the letter.

Weather here is cool and damp. The so-called "rainy season" and it will be like this through June. I don't mind because its easy weather to study in. During June I'll be spending some time showing some visitors around, but other than that I can concentrate on my work. The body is getting back into shape after the hospitalization and I'm drinking gallons of water to keep the kidneys flushed.

I hope this finds you folks doing well. Please give my love to the ladies in the house.

Very best,



May 15, 1986

Daniel J. Boorstin, Librarian
Library of Congress
10 First St. S.E.
Washington, D.C. 20540

Dear Mr. Boorstin:

Can you help me? Our local library kindly provided your name and address in hopes you can.

My husband was a prisoner of war, captured in the fall of the Philippines May 6, 1942. He arrived at the POW camp at Mukden, Manchuria on November 11, 1942, and held there until shipped to Kamioka, Japan - date unknown. He died 2½ years ago. A fellow POW with him at Mukden told me they were the subjects of the experiments performed on the POWs at Mukden and just recently has become public knowledge, particularly with the ABC/TV 20/20 program documenting it on December 5, 1985. I learned of it in May, 1985 for the first time. I have tried everywhere, even writing Tokyo University, Tokyo Metropolitan Library, the publisher and even the author of one of the books exposing this, to no avail. The name of the book is AKUMA NO HONSHOKU by Seitchi Mortmura. English title is THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY. Can you tell me how I can obtain a copy in English? I would be most grateful.

If you are aware of any documents, information or publications on this subject, will you please let me know the names of them and how I can go about obtaining copies.

Things he mentioned through the years fit in absolutely perfectly with the 20/20 story. I keep running into brick walls and locked doors. I just want to know the facts. Can you help me?

My sincere thanks,

Lysle Lewis
Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582
phone 813/37700111

5/28/86

Phillip Nagao, librarian, Library of Congress called me by phone. Said the Jap book "The Devil's Gluttony" is not available in English. He suggested I write Rep. Pat Williams of Montana who has submitted a bill for comp. for POWs subjected to this. Hrgs. were held.

Also he said hearing now being held by Congressional House Committee on Veterans Affairs, sub-committee on compensation, pension & insurance, Douglas Applegate, chairman.

He said to cite that Dec. 7, 1985 issue of Jap. paper Yomiuri Shimbun contains much information and to refer to it in my letters. Phillip Nagao told me that information has been submitted to the sub-committee hearings but not for public knowledge yet and he could not release the information given to congress, but if I wrote Doug. Applegate and Pat Williams, they would probably send me a report when hearings completed.

I have done so as of 5/30/86.

Also wrote Fr. Jim thanks for sending the books, and asking if he'd get copy of the paper for me.

*Fr. Jim
remember to return →*

May 30, 1986

Honorable Douglas Applegate, Chairman
House Committee on Veterans Affairs
Sub-Committee on Compensation, Pension & Insurance
Washington, D.C.

Re: Medical/bacterial experiments on Prisoners-of-War held
at Mukden, Manchuria

Dear Sir:

I am asking for information but at the same time am offering my help in any way possible. I learned from a POW friend of my husband's who was with him in Mukden POW camp, having arrived there November 11, 1942, that they were subjected to the experiments as recently documented. My husband is Charles Joseph Lewis, US Navy, U.S.S. Canopus, then assigned to 4th Marines after it was sunk and fought until captured May 6, 1942. My husband died 2½ years ago. In May, 1985 I received a phone call from his friend Bert Riggs who informed me of the experiments. Then in December, 1985, ADC 20/20 documented such information further. My husband had not realized the purpose of this action by the Japanese, but my son (in Ohio) and myself were both startled when they mentioned feathers on the program. We both recalled Chuck's comments from time to time: "It wasn't enough that they deviled the life out of us all day long, but at night those queer bastards would come around and wake us up sticking feathers up our noses."

In my efforts to obtain an English translation of the best selling book in Japan re this matter, I discover there is no English translation. A priest friend is sending me copies in Japanese. Also the Japanese paper "Yomiuri Shimbun" dated December 7, 1985, but I'm unable to obtain an English translation for my records.

Will you please send me any information you have regarding this matter, or if that is not possible, please, PLEASE keep my name available so that you can inform me of the facts as determined in your hearings.

I will be glad to provide names of POWs I'm still in touch with who were there at Mukden, or affidavit as to any facts I have knowledge of. Just let me know if I can be of service.

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis

Lysle Lewis (widow of Charles J.)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582
phone 813/377-0111

May 30, 1986

Honorable Representative Pat Williams
House of Representatives - Montana
Washington, D.C.

RE: Prisoners-of-War held at Mukden, Manchuria, subjected
to bacterial experiments

Dear Sir:

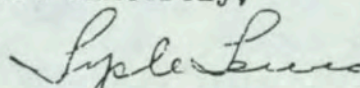
In my attempts to find out the facts concerning the above, I have obtained the best-selling Japanese book "The Devil's Gluttony" and am attempting to obtain a copy of the December 7, 1985 edition of the Japanese newspaper Yomiuri Shimbun which further documents this subject. Of course they are in Japanese and no English translations available. In the course of my efforts your name was given to me as the person investigating this and working to help these POWs and widows. I was aware of this as I've written you previously sending you some names of men held at Mukden with my husband, Charles J. Lewis, U.S. Navy - USS Canopus. My husband died 2½ years ago.

During the ABC 20/20 program last December concerning this, both my son, watching in Ohio, and myself, watching here in Florida were stunned to hear reference to the feathers. Chuck did not know, of course, what his captors were doing and died before discovering the reasons, but we recalled his comments through the years: "It wasn't enough that they deviled the life out of us all day long, but at night those queer bastards would come around and wake us up sticking feathers up our noses."

If you need affidavits, or anything you can think of wherein I can help, please let me know. I would appreciate your keeping my name and address so I can be kept informed of any information that comes to light in this regard.

My sincere thanks for your efforts on behalf of these POWs.

Most Sincerely,



Lysle Lewis (widow of Charles J.)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

Chuck arrived at Mukden November 11, 1942.

May 30, 1986

Dear Father Jim,

Russ Drexler called me the other night to inform me he had received the books concerning the experiments on POWs in Mukden, Manchuria during WWII, of which my husband was one of those subjected to this inhuman and inhumane treatment. I am most grateful for your efforts. Since it is in Japanese I may never be able to read it or get it translated, but I have it in hand for posterity. I am most grateful, which I just said, but cannot reiterate enough my thanks to you.

I just received a call from a gentleman at the Library of Congress telling me that the December 7, 1985 issue of the Japanese newspaper "Yomiuri Shimbun" contains much information in this same regard and suggested I try to obtain a copy of it. Am I asking too much???

Was sorry to hear you have been having such painful health problems and hope you are well on the recovery road by now.

Since I have no idea whatsoever what the books cost, postage, etc. and since I never deal in yens, I am enclosing \$20 to help defray the cost. Please let me know whatever balance I owe to you and I will send it immediately.

Again, my sincere thanks for your help. I've written to two of our congressmen who are working to get the facts in this regard. Although Chuck died before learning the reasons for some of things that happened to him, his comments through the years are now falling into the slots and making sense. His good friend called me a year ago first informing me they had been the subjects of these experiments, and then the ABC 20/20 program on TV last December further documented what Bert had told me. I watched the pictures on TV as a plane flew over the camp and saw the POWs on the ground waving, and realized Chuck was there as he had told me of the terrible beating with a rifle butt he received when he showed his glee at the plane coming over low to take pictures. Here I am watching it in my living room more than 40 years later, two years after Chuck's death and recognizing the facts and pictures. It was almost more than I could bear.

Thank you, thank you, thank you!!

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis
Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

132

Russ and Virginia are my dearest friends. Don't know how I could survive without their friendship.

DEMOCRATS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY, MISSISSIPPI
 DON EDWARDS, CALIFORNIA
 BOB EDGAR, PENNSYLVANIA
 DOUGLAS APPELGATE, OHIO
 RICHARD C. SHELBY, ALABAMA
 DAN MICA, FLORIDA
 THOMAS A. DASCHLE, SOUTH DAKOTA
 WAYNE DOWDY, MISSISSIPPI
 LANE EVANS, ILLINOIS
 MARCY KAPTUR, OHIO
 ALAN B. MOLLOHAN, WEST VIRGINIA
 TIMOTHY J. PENNY, MINNESOTA
 HARLEY O. STAGGERS, JR., WEST VIRGINIA
 J. ROY ROWLAND, GEORGIA
 JOHN BRYANT, TEXAS
 JAMES J. FLORIO, NEW JERSEY
 KENNETH J. GRAY, ILLINOIS
 PAUL E. KANJORSKI, PENNSYLVANIA
 TOMMY F. ROBINSON, ARKANSAS

MACK FLEMING
 CHIEF COUNSEL AND STAFF DIRECTOR

REPUBLICANS

JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT, ARKANSAS
 CHALMERS P. WYLIE, OHIO
 ELWOOD HILLIS, INDIANA
 GERALD B.H. SOLOMON, NEW YORK
 BOB McEWEN, OHIO
 CHRISTOPHER H. SMITH, NEW JERSEY
 DAN BURTON, INDIANA
 DON SUNDQUIST, TENNESSEE
 MICHAEL BILIRAKIS, FLORIDA
 NANCY LEE JOHNSON, CONNECTICUT
 GUY V. MOLINARI, NEW YORK
 THOMAS J. RIDGE, PENNSYLVANIA
 WILLIAM M. HENDON, NORTH CAROLINA
 JOHN G. ROWLAND, CONNECTICUT

NINETY-NINTH CONGRESS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY
 CHAIRMAN

U.S. House of Representatives

COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS

335 CANNON HOUSE OFFICE BUILDING

Washington, DC 20515

June 11, 1986

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
 1804 Springwood Drive
 Sarasota, Florida 33582

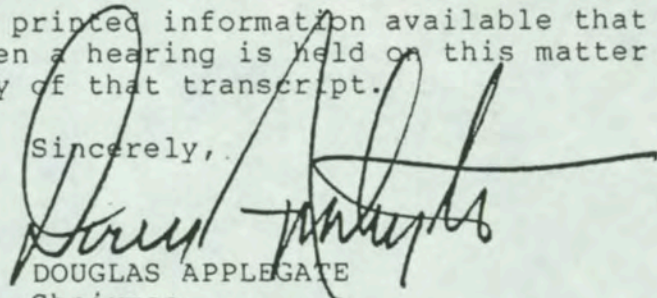
Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This is in response to your recent letter and your request for information on prisoners of war who were held in Camp Mukden.

My Subcommittee does not have jurisdiction of the issue of possible war crimes. We may conduct oversight hearings later this year and hear from witnesses about Camp Mukden, which I am told was about 350 miles from Unit 731. I do not anticipate receiving testimony on the practices of Unit 731; rather I expect to concentrate the physical condition of veterans who were held in captivity by the Imperial Japanese Government.

At this time there is no printed information available that I am able to send. If and when a hearing is held on this matter I will be able send you a copy of that transcript.

Sincerely,



DOUGLAS APPELGATE
 Chairman
 Subcommittee on Compensation,
 Pension and Insurance

DA: jr

May 15, 1986

National Archives and Records
Reference Service
8th St. and Pennsylvania Ave. N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20408

Gentlemen:

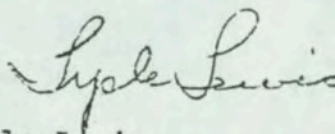
Under the Freedom of Information Act and any other act that may be helpful and pertinent, will you please provide me with any and all documents (copies) concerning experiments and abuses of American Prisoners-of-War held in the Prisoner-of-War Camp at Mukden, Manchuria from November 11, 1942 through the end of World War II. If there is a cost for these, please advise.

If you do not have this information, please advise me where I can obtain it. My husband, now deceased, was a subject of these atrocities. POWs who were with him have told me about it and ABC/TV documented it on their 20/20 program December 5, 1985.

I have been unsuccessful also in obtaining a copy of the book AKUMA NO HOUSHOKU by Seitchi Mortmura. The English title is THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY. Can you refer me to the proper place where I may obtain a copy in English? Our local library tried to obtain it and it is not available in any library in the USA they told me. Also our local bookstore tried in vain to obtain a copy. It also documents the Mukden experiments.

Thank you for any help you can provide to me.

Sincerely,



Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone 813/377-0111

National Archives



Washington, DC 20409

June 16, 1986

Reply to: L86-1653-WL

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Florida 33582

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This is in response to your Freedom of Information Act request of May 15, 1986, for copies of any and all documents concerning experiments and abuses of American prisoners of war held in the POW camp at Mukden, Manchuria, between November 1942 and the end of World War II.

We have surveyed finding aids for pertinent record groups in our custody and have located references to the Hoten prisoner of war camp in Mukden, Manchuria among Army Judge Advocate General records, World War II army unit operations reports, and China Theater MIS-X files in our custody. It is also possible that pertinent information is located among Supreme Commander Allied Powers Legal Section records in our custody.

The National Archives, as part of its reference service, provides information about records, makes records available for use, and, for a fee, furnishes reproductions. These services are subject to certain limitations. For example, we cannot engage in the prolonged searching of records in our custody which would be necessary to respond to your request for copies of any and all documents concerning American POWs in the camp in Mukden. We will be pleased, however, to make pertinent series of records available to you or your representative in our research room.

The Military Field Branch is located in the Washington National Records Center Building, 4205 Suitland Road, Suitland, Maryland, about one mile from the District of Columbia line (Southern Avenue). Research room hours are 8:00 a.m. to 4:15 p.m. Monday through Friday, except legal holidays.

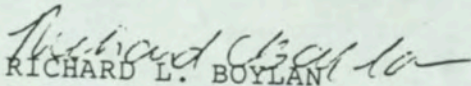
A free shuttle service operates between the National Archives Building (8th Street and Pennsylvania Avenue NW) and the Washington National Records Center Building. The shuttle leaves from the National Archives Building at 8:15, 10:30, 12:30, 2:00, and 3:15. The shuttle leaves from the Records Center at 9:45, 11:15, 1:15, 2:45, and 4:00, and returns to the National Archives Building.

In order to assist you better, please call or write to us before you visit. When writing, please return the enclosed copy of this letter. If you wish to call us, the telephone number is (301) 763-1710. We ask that you cite our reference which appears in the upper right of this letter.

If you are unable to come to the National Archives, you may hire a private researcher to do research for you. We do not maintain a list of persons who do research for a fee, but the local universities may be able to help you. Three possibilities are Georgetown University, Washington, DC 20057; George Washington University, Washington, DC 20052; and the University of Maryland, Director of Graduate Studies, College Park, Maryland 20740.

We have been informed by the Library of Congress that the book Akuma No Houshoku by Seiichi Mokimura has not been translated into English. A copy of the original work in Japanese is located in the Library of Congress.

Sincerely,


RICHARD L. BOYLAN
Acting Chief
Military Field Branch
Military Archives Division

MARYKNOLL MISSIONERS

〒102 東京都千代田区紀尾井町六番二号
メリノール宣教会

6-2 Kioi-cho, Chiyoda-ku
Tokyo, Japan 102

June 19, 1986

Dear Mrs. Lewis,

Thanks so very much for your recent letter. The enclosed cheque covered the cost of the books and postage almost to the penny. For someone with no experience in dealing with yen you were very accurate.

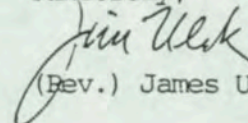
You hardly seem a stranger to me because Russ and Virginia have spoken of you so very often. I recall Russ discussing your husband's terrible POW experiences. Now, over forty years after the fact, with many of the victims and victimizers deceased, the sad documentation begins to emerge. I'm pleased to be able to help you assemble some of the material. If I had the time I would undertake the translation task, but as you can see, that would be a full time job. I'll keep my eyes open for other material related to this issue. I should be able to track down the Yomiuri article of last December. I have a close friend who is a "well-connected" newspaper reporter. He's out of the country now but will return at the end of the month and I'll ask him about getting a copy of the article. About twenty years ago the well-known Japanese writer Shusaku Endo produced a novel since translated into English under the title The Sea and Poison. This novel's plot revolves around the medical experimentation that was conducted on some Allied prisoners held in Japan. It is a gruesome yet powerful work. While you might find it personally too disturbing to read, you should be aware of its existence and of the fact that at least some Japanese have been wrestling with the moral implications of the atrocities committed in those war years.

So, you'll hear from me by sometime in mid-July with, I hope, the Yomiuri article enclosed in that letter. If there is anything else I can do to help you gather information, please don't hesitate to ask.

Thanks for the solicitations about my health. I'm feeling much better and drinking gallons of water to keep the kidneys flushed. Middle-age is creeping up on me. Ha!

Please give my love to the Drexlers the next time you are in touch with them.

Sincerely,


(Rev.) James Ulak

July 2, 1986

Dear Father Jim,

Received your nice letter of June 19 and immediately started looking for Endo's book The Sea and Poison. Found, much to my surprise, that the local library was able to procure a copy nearby for me and had it the next day. I read it and you were right that it was disturbing. In fact, the parts describing the vivisection of the POW made me so sick I had to stop reading awhile and fight the nausea. I have written Congressman Douglas Applegate who is conducting hearings on the experiments at Mukden on POWs and he wrote me that he has no materials to send me at present, but will send me a transcript of the hearings upon completion. I will be attending the national American Ex-POW convention in Jackson, Mississippi July 17-20 and will take along all the materials I have to date in hopes it will be of help to some of the few survivors.

I had a friend ask me, "Why are you doing this?" I was amazed she could ask such a question. I told her so the truth can be known." I cannot thank you enough for all of your wonderful help. I cannot find the words to adequately express my sincere appreciation.

Hope to see Russ and Virginia soon as I will be heading north shortly after the convention and they are going to Minnesota with me for some good ole fishing. Virginia and I are fanatics on fishing. Russ is content to puff his pipe and ~~sm~~ net our fish. They are such dear friends - I don't know what I would do without them.

So glad you and all that water has you on the road to health again. Please continue in that direction. I understand totally your comment on middle-age creeping up on you. There are times (getting more and more frequent) when I am startled to see a strange aging woman in my mirrors - especially in the mornings.

Again, thank you, thank you, thank you!! With every good wish,

Sincerely,

Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

July 2, 1986

National ADBC - Dear friends,

I read in the June QUAN that George vonPeterffy spoke at the Orlando National Convention on the medical experiments at Mukden POW Camp. My husband, Charles J. Lewis, died 2½ years ago. He was at Mukden and a friend of his told me they had been subjected to these experiments. I'm trying to find out the truth and would like very much to get a copy of Mr. vonPeterffy's speech. I don't have his address but have enclosed a letter to him with my check for costs in sending me a copy of the speech together with a stamped envelope and request that you forward it on to him.

I will be eternally grateful for your help in this matter.

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

ADBC is the American Defenders of Bataan and Corregidor.

July 3, 1986

Dear Mr. vonPeterffy,

I read in the Q'AN that you spoke in Orlando on the medical experiments at Mukden POW Camp. My husband, Charles J. Lewis, died 2½ years ago. He was at Mukden and a friend of his told me they had been subjected to these experiments. I've been working to find out the truth in this matter ever since. It's like continually hitting my head on a brick wall, but I keep trying.

I'm enclosing my check for \$5 to cover costs of your sending me a copy of your speech and what information you have. Please let me know any additional costs and I'll send it along.

I've obtained the 3 books written by Morimura Seichi, Akuma no Hoshoku (The Devil's Gluttony) - all in Japanese. Not available in English. A priest friend in Japan is trying to obtain a copy of an article in the Japanese newspaper "Yomiuri Shimbun" of Dec. 7, 1985 concerning this matter. Also I've just read the English translation of the novel, based on fact re vivisection of POWs by Shusaku Endo, "The Sea and Poison". Douglas Applegate has promised to send me a transcript of the hearings when completed.

I would be most grateful for any information you can give me.

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone: - 813/377-0111

GEORGE VON PETERFFY

19 July 1986

Lysle V. Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Florida 33582
USA

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

I am writing you from my home in Germany.

First of all let me return your check.

Secondly let me tell you that regretfully my copy of my remarks was borrowed by a reporter in Florida at the conention and never returned. But I should add that since I could not obtain any information about the Unit 731 Germ warfare experiments carried out by the Japanese at Panfin south of Mukden, most of my information came from the British Thames Television Co. which did produce a documentary on this subject. I have not seen the documentary. But I talked to several of their researchers. They were not of terribly much help. But there were four Americans mentioned in the documentary who were veterans of the Pacific Campaigns and captured and taken to Panfin.

Mr. Ralph Levenberg who is one of the officers of the ABBC has ordered a copy of this film and he should have it by now. He is the person to contact for more information because he will have virtually all of what I have scratched together myself.

Germ warfare is a highly classified activity for our government and apparently no one wants to tell anyone anything about it. Least of all do we want to admit that we let off Japanese who engaged in such experiments in return for their information. Nor are we willing it seems to compensate the men who suffered as a result of the experiments or their families. I think it is most unfair. In fact I think it is outrageous. But I suppose because it was apparent that I felt this way I could not get much information about any of our people near Washington.

I am sorry that I cannot help you much more than this. I shall keep your name on file and if I run across anything I shall let you know.

Thanks very much for writing and do call or write to Mr. Levenberg. I do not have it. But you can obtain it from Elmer Long, P.O. Box 2052 New Bern NC 28561 2052. Tel: (919) 637-4033.

George von Peterffy

PAT WILLIAMS
MONTANA, WESTERN DISTRICT

MAJORITY DEPUTY WHIP

COMMITTEES:

BUDGET

CHAIRMAN
TASK FORCE

ON HUMAN RESOURCES

EDUCATION AND LABOR

CHAIRMAN

SELECT EDUCATION

SUBCOMMITTEES:

ELEMENTARY, SECONDARY AND

VOCATIONAL EDUCATION

EMPLOYMENT OPPORTUNITIES

LABOR STANDARDS

POSTSECONDARY EDUCATION



Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, DC 20515

August 14, 1986

2457 RAYBURN BUILDING
WASHINGTON, DC 20515
(202) 225-3211

DISTRICT OFFICES:

BUTTE

(406) 723-4404

FINLEN COMPLEX

59701

HELENA

(406) 443-7878

32 N. LAST CHANCE GULCH

59801

MISSOULA

(406) 549-5550

302 W. BROADWAY

59802

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Florida 33582

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

I wanted to drop you this note and follow up on my previous correspondence to you on the upcoming oversight hearing on the issue of experimentation performed on captive American soldiers and civilians.

The House Veterans Affairs Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance has agreed to hear the matter and to determine the extent to which those POWs have been compensated. The Subcommittee has scheduled this Congressional hearing for September 17, 1986 in Room 334 of the Cannon House Office Building here in Washington D.C. The hearing will begin at 9 o'clock and is, of course, open to the public.

I am pleased to see the Subcommittee take action on this very important issue.

Best regards.

Sincerely,

Pat Williams

September 30, 1986

Hon. Pat Williams
2457 Rayburn Building
Washington, DC 20515

Re: Experiments on POWs at Mukden, Manchuria

Dear Congressman Williams:

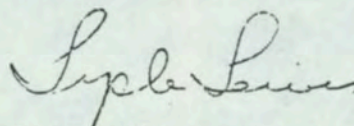
Having just returned from out of state, I found your letter of August 14 concerning the hearing on the above matter scheduled September 17. My sincere thanks for keeping me informed.

I am enclosing copies of the clippings I received from a priest friend in Japan for your information and a copy of my letter to Douglas Applegate this date for your files.

I am eternally grateful to you for the work you are doing in behalf of these men. As the truth evolves it becomes more and more shocking. No wonder my husband would say to me, "Honey, why talk about it -- no one will believe what happened." And even he was not aware of the implications and deeds done.

Again, thank you!

Sincerely,



Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J. Lewis)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

September 30, 1986

Hon. Douglas Applegate, Chairman
Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance
335 Cannon House Office Building
Washington, DC 20515

RE: Experiments on POWs at Mukden, Manchuria

Dear Sir:

My sincere thanks for your letter of June 11 informing me you will send me a transcript of hearings on the above matter if and when hearings are held.

I have just received the enclosed clippings from a priest friend of mine in Japan. You may already have this information but in case you don't, I am sending you what I have in case it will help.

I have obtained the 3 volumes of THE DEVIL'S GLUTTONY (Japanese title AKUMA NO HOSHOKU by Morimura Seiichi) documenting the facts. It is not available in English but I hope some day to get it translated. If you need it, I'll send them to you personally so you can return them to me when finished. The book by Endo entitled THE SEA AND POISON is available in English - a novel based on fact of certain vivisections performed on POWs. I got it from the local library so it is available.

I received word of the September 17th hearing just yesterday when I returned from out of state. If I receive any further information I will send it on to you.

My eternal thanks to you for trying to determine the facts in this matter. My husband and his POW friends were subjected to this - no wonder the doctors could not determine causes for problems. As one doctor said to him before his death, "I've never seen anything like that in my entire career. I swear I don't know what the hell it is."

Sincerely,

Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J. Lewis)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone: 813/377-0111

enc

DEMOCRATS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY, MISSISSIPPI
 DON EDWARDS, CALIFORNIA
 BOB EDGAR, PENNSYLVANIA
 DOUGLAS APPLEGATE, OHIO
 RICHARD C. SHELBY, ALABAMA
 DAN MICA, FLORIDA
 THOMAS A. DASCHLE, SOUTH DAKOTA
 WAYNE DOWDY, MISSISSIPPI
 LANE EVANS, ILLINOIS
 MARCY KAPTUR, OHIO
 ALAN B. MOLLOHAN, WEST VIRGINIA
 TIMOTHY J. PENNY, MINNESOTA
 HARLEY O. STAGGERS, JR., WEST VIRGINIA
 J. ROY ROWLAND, GEORGIA
 JOHN BRYANT, TEXAS
 JAMES J. FLORIO, NEW JERSEY
 KENNETH J. GRAY, ILLINOIS
 PAUL E. KANJORSKI, PENNSYLVANIA
 TOMMY F. ROBINSON, ARKANSAS

MACK FLEMING

CHIEF COUNSEL AND STAFF DIRECTOR

REPUBLICANS

JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT, ARKANSAS
 CHALMERS F. WYLLIE, OHIO
 ELWOOD HILLIS, INDIANA
 GERALD B.H. SOLOMON, NEW YORK
 BOB MCEWEN, OHIO
 CHRISTOPHER H. SMITH, NEW JERSEY
 DAN BURTON, INDIANA
 DON SUNDQUIST, TENNESSEE
 MICHAEL BILIRAKIS, FLORIDA
 NANCY LEE JOHNSON, CONNECTICUT
 GUY V. MOLINARI, NEW YORK
 THOMAS J. RIDGE, PENNSYLVANIA
 WILLIAM M. HENDON, NORTH CAROLINA
 JOHN G. ROWLAND, CONNECTICUT

NINETY-NINTH CONGRESS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY
 CHAIRMAN

U.S. House of Representatives

COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS

335 CANNON HOUSE OFFICE BUILDING

Washington, DC 20515

October 16, 1986

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
 1804 Springwood Drive
 Sarasota, Florida 33582

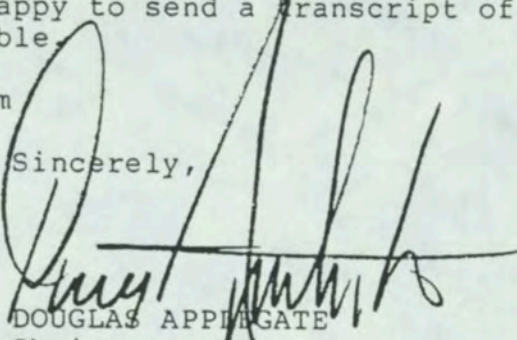
Dear Mrs. Lewis:

Thank you for your letter of September 30, and the enclosed information on the prisoners of war who were held in Manchuria.

I am requesting your information be made a part of the Committee file so that it will be available to all Members of the Committee. Hearings were held on this issue on September 17, and as I promised, I will be happy to send a transcript of this hearing when it becomes available.

With every good wish, I am

Sincerely,


 DOUGLAS APPLEGATE
 Chairman
 Subcommittee on Compensation,
 Pension and Insurance

DA: jr

Stan Sommers, Past National Commander of American Ex-Prisoners of War, and Chairman for many years of MedSearch - the AX-POW Committee that digs out medical facts that will help POWs cope with their many health problems. Over the years, Stan has become a dear friend.

Lines

m

LYSLE LEWIS

9/30/86

Dear Stan,

Here is the information I mentioned to you about the experiments on Mukden POWs. I keep digging and finding, thanks to a priest who is a relative of a dear friend of mine and is serving his church in Japan. He is of great help.

All the enclosed are self-explanatory. If any questions about anything, call me. Sorry we couldn't connect in Wisconsin, but looking forward to seeing you and Peggy and getting to know you both better in the near future.

With every good wish,

The Jackson convention was a thrill - my first national convention.

1986-1987 NATIONAL OFFICERS

W Curtis Musten, Sr
233 Methodist Drive
Winston-Salem, NC 27105
NATIONAL COMMANDER

Albert J. Bland
738 Joppa Farm Road
Joppa, MD 21085
NATIONAL SR. VICE COMMANDER

NATIONAL JR. VICE COMMANDERS

John S. Edwards
889 Randall Road
Niskayuna, NY 12309

Milton M. Moore, Sr.
6770 Edgemere #164
El Paso, TX 79925

Melvin L. Routt
1025 East Critchett Road
Tracy, CA 95376

Clydie J. Morgan
3201 East Pioneer Parkway #40
Arlington, TX 76010
NATIONAL ADJUTANT

Sally M. Morgan
3201 East Pioneer Parkway #40
Arlington, TX 76010
NATIONAL TREASURER

NATIONAL DIRECTORS

PNC Orlo G. Natvig
SR. NATIONAL DIRECTOR

NORTHEAST REGION

Charles A. Burton
Thomas P. Culkin
James P. Scahill

SOUTHEAST REGION

Clyde W. Bradley, Jr.
William C. Chuber

NORTH CENTRAL REGION

Peter L. Choma
John I. Krecij

SOUTH CENTRAL REGION

Ronald S. Allen, Jr.
James B. Manford, Sr.

NORTHWEST REGION

Francis W. Agnes
V. Ivalene Powers

SOUTHWEST REGION

Leo L. Callegos, Sr.
Albert Gertel

DIRECTORS-AT-LARGE

William L. Fornes
Frank B. Hawkins
Robert E. Sparks
Slavko Vasiljevic
Charles O. Wilber
Charles M. Williams

APPOINTED OFFICERS

Dr. Charles S. Prigmore
923 Overlook Road North
Tuscaloosa, AL 35406
LEGISLATIVE OFFICER

Kenneth L. Jones
1012 Goodwin Drive
Plano, TX 75023

DIRECTOR, SERVICE OFFICERS

PNC Harold Page
3709 Hotsko Road East
Buckley, WA 98321
INTERNATIONAL COORDINATOR

PNC Stanley G. Sommers
1410 Adler Road
Marshfield, WI 54449
MED SEARCH CHAIRMAN

PNC D.C. Wimberly
711 - 10th Street Northwest
Springhill, LA 71075
JUDGE-ADVOCATE

Sue Langseth
700 West Wabash
Olathe, KS 66061
EX-POW BULLETIN EDITOR

NATIONAL CAPITAL OFFICE
VARO Room 9320
941 North Capital Street
Washington, DC 20421



American Ex-Prisoners of War

CONGRESSIONALLY CHARTERED

NATIONAL HEADQUARTERS

(817) 649-AXPW

3201 EAST PIONEER PARKWAY, SUITE 40 • ARLINGTON, TX 76010

Dear Lyell

Oct. 23. 86

Thank you for your letter of 9/3/86 with -enclosure about the experiments at Mubden. After reading -them I am much better informed, and we all should thank you for digging all this information up. I do know that several times the Japanese would use glass rods to check for dysentery, and in the camp was in Honshu (Japan) Camp was called Namme no 2nd, at -highst I would come in from work and have a high temperature and they would give me a injection in my arm so that the next day my temperature would be gone, so they could send me back to work. But some of this was biological experiments to my knowledge.

a year ago the House Veterans affairs committee called me and wanted to know if I had any facts on these biological experiments and they call again about a month ago and I told them no, I was also called in the past by them.

WE EXIST TO HELP THOSE WHO CANNOT HELP THEMSELVES.

London Times and had to tell them the
thing, no hard facts on Americans.

In the past years I did talk to
Rodrigues Sr. and Pappy Wheeler who is
now dead - and they told me about the B. loss
was the Japanese put in they return and about
the Japanese putting a feather under the
nose with something on it and they had
to breath it in - they were both POW at
-
In enclosing a writt up a Rep. applica-
- was in thousands - 11/20/44.

All we just had (3) Ex. POW Japan
- in Wisconsin they was. Floyd Arnold who was
on the U.S.S. Houston, Sere Florklin who was in
Air Force then Sere and his wife and daughter
went out Ft. Meyer, Fl. and Gordon Fox
who was on U.S.S. Annapolis.

You Peggy and I would of like to see
you this summer, and we do it up of you and
I agree with you on hoping something good
will come out of the investigation and the
- you will get just compensation.

Love you

148 - Tom Peggy
Keep up the good work for us.

Survivors To Describe Japanese Germ Warfare Tests

LONDON (AP)—Survivors will describe how the Japanese conducted deadly germ warfare experiments on hundreds of American prisoners during World War II in a television documentary to be shown this week, newspapers reported Sunday.

The documentary says the Japanese experimenters escaped U.S. prosecution by sharing their data, the reports said.

The program is to be shown in Britain on Tuesday. Newspapers on Sunday published details of the hour-long documentary by TVS, a regional arm of Independent Television, Britain's independent commercial network.

The tests were carried out on American, British and Australian soldiers at a secret Japanese prisoner-of-war camp at Mukden in northeast China, former soldiers who said they survived such tests were quoted as telling TVS.

The war veterans were not named in any of the accounts. TVS spokesman Gordon Tucker said half a dozen

American ex-POWs were interviewed. He said they were not identified in the film because their names were not considered important to British viewers, but the makers of the film had the names in their records.

The purported victims were quoted as saying the tests were performed by a secret branch of the Japanese Imperial Army known as Unit 731, and that the tests included injecting U.S., British and Australian prisoners with deadly germs and then charting their illnesses before they died.

The documentary apparently offered the first descriptions from witnesses of the alleged experiments.

An October 1981 article in The Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, a U.S. publication, first suggested that the Japanese carried out experiments on American prisoners in northern China.

The article quoted a 1956 Federal Bureau of Investigation memorandum to substantiate the charges, and

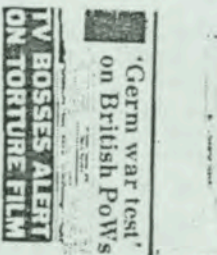
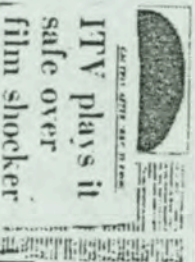
said U.S. authorities chose not to try the Japanese involved, accepting their test data instead.

No survivor of the alleged experiments ever surfaced. It was not clear why witnesses would have waited until now to appear.

According to newspaper accounts, Tuesday's documentary will include interviews with witnesses describing

ing how as many as 3,000 Japanese petty criminals and dissidents were dissected alive, frozen to death in refrigerated chambers, or tied up and left in fields where mustard gas bombs were exploded.

A similar account was given in 1982 by a Japanese best-seller, "The Devil's Chintony," The book, by Seiichi Morimura, described the



TV BOSS WHO SENT A SHOCK FILM TO HOWE

THE EVIL DOCTORS OF DEATH

U.K. HEADLINES—These headlines were carried in London papers Sunday about a TV film to be shown on Tuesday in the United Kingdom on Japanese germ warfare experiments in China during WWII—AP.

731st unit, saying it killed as many as 3,000 Chinese, Soviet and Korean prisoners in germ experiments.

The documentary did not say how many Allied prisoners of war died at Mukden in the alleged experiments, according to the press reports. The exact period of time in which the experiments purportedly took place was not given.

The documentary, according to accounts in The Observer and The Sunday Telegraph newspapers, said more than 1,000 American soldiers who survived the infamous "death marches" after Japan overran the Philippines in 1942 were among those shipped to Mukden, along with about 100 British and Australian prisoners of war.

In the winter of 1942, out of 1,450 prisoners at Mukden, 430 died, mostly from dysentery and paratyphoid, the documentary said.

TVS lists the names of Japanese scientists who allegedly were granted immunity from prosecution for war

crimes in exchange for sharing the results of their experiments with U.S. intelligence and bacteriological warfare officers in the months after Japan formally surrendered on Sept. 2, 1945.

Tucker said the interviewees included Col. Murray Sanders, who arranged the immunity deal on behalf of Gen. Douglas MacArthur. He said Sanders was filmed admitting that in retrospect he believed the deal was a mistake.

U.S. authorities withheld all evidence of Unit 731 from the trials of Japanese war criminals in Tokyo, which ended in April 1948, TVS claims.

The program, titled "Unit 731: Did the Emperor Know?" said two decrees by Japan's leader, Emperor Hirohito, led to the creation of a germ warfare headquarters at Pingfan, 563 kilometers northeast of Mukden in Manchuria, but it was unclear whether he knew of the alleged wartime experiments on humans.

DY 85.8.13

Voices From Within

MON 9-5-82

With Ann Nakano, Staff Writer

(11)

Seiichi Morimura: Novelist



Seiichi Morimura

Seiichi Morimura, a Japanese writer of mystery stories, caused a stir in Japan when together with Masaki Shimosato he published Volume One of Akuma no Hoshoku (Devil's Gluttony), detailing how members of the 731 division of the Japanese Army, led by General Shiro Ishii, performed biological experiments on human guinea pigs in China and Manchuria. The first volume also revealed the Japanese plan to destroy America by the use of germ warfare, a plan that would have been put into operation had it not been for the bombs of Hiroshima and Nagasaki.

In Volume Two, Morimura and Shimosato went deeper into what happened in places like Harbin, where scientists and doctors gathered to benefit from the rare opportunity of using human beings on which to practice their research. The information is gathered from the aggressors, men who were part of the horrendous scheme but who could not live easily with their consciences after the war.

Some men in the 731 division committed suicide on Japan's defeat; others waited, dreading what the Americans might do to them. The Americans did very little, for an incredible bargain was struck that set most of the men free in exchange for details of the experiments. Some of the doctors and scientists involved became leading members in Japanese society. A remaining

few were transferred to other divisions conducting the same kind of research, like the 16th Water Supply division to which Governor Shunichi Suzuki of Tokyo belonged. But Morimura says his findings are not being published to punish individuals. He feels Japan acted as one, and therefore each individual Japanese must share the blame. His third volume, which will be published after a visit to Harbin, will chronicle reports from relatives of the victims since there were no survivors.

"It was by coincidence that I first started researching the activities of the 731 division. In one of my stories which was being serialized in Akahata, the Japan Communist Party newspaper, I mentioned the 731 regiment using information I had obtained from published books. Survivors of the regiment telephoned me to point out some mistakes and said if I would like to know the real face of the 731 division they would be pleased to cooperate with me. We met and they began to tell their stories. I was horrified. After researching further, the real face of the 731 division began to unfold. I felt it was a face that should be shown to the world.

"What was so amazing about these atrocities was the fact that they were not committed by professional soldiers but by

doctors, scientists, physicists and medical researchers. These war crimes were committed by civilians. If this could happen before, then it could happen again. General Ishii started collecting these civilians in 1933 and the experiments started in 1938.

"General Ishii was an ambitious military doctor. He wanted to prove that doctors could be used in the front line as a main force. This was the main reason the 731 regiment was formed. The second reason was that at the time Japan did not possess fatal weapons so it had to invent one: Germ warfare was a weapon that could be cultivated at very low cost so it could compete with America and Europe.

"Japan is a concentric society that is weak in the history of individuals. It is a vertical society constructed so that priorities pile up. Before the war the Emperor was the head of that vertical society, so Japanese people pledged loyalty to the Emperor before their parents, homes and companies. Nowadays that first priority is pledged to the company.

"After the publication of this book in Japan, there were many responses and reflections. Most people supported publication, saying they should know the shame of their history. What is surprising about the book is that it is written not from the position of the victims but of the aggressors. I believe the Pacific War was fought aggressively by the Japanese and it should be reported like that. We Japanese have always said we were victims. We must tell ourselves the truth.

"It is important we understand so that these atrocities will not be repeated. I wrote it hoping another war would be prevented. Some people criticised me for publishing this book, saying I was a traitor to Japan to disclose those things to the world. They said I was a

disgrace. But I think this attitude comes from bad education, which is why the textbook controversy must be solved and the textbooks rewritten. This kind of attitude is a disgrace. It is not disgraceful to record and admit the faults and misconduct Japan committed and pledge never to repeat those things, but it is a disgrace to conceal and hide the faults and atrocities.

"I believe there is already a difference between the Japanese of today and the Japanese of yesterday. Young people of today have been baptised in democracy and know the importance of the individual. They would not die for the sake of their country today. Those who pledge such ultranationalism are easily seized by the yoke of fascism. I sincerely hope the Japanese people of today are composed of a different quality; there is a very importance difference between military fascism and Japan's economic development because during the war the Japanese people were not allowed a single slice of freedom; they had to obey on threat of death.

"We have to keep apologizing for our action to the world. It is important because we can no longer live by ourselves, we are heavily dependent on the world. Japan's economic status was attained with the help of the rest of the world. We have to prove by our behavior that we are sorry. I don't know how we are going to do that.

"Perhaps first we could revise the textbooks. Secondly, we have to show our shame at allowing ex-war criminals to hold power in Japan. Kishi's (former Premier Nobusuki Kishi) influence is still strong, and other members of that division are at the top of their professions. It is wrong.

"Another problem is the influence of the Japanese government over the mass media. I am not a communist, but I had to run my series of stories in Akahata because no other media would accept them."

(NB: Gen Ishii died of throat cancer in 1959).

— Findings May Have Been Used in Korea, Vietna

'Legacy of Lt. Gen. Ishii' Lives On — Wi

By MASANORI TABATA

New discoveries have poured forth in the past few years concerning the mysteries surrounding a special Imperial Japanese Army force, the 731st Unit, as a result of the U.S. Freedom of Information Act.

Declassified documents in the possession of the Pentagon indicate that the "legacy of Lt. Gen. Shiro Ishii" has been carried on by a U.S. bio-bacteriological warfare (BW) research center, adding fuel to speculation that some of the "findings" of the 731st Unit were put to a practical test on the battlefield during the Korean War of the early 1950s and the Vietnam War of the 1970s.

Informed sources point to the need to bring to light still-classified data on the 731st Unit's research believed to be in the possession of the Pentagon. Otherwise, they argue, the specter of World War II could be raised at any moment now that U.S. President Ronald Reagan has given the green light to production of two types of chemical weapons to "deter" the use of similar weapons by the Soviet military.

Lt. Gen. Ishii, under whose command the ultrasecret gerin warfare unit conducted research and experiments to develop an "ultimate weapon," had handed over to the U.S. military "some 80 percent" of his data after giving in to repeated American requests and threats, according to Ishii's eldest daughter.

Ishii and a majority of other top-echelon leaders of the special force, officially the 731st Epidemic Prevention and Water Supply Headquarters, not only escaped the gallows by giving up their findings, but also made careers in medicine or even government after the war.

Intense U.S. Interest

After about two years of "questioning" by U.S. military experts, including Lt. Col. Arvo T. Thompson (V.C.) of the U.S. Army, and Dr. (Lt. Col.) Norbert H. Fell, both from Fort Detrick, Maryland, Ishii was assured immunity from any prosecution, despite the fact that the 731st Unit had committed atrocities, using "prisoners of war" of various nationalities as human guinea pigs.

Originally established in 1930, the U.S. Army Health Service Command at Fort Detrick was transformed into a germ warfare research center responsible for the development of biological and chemical (BC) weapons with the outbreak of World War II. In 1969, it was reorganized as a special institute to conduct studies on contagious diseases.

Researchers pursuing the

mysteries of the Kwangtung Army's germ warfare force, including popular mystery writer Seichi Morimura, believe the body of the bio-bacteriological knowledge provided by Ishii and his aides has been expanded at Fort Detrick.

As early as 1946, the Soviet military authorities had demanded that the General Headquarters of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers (GHQ/SCAP) turn over Ishii and his staff for questioning and possible trial. But the Cold War was already in progress, and the "value" of the information offered, if not voluntarily, by Ishii was so great that the U.S. military agreed to make a deal.

Naito: 'An Able Guy!'

Among Ishii's trusted aides and subordinates were some who later became prominent in the nation's medical circles including the late Dr. Ryoichi Naito, chairman of the Green Cross Corporation, the Osaka-based pharmaceutical firm specializing in the manufacture of interferon, plasma and artificial blood.

"Of Dr. Naito, my father used to say: 'He's quite an able guy, indeed!' But whether Naito was his most trusted aide — that's another story," Harumi Ishii says.

After the dishandment of the unit following the war's end in 1945, Naito eventually broke away from his former commander. He established the Japan Blood Bank, forerunner of the Green Cross Corporation, in 1950. He died in July this year.

Ishii was in command of the 731st Unit between 1936 and 1942, to be succeeded by Maj. Gen. Masaji Kitano. He took command of the unit again in March 1945 until August when the war ended.

Kitano, a leading expert on plasma, cooperated with Naito to establish today's Green Cross.

The brigade-sized unit, headquartered on the outskirts of Harbin, northeast China, maintained several detachments elsewhere in China. One such detachment was deployed in Mukden, also in northeast China, then known as Manchuria or Manchukuo.

In June this year, an accusation was made in testimony at a public hearing before the U.S. House Committee on Veterans' Affairs that a considerable number of American prisoners of war were used as guinea pigs by the unit.

American soldiers, captured by Japanese troops in the Philippines in 1942, were transported to a Japanese POW camp in Mukden, where they were subjected to a series of experiments, according to the testimony.

The testimony was made by Greg Rodriguez, Jr., from Mis-



Lt. Gen. Shiro Ishii, founder and commanding officer of the notorious 731st Unit of the Kwangtung Army, in full dress uniform and decorations. The photo was taken shortly after the end of World War II and shows him minus his customary mustache.

soula, Mont., chairman of an organization called Ex-POW Vision Quest. His father is one of the estimated 4,000 former U.S. soldiers still alive today who spent time in Japanese POW camps during the Pacific War.

The organization is crusading for public support to help ex-POWs obtain better health treatment as well as compensation for their suffering as detainees.

"Gen. Douglas A. MacArthur left his men in 1942 and sealed their fate in May of 1946 by promising Gen. Ishii immunity from prosecution if he would surrender the records of the 731st Unit," Rodriguez said. He charged that "this collaboration between MacArthur and Ishii is unsavory to say the least," and called it a "callous, culpable conspiracy... an American holocaust."

In a recent interview with the Tokyo Broadcasting System (TBS), W.W. "Pappy" Whelchel of Tulsa, Okla., said he was transported to the Manchurian camp via Okinawa and then Pusan, Korea, along with 1,400 other Americans. Only about 1,000 of them survived the war, he said.

He recounted that inmates were injected with unknown substances, sprayed in the face with "what looked like an atomizer," and subjected to various kinds of "medical tests."

He also said that after being liberated from the POW camp, all the inmates were taken first to the Philippines and asked by the U.S. military authorities to sign a statement swearing to maintain secrecy about their experiences during detention. They were told that any instance of breaching the oath would mean court-martial, he said.

There is no hard evidence that the American POWs had been used in germ warfare experiments at the camp, but not a few former detainees have suffered from high fevers and other symptoms since receiving "shots" in China. The mystery is yet to be solved.

The members of the 731st Unit formed at least three different secret associations after the war and have met at regular intervals. All the repatriated members were instructed by Lt. Gen. Ishii himself to never reveal their background or service career. They were also told not to seek any post in public service, and were advised to live "in the shadows" for the sake of the nation and their own welfare.

It was quite ironic that almost all the lower-ranking members of the unit strictly observed the general's instructions while top-echelon members, including Ishii himself, did not.

Most pursued medical careers, possibly utilizing the data obtained through the secret experiments. A considerable number of the senior officers and researchers later became leading figures.

In the case of lower-echelon members of the unit, the saying proved wrong and honesty was not necessarily the best policy.

"They were cheated and double-crossed by their superiors, especially Ishii," says author Morimura.

Morimura reported in his book "Akuma no Hoshoku"

(The Devil's Gluttony, Part 1) that a considerable number of low-ranking ex-members still refer to Ishii as "The Old Man" in an affectionate manner, and there prevails a rather strong sense of comradeship among them. Some even call him a "war hero," according to Morimura's book.

Members of the unit are scattered throughout the country today, from Hokkaido to Kagoshima, living in constant fear of exposure, according to Morimura and co-author Masaki Shimamoto.

There were more than 2,600 researchers of various rank and "assistants" to do the "dirty work."

The U.S. military had been aware of the existence of the ultrasecret 731st Unit even before the end of the war.

Such experts on germ warfare as Dr. Fell and Lt. Col. Thompson not only interrogated Ishii and his aides, but also asked civilian doctors who had been recruited into the unit to submit detailed reports on their "research."

Ishii outlined for the interrogators plans for nine different types of porcelain bombs designed and manufactured by the unit for aerial germ warfare. According to reports sent back to Washington, the unit had manufactured some 3,000 porcelain bombs — ceramic containers to be charged with germ-infected fleas and other insects. There was every evidence that some of the bombs had actually been dropped on populated areas in China.

GERM BOMBS, FISH POISON

Through interrogation, the U.S. military learned that fear of retaliation with chemical weapons played a major role in preventing a full-scale germ war against either the Soviet Union or the U.S. In addition, an acute shortage of materiel, not to mention heavy losses of aircraft, discouraged the wide use of germ weapons, declassified Pentagon papers show.

The 731st Unit used not only bio-bacteriological weapons such as plague bacilli and cholera germs but also chemical weapons in small-scale operations against Chinese troops. Various types of poisons and gas were tested by the unit, using POWs from the undeclared Sino-Japanese war, before and after the outbreak of World War II.

One declassified document deals with unique research on tetrodotoxin, a poisonous compound obtained from the liver of *fugu* (globefish).

The English transcription of an interview with Lt. Col. Ryoichi Naito describes in detail the efforts of the Imperial Japanese Army to manufacture condensed heat-resistant *fugu* poison, according to Morimura's sequel to "The Devil's Gluttony."

Ishii's family returned to Japan together with "thousands" of dependents of the unit's personnel in late August, 1945. At about the same time, a military transport carrying personnel and bulky cargo entered Port Malzuru. Between Aug. 19 and Sept. 22 of that year, some 20 ranking members of the 731st Unit bivouaced in the compound of a shrine in Kana-

171 —

th American Help

zawa.

The shrine was virtually expropriated by them for use as a liaison office. An eyewitness account has it that two men resembling Mitsuo and Takeo Ishii, both elder brothers of Shiro Ishii who were recruited into the 731st Unit along with another brother, stayed at the "liaison office" for a brief time. However, Shiro Ishii was presumed to have gone underground, taking refuge in either his home town in Chiba Prefecture or at his home in Tokyo's Shinjuku area.

Morimura maintains that the large number of crates carried by the mysterious military vessel that reached Port Malzuru might have contained not only scientific data but also valuable cargo such as platinum ingots and gold plates hoarded by the Kwantung Army.

"I know nothing about any secret treasure. But I can tell you that our family had to sell antiques, kimonos, virtually everything in our possession that could be sold to survive in those days," Ishii's daughter says.

Gold or no gold, Morimura surmises that there was a strong possibility that the most important of the data was smuggled into Japan from China in the confusion that followed the nation's surrender to the Allied powers despite instructions from Tokyo to destroy all evidence of atrocities.

The bulk of the "legacy of Lt. Gen. Ishii" was thus passed on to the U.S. military through two years of exhaustive interrogations.

Chinese Charge

Then, early in 1952, a year and a half after the outbreak of the Korean War, the state-run New China News Agency reported that U.S. forces in Korea were engaged in germ warfare against Chinese and North Korean troops as well as the civilian population of North Korea, claiming it had evidence to support the allega-

tion.

The dispatch also cited that the U.S. military had seen "Shiro Ishii, Wajiro Yamatsu, Masaji Kitano and other war criminals" to keep wage germ warfare.

Both the U.S. Forces Command and the U.N. Forces Command issued statements categorically denying charges. But sometimes the People's Daily, the Chinese Communist Party organ, carried an article and photos of "germ bombs" and "terea-infested insects of Chinese origin" allegedly dropped by U.S. bombers on populated target areas in North Korea and north China.

Close Resemblance

Morimura took note of a fact that some of the graphs showed "germ bombs" which closely resemble "Uji-type aerial bomb" signed and manufactured by the 731st Unit. Photographs of the bombs are still displayed at a Beijing military museum while the plans for the "Uji-type bomb" are being kept at the Pentagon.

Former senior researchers of the 731st Unit deny Ishii or their former colleagues could have been in Korea at the time. "It's more than fantastic, it's absurd," said one.

Morimura, however, says "Both the whereabouts and deeds of Shiro Ishii and others during the Korean War remain a mystery. To solve it, it will be necessary to write a new chapter after doing research in China and Korea."

Morimura and Shimamoto who previously served on the editorial staff of the Japanese Communist Party's organ *Akuma*, announced last week that the Chinese government had granted them permission to conduct on-site research and interviews with relatives of those who fell victim to the atrocities of the "devil's gade."

Ralph 702-827-3191 *make me -*

know? 10/14/86

Ralph Levenberg
~~PO Box 337~~
~~Henderson, NV 89015~~

2716 Eastshore Pl.
Reno, NV 89509

Dear Ralph, 702-827-3191

In recent correspondence with George VonPeterffy he suggested I contact you. He spoke re Unit 731 Germ Warfare experiments. He said you were trying to get a copy of the documentary by British Thames TV. If you succeed, I am willing to pay whatever the cost for a copy of the film..

Through a priest friend in Japan I've obtained the Japanese texts of The Devil's Gluttony, and a number of news clippings about this subject, all of which I've forwarded to Pat Williams of Montana and Doug Applegate, chairman of the committee holding hearings now (at least one was scheduled for Sept. 17).

After ~~my~~ husband's death 11/17/83, I learned from a fellow POW friend of his that they were subjects of these. I don't think he was aware of the reasons for certain things - for instance the feathers in the noses, etc. which he told. He told me of the plane coming down over the Mukden camp to take picture and how he was severely beaten by a guard with an encased sabre because he responded "good" in Japanese to the guards question of what he thought about the plane. You can imagine my feelings when I am watching it on 20/20 over 40 years later, 2 years after Chuck's death, and know he is among those pictured and being beaten. That even more strengthened my resolve to do my best to get the facts before those who might help the few who survive.

If you can obtain the film, let me know the cost and I'll send my check immediately.

Many thanks,

Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J.)
1804 Springwood Dr.

*will send me film to copy
when he can find it. just wanted
4 more.*

write back 10-28 to see Ralph

Investigation Begins into Japanese Experiments on WWII POWs

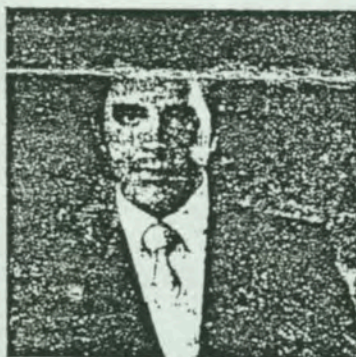
Current Health Problems May Relate to Detention

The issue of possible biological experiments conducted on prisoners held by the Japanese during World War II warrants "a further review and a search for documentation" to substantiate the claims of former American prisoners held in Manchuria, according to Rep. Douglas Applegate (D-OH).

Numberous personal accounts of possible germ warfare experiments being conducted on prisoners held at the Mukden camp in Manchuria have been circulating since the end of the war in 1945. These allegations have recently been supported by several books and television documentaries along with charges that the United States government found out about the experiments after the war but acted to withhold information and documents produced by the Japanese who were directly involved in experiments.

While the subcommittee has no jurisdiction over possible war crimes related to this issue, Applegate is interested in seeing that former prisoners who were held at

the Mukden camp and who are experiencing health problems specifically related to their captivity will receive utmost consideration and that compensation, if war-



Rep. Douglas Applegate (D-OH) chair of the House Veterans Affairs Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance.

records do exist that would validate the claims of current health problems voiced by American veterans who were held by the Japanese," Applegate said following an oversight hearing conducted last Wednesday by the House Veterans' Affairs Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance, of which he is chairman.

The hearing, held at the request of Rep. Pat Williams (D-MT), included testimony from an official from the Department of the Army who said that roughly 200 pages of background documents related to experiments by the Japanese were obtained following the war. Other war documents possibly dealing with experiments were eventually returned to the Japanese government because of problems in translating the information into English, according to Dr. John H. Hatcher, Archivist of the Army.

Additional testimony was heard from Frank James of California, a former prisoner of the Mukden camp, and Greg Rodriguez of Oklahoma, the son of an American prisoner held at the camp. ★

ranted, will be made to these veterans.

"I'm dedicated to finding out if

*My God -
I don't believe
this - what
incompetent mismanagement!
I think they had to
keep it quiet. The one can
be that stupid!*

2/12/87

Ralph Levenberg
2716 Eastshire Place
Reno, NV 89509

Dear Ralph,

Many thanks for your phone call last year - can't remember the date - October, November or December, re the POW film I was trying to locate and also about the medical experiments on the Mukden POWs where my husband was. I did manage to get all the printed materials into the hands of the Congressional Committee investigating this and received word from Doug Applegate that it was made an official part of the proceedings and every member received copies. Thank God.

The reason I'm writing now is this. The other night at 11:30 p.m. I was awakened by a phone call from a POW friend telling me the film "P.O.W." was on TV. I got up and watched to the conclusion at 1:30 a.m. You are a vital part of that film. As the widow of a POW and as secretary of our Tri-County Chapter AXPOW here in Florida I called the station manager the next day asking it be run again in prime time and also trying to get a copy. He said they'd try to run it again, but couldn't give me a copy because of copyrights, etc. I had a brand new VCR that wasn't hooked up yet and was totally frustrated. Now - my BIG question: You told me you had a copy of the film I wrote you about previously. Is this the same film? I presume it is. You weren't able to find it as you had just moved when you called me. Several of our POW members have VCRs so we can make prints if we can just get ahold of a copy. May I impose on you to help me get a copy for our members and, of course, I want a copy for myself as I am amassing all of this information for posterity and for my grandson to have when he is grown. Don't ever want the world to forget what you guys suffered.

So, if you can find your print -- Would you??? I would be eternally grateful. I'm enclosing my check for \$5 to cover any postage costs and will certainly send whatever other costs that are involved.

Hope to get an opportunity to meet you and your wife some day. If ever to Florida, be sure to look me up.

Most sincerely,

Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J.)
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, FL 33582

phone: 813/377-0111





AMERICAN DEFENDERS OF BATAAN & CORREGIDOR, INC.

(INCLUDING ANY UNIT OF FORCE OF THE ASIATIC FLEET, PHILIPPINE
ARCHIPELAGO, WAKE ISLAND, MARIANNA ISLAND, AND DUTCH EAST INDIES)

KENNETH CURLEY
National Commander
221 Evaline Street
Pittsburgh, PA 15235

HENRY WILAYTO
Senior Vice-Commander
91-A Staffordshire Lane
Concord Village, MA 01742

CHARLES T. BLOSKIS
Junior Vice Commander
473 Norton Street
Pittsburgh, PA 15211

ELMER E. LONG, Jr.
National Secretary
Box 2052
New Bern, NC 28561-2052
919-637-4033

AUSTIN M. PATRIZIO
National Treasurer
Co-Chairman
Convention Site Committee
414 Richmond Place
Leonia, NJ 07605
201-947-9827

PAUL REUTER
Adjutant
516 Sandy Place
Oxon Hill, MD 20021

HAROLD E. FEINER
Judge Advocate
703 Allendale Drive
Hampton, VA 23369

MARK G. HERBST, M.D.
Surgeon
513 Third Street N.W.
Canton, OH 44703

REV. HERMAN C. BAUMANN
Chaplain
125 Buttercup Road
Butler, PA 15136

JOSEPH A. VATER
Editor the Quan
Co-Chairman
Convention Site Committee
18 Warbler Drive
McKees Rocks, PA 15136

JOHN EMERICK
National Service Director
6074 Pleasant Street
Finleyville, PA 15332

BEN SACCONI
Service Officer
55 Gell Street
Salinas, CA 93901

ARTHUR A. BRESSI
Historian & Special Projects Off.
11242 East Hash Knife Circle
Tucson, AR 85715

DOM F. GIANTONIO
Chairman, Necrology Committee
1107 Cambridge Court
Longwood, FL 32779

RALPH LEVENBERG
Public Relations & Legislative
P.O. Box 337
Henderson, NV 89015

PAST NATIONAL COMMANDERS

Harold Spooners
Rev. Albert D. Talbot*
James McEvoy
M/Gen. E.P. King, Jr.*
Simme Pickman
Albert Senna
Maurice Mazer
Joseph A. Vater
Lewis Goldstein*
Albert I. Cimini
Samuel M. Bloom, M.D.
Kenneth J. Stull
Harry P. Menozzi
John F. Ray
Samuel B. Moody
Arthur A. Bressi
John H. LeClair
James K. Cavanaugh
Thomas A. Hackett
Bernard Grill
Louis Sachwald
Jerome A. McDavitt*
John M. Emerick
Joseph T. Poster
John Bennett*
James D. Cantwell
Ralph Levenberg
Elmer E. Long, Jr.
Philip Arslanian
John Rowland
John Crago
Edward Jackfert
John R. Lyons

RADM. Henry W. Goodall
Honorary Commander

RADM. Alan R. McCracken, Ret.
B/Gen. LeGrande A. Diller, Ret.
B/Gen. Richard Fellows
Lt./Col. Benson Guyton
Honorary Vice - Commanders

27 February 1987

Mrs. Chales J. Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Fl. 33582

Dear Lysle:

I'm happy to hear that Congressman Applegate has included your materials into the record of those proceedings. I don't know that anything will ever be realized from your efforts, but no one can say that you didn't try. The controversy over the "testing" at the Manchurian camp is still brewing. I have attempted to get some "eye-witnesses" to come forward and talk with members of the Advisory Committee on X-POWs, but to no avail.

About the TV documentary...I think the one you saw the other night must have been "P.O.W., Americans In Enemy Hands" which is totally new. It was released on 20 January 1987. The only Tapes that I know are available are being sold by the distributor of the film...Clearwater Communications, Inc., P.O. Bx 691245, San Antonio, Tx. 78269-1245. The tape is \$44.95 per copy, plus \$3.00 for shipping. I'm sure that there must be someone in your area who taped the program. Maybe the POW chapter might pool together and purchase one of the tapes. I have a copy of the program, however, it is a 3/4 inch and can only be operated on that size machine...the VA and other agencies have that size machine.

I'm sorry that Kathie and I were unable to spend time enough to come and visit with you on our recent trip to Jacksonville. We attended an ADBC Ex. Board meeting. Of course, you live quite a way from Jacksonville.

I do hope that you are able to get a copy of the tape. Please convey my warmest regards to all of my many friends in that area. My best and since-est regards to you.

Cordially,

RALPH LEVENBERG

156

October 13, 1987

Hon. Douglas Applegate, Chairman
Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension & Insurance
335 Cannon House Office Building
Washington, D.C. 20515

Dear Chairman Applegate:

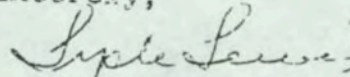
Just a year ago, in your letter of October 16, 1986, you acknowledged and thanked me for the information I had gathered for your information and use concerning the prisoners of war who were held at Mukden, Manchuria. You told me it was made a part of the file and made available to all members of the committee. That was, indeed, most rewarding to me.

You told me you would send me a copy of the transcript of the hearings when available. To date I have not received it and assumed it was not yet available. However, I just returned from the National American Ex-Prisoners of War convention in Charlotte, North Carolina and talked with several POWs who have received copies. Will you please check into this matter and see that I receive a copy also. I would be most grateful.

I have been corresponding with Dr. Brennan in Australia who is also trying to get the facts about this. He feels all those involved were killed by the Japanese. However, from various facts I've discovered, I am convinced that more were involved, but the POW so involved was not aware of the reason for certain acts of the Japanese, and therefore was unaware he was an "experiment".

Again, my thanks for your efforts. I shall look forward to receipt of the transcript.

Most sincerely,



Lysle Lewis (Mrs. Charles J. Lewis)
1804 Springwood Dr.
Sarasota, FL 34232
phone: 813/377-0111

DEMOCRATS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY, MISSISSIPPI
DON EDWARDS, CALIFORNIA
DOUGLAS APPLGATE, OHIO
DAN MICA, FLORIDA
WAYNE DOWDY, MISSISSIPPI
LANE EVANS, ILLINOIS
MARCY KAPTUR, OHIO
TIMOTHY J. PENNY, MINNESOTA
HARLEY O. STAGGERS, JR., WEST VIRGINIA
J. ROY ROWLAND, GEORGIA
JOHN BRYANT, TEXAS
JAMES J. FLORIO, NEW JERSEY
KENNETH J. GRAY, ILLINOIS
PAUL E. KANJORSKI, PENNSYLVANIA
TOMMY F. ROBINSON, ARKANSAS
CHARLES W. STENHOLM, TEXAS
CLAUDE HARRIS, ALABAMA
JOSEPH P. KENNEDY II, MASSACHUSETTS
ELIZABETH J. PATTERSON, SOUTH CAROLINA
TIM JOHNSON, SOUTH DAKOTA
JIM JONTZ, INDIANA

MACK FLEMING
CHIEF COUNSEL AND STAFF DIRECTOR

ONE HUNDREDTH CONGRESS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY
CHAIRMAN

U.S. House of Representatives

COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS

335 CANNON HOUSE OFFICE BUILDING

Washington, DC 20515

REPUBLICANS

GERALD B.H. SOLOMON, NEW YORK
JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT, ARKANSAS
CHALMERS P. WYLIE, OHIO
BOB STUMP, ARIZONA
BOB MCEWEN, OHIO
CHRISTOPHER H. SMITH, NEW JERSEY
DAN BURTON, INDIANA
MICHAEL BILIRAKIS, FLORIDA
THOMAS J. RIDGE, PENNSYLVANIA
JOHN G. ROWLAND, CONNECTICUT
ROBERT K. DORNAN, CALIFORNIA
ROBERT C. SMITH, NEW HAMPSHIRE
JACK DAVIS, ILLINOIS

October 26, 1987

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, Florida 33582

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This is in response to your recent letter and your request for a copy of the hearing that was held on September 17, 1986 on the treatment of American prisoners of war held in Manchuria.

Enclosed is a copy of this hearing which I hope will be helpful to you.

With every good wish, I am

Sincerely,

DOUGLAS APPLGATE
Chairman
Subcommittee on Compensation,
Pension and Insurance

DA:jr

TREATMENT OF AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN
MANCHURIA

Lyle Lewis
Case: 813/377-0111

HEARING
BEFORE THE
SUBCOMMITTEE ON
COMPENSATION, PENSION AND INSURANCE
OF THE
COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS
HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES
NINETY-NINTH CONGRESS
SECOND SESSION
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

Printed for the use of the Committee on Veterans' Affairs

Serial No. 99-61



U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
WASHINGTON : 1986

65-338 O

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, Congressional Sales Office
U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, DC 20402

65-338 O - 86 - ,1

COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY, Mississippi, *Chairman*

DON EDWARDS, California	JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT, Arkansas
BOB EDGAR, Pennsylvania	CHALMERS P. WYLIE, Ohio
DOUGLAS APPELEGATE, Ohio	ELWOOD HILLIS, Indiana
RICHARD C. SHELBY, Alabama	GERALD B.H. SOLOMON, New York
DAN MICA, Florida	BOB McEWEN, Ohio
THOMAS A. DASCHLE, South Dakota	CHRISTOPHER H. SMITH, New Jersey
WAYNE DOWDY, Mississippi	DAN BURTON, Indiana
LANE EVANS, Illinois	DON SUNDQUIST, Tennessee
MARCY KAPTUR, Ohio	MICHAEL BILIRAKIS, Florida
TIMOTHY J. PENNY, Minnesota	NANCY LEE JOHNSON, Connecticut
HARLEY O. STAGGERS, Jr., West Virginia	GUY V. MOLINARI, New York
J. ROY ROWLAND, Georgia	THOMAS J. RIDGE, Pennsylvania
JOHN BRYANT, Texas	WILLIAM M. HENDON, North Carolina
JAMES J. FLORIO, New Jersey	JOHN G. ROWLAND, Connecticut
KENNETH J. GRAY, Illinois	
PAUL E. KANJORSKI, Pennsylvania	
TOMMY F. ROBINSON, Arkansas	
FRANK McCLOSKEY, Indiana	
CHARLES W. STENHOLM, Texas	

MACK FLEMING, *Chief Counsel and Staff Director*

SUBCOMMITTEE ON COMPENSATION, PENSION, AND INSURANCE

DOUGLAS APPELEGATE, Ohio, *Chairman*

G.V. (SONNY) MONTGOMERY, Mississippi	GERALD B.H. SOLOMON, New York
DAN MICA, Florida	CHALMERS P. WYLIE, Ohio
WAYNE DOWDY, Mississippi	JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT, Arkansas
LANE EVANS, Illinois	DAN BURTON, Indiana
TOMMY F. ROBINSON, Arkansas	GUY V. MOLINARI, New York
FRANK McCLOSKEY, Indiana	

(11)

CONTENTS

SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

	Page
Hearing on Treatment of American Prisoners of War in Manchuria.....	1
OPENING STATEMENTS	
Chairman Applegate	1
Hon. Gerald B.H. Solomon	2
WITNESSES	
Hatcher, Chief John H., Army Records Management, Department of the Army, and Archivist of the Army.....	7
Prepared statement of John H. Hatcher	39
James, Frank, former Prisoner of War, Camp Mukden, Manchuria.....	16
Prepared statement of Frank James	46
Rodriguez, Greg, Jr.....	24
Prepared statement of Greg Rodriguez, Jr.....	48
Triplett, William	32
Prepared statement of William Triplett.....	52
Williams, Hon. Pat, a Representative in Congress from the State of Montana ..	3
MATERIAL SUBMITTED FOR THE RECORD	
Statements:	
Hammerschmidt, Hon. John Paul	56
Tadej, Peggy	57

(iii)

HEARING ON TREATMENT OF AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN MANCHURIA

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES,
SUBCOMMITTEE ON COMPENSATION, PENSION AND
INSURANCE,
COMMITTEE ON VETERANS' AFFAIRS,
Washington, D.C.

The subcommittee met, pursuant to notice, at 9:38 a.m., in room 334, Cannon House Office Building, Hon. Douglas Applegate (chairman of the subcommittee) presiding.

Present: Representatives Applegate, Evans, Robinson, and Solomon.

OPENING STATEMENT OF CHAIRMAN APPLLEGATE

Mr. APPLLEGATE. Good morning.

First of all, let me just make perfectly clear that we have standing rules of the committee as to when we expect to have written statements submitted to the committee. We have times in which we expect those to be submitted. I am disappointed that that has not been fully complied with, that one of the statements was delivered yesterday and the balance were not here as of 9 o'clock this morning.

It is very important to the members that we have the statements beforehand so that we know what the witnesses are going to say. I would say that in the future I hope that the witnesses will comply with our rules. It would be most unfortunate if the hearing were to be cancelled or a witness not be allowed to testify simply because of his or her failure to submit their testimony.

We are meeting this morning to hear testimony on an issue which was brought to my attention by my good friend and colleague, the Honorable Pat Williams of Montana.

According to information he has provided, there are reports that the Imperial Government of Japan may have been responsible for medical experiments involving germ warfare conducted on American prisoners of war during World War II.

We have heard that a Japanese medical group, identified as Unit 731, was located approximately 350 miles from Camp Mukden, a facility established by the Japanese to hold American military personnel captured in the Pacific theater early in World War II.

According to a TV documentary broadcast last year by the BBC, Unit 731 was created to develop germ warfare capability by the Japanese. Some American POWs who were held at Camp Mukden

(1)

were interviewed by BBC and said they believed they were used for experiments by Unit 731 personnel. The Department of Defense witness will have comments on that later today, as I understand.

The focus of the BBC documentary was on the issue of whether Unit 731 personnel should have been subject to trial as war criminals because of their activities involving germ warfare. This committee does not have jurisdiction on the matter of war crimes.

We will hear from a witness from the Department of Defense who will present testimony on the issue of whether or not Americans were involved in medical experimentation. We will also hear from an American prisoner of war who was held at Camp Mukden and from other witnesses who have done a great deal of research on this question.

I want to make it clear that the issue before the committee today is whether or not Americans held at Camp Mukden have suffered, or, are now suffering, from events which occurred at the camp. I have consistently stated that this subcommittee is dedicated to making sure that all veterans, especially former prisoners of war, receive benefits for medical problems related to their military service.

We have long adhered to the principle that disabilities incurred coincident in point of time with military service should be service connected. Conversely, our deliberations have not been governed by the existence of a causal relationship.

This principle is best shown by the fact that current law provides benefits for such chronic conditions as cardio-vascular disease, diabetes, pulmonary disease, and others, (if they are manifested in service. We do not look to the cause of such conditions. With this in mind, I want to repeat that our main objective in holding this hearing is simply to get information on whether former POWs held at Camp Mukden have demonstrated any medical symptoms which could be reasonably traced to their period of military service.

At this time I want to recognize my friend and the ranking minority member, the Honorable Jerry Solomon of New York, for whatever remarks he may wish to make.

OPENING STATEMENT OF HON. GERALD B.H. SOLOMON

Mr. SOLOMON. Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. Chairman, you have pretty well covered the issue. Let me just say that, besides serving as the ranking member on your subcommittee, I am also the chairman of the House Task Force on POW/MIA Issues. I am very hopeful that this hearing will help us to shed some light on the question of Japanese activities in Manchuria at Unit 731 during World War II. If it can be established that the Japanese were, indeed, conducting some kind of germ warfare experiments on American prisoners of war there, we then should address whether any harm resulted to those men.

The many years which have passed since 1945 certainly may complicate the inquiry, but it is never too late to give the issue as much consideration as the available evidence allows us to. I think that former prisoners of war especially deserve every reasonable opportunity to establish claims for service-connected disabilities. I

will be most interested to hear the testimony today, Mr. Chairman, and I commend you for calling this hearing.

Thank you.

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you very much, Jerry. I can vouch for the fact that Jerry Solomon has been one of the outstanding members of this committee and also, as he said, has been very active in the MIA/POW situation as it exists today. He has put forth a lot of effort in seeing that those perhaps who are still there will someday be freed, or the information forthcoming.

Our first witness today will be the Honorable Pat Williams of Montana. It goes without saying that Pat has consistently shown that he is another one of the great friends of America's veterans. He has always been in full support of the committee when we have needed him. He has especially been active in matters affecting prisoners of war.

Pat, it is always good to have you before the committee. You may read your statement or summarize, however you see fit.

STATEMENT OF HON. PAT WILLIAMS, A REPRESENTATIVE IN
CONGRESS FROM THE STATE OF MONTANA

Mr. WILLIAMS. Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. You're very kind. I appreciate the opportunity to appear before you this morning.

Let me say first that, to its credit, the Veterans' Affairs Committee and this subcommittee, through the many years, has displayed the willingness and determination of ensuring that our veterans, including, of course, our POWs, receive fair and just treatment.

Some veterans today—veterans captured and imprisoned in World War II's Pacific Theater—have a story to tell and an agonizing chapter of their lives to resolve. These veterans, I tell this committee, have not received justice and they need your help. Mr. Chairman, I am very pleased with your willingness to hold this hearing, to listen to their story, and to seek remedies where this committee believes those remedies are due.

These men are victims of a terrible secret, born 44 years ago deep in Manchuria in Japanese POW camps. Theirs perhaps, has been the longest and best kept secret of World War II, long denied by Japan and long concealed by the U.S. Government.

Bit by bit, and year by year, despite our Government's public statements of ignorance, the truth has been leaking out. We know now that Mukden was more than just another Japanese POW camp for Allied soldiers.

Operated by Japanese scientists from Unit 731, Mukden was the site for deadly chemical and biological experiments, for injections, body dissections, blood and feces tests, freezing of body parts, infection of wounds with anthrax, the applications of plague bacillus, cholera, dysentery, and typhoid.

That, Mr. Chairman, was what was waiting for many of the American fighting men who survived the Bataan Death March. Along with our soldiers at these terrible camps were also men from China, Great Britain, Australia, and the Soviet Union. We don't know how many survived, but we do know that the U.S. Government knew of the experiments at the war's end.

We know it from the words of retired Col. Murray Saunders, who was America's Far East military command advisor on germ warfare in Tokyo after the war, and who traveled here to the Nation's capital this past winter for a news conference with me to unveil the secret. We know now that a deal was cut, that our military command extended immunity to the Japanese scientists from war crimes prosecution in exchange for the data from the experiments. We know because Lieutenant Colonel Saunders acknowledges that he was the go-between and helped arrange the deal.

Mr. Chairman, it is not the task or jurisdiction of this subcommittee, I know, to seek out culpability and I don't desire that. What is at issue is the treatment now, today, of the American survivors of those Japanese camps. These veterans have a right to the complete records on what they experienced so that doctors seeking to treat their ailments will be given the benefit of all the medical history available to our Government.

Those who, indeed, were subjected to experimentation also have a right to compensation because of the often vague and exotic illnesses they suffer. The facts are all too clear, that too many of the American prisoners of war at those Japanese germ warfare camps have been provided neither adequate health care or appropriate compensation.

Mr. Chairman and members of the committee, several years ago a fellow Montanan came to my office seeking relief denied by the Veterans' Administration for Mukden prisoner number 768, his father. Greg Rodriguez, Jr. is here with us today as a witness on behalf of justice for his dad.

Greg Rodriguez, Sr. was a subject of the germ warfare experiments and since his wartime captivity had suffered severe, baffling and disabling fevers. Through many decades—mind you, ~~decades~~—of work and persuasion, the VA finally extended some relief to Mr. Rodriguez.

Others have fared much worse. I am submitting the records for Felix Kozakevitch, an American soldier from New York, who was imprisoned at one of these experimentation camps. He was prisoner number 660. Apart from severe beatings, Kozakevitch was subjected to frostbite experiments, forced to stand at attention in deep snow in subzero temperatures.

Felix Kozakevitch never received compensation, never received needed counseling, and never received adequate health care. The country for which he fought spent the rest of his life denying his terrible experience. Prisoner number 660, Mr. Kozakevitch, died last winter.

The chairman of your full committee, Congressman Montgomery, once talked with another of those prisoners held by Japan, a gentleman named Warren W. "Pappy" Whelchel. Pappy was held at Mukden, experimented upon, and spent 40 years trying to get health care from the VA for his lingering illnesses. Time and again, he was told his diseases could not be possible until, when Pappy died, not many months ago, an autopsy was performed and finally revealed the truth of his claims.

Mr. Chairman, let's not let time expire on the others who came out of those experimentation camps. Let's make sure they finally receive the fair treatment to which they are due.

SOON ALL WILL BE DEAD AND THE VA CAN CLOSE THEIR BOOKS. THE PROBLEM WILL BE MOOT.

Now, if I may make a couple of personal observations, Mr. Chairman, in the way of summary and in conclusion, there is now absolutely undeniable evidence that the camps existed. That is no longer denied. There is now absolutely undeniable, incontrovertible evidence that the American high command granted amnesty to the people performing the experiments in exchange for that awful data.

Now, I understand that our Government consistently has denied any firm knowledge that any Americans were experimented upon. But today you will hear from a POW who was experimented upon. To deny that truth is to deny the existence of that POW.

A second concluding remark, Mr. Chairman, is that VA health care officials understand that if they are to provide proper health care for our returning veterans, they need as much medical information, including information about how that veteran received his injuries or illnesses, as possible. Our Government denies that it has any information which would help it in counseling or providing health care to these veterans because we continued to deny they were ever experimented upon. I know that the Department of Defense is going to come before you today and deny that there's any evidence like that available which might help these veterans get proper health care and mental counseling.

Mr. Chairman, you will hear from a witness today who will lay upon this table reams of health care information which came from the camps, which are available to the VA, medical information which our Government will not share with the VA because it denies it ever existed.

Mr. Chairman, as you know, the Advisory Committee on Former Prisoners of War was established with your leadership and the leadership of other members of this committee under Public Law 97-37, and in its first report to his committee and to the Congress in July of 1984, that subcommittee found this—and I quote—referring now to POWs generally:

"It is clear that the progress to date is not satisfactory. The effort started too late. Entirely too many delays have been experienced. We are obliged to point out that prompt and effective action is essential. The overwhelming majority of former POWs are from World War II and their average age is more than 60."

As you know, Mr. Chairman, I had recommended to you that the chairman of that advisory committee, Lieutenant Colonel Flynn, come before this committee. Perhaps he might have informed you as to why the next report, due in July of 1985, from that committee was never brought to this Congress, although required to be done so by law, and perhaps he could comment on the specifics of these POWs whom we are hearing from today. Lieutenant Colonel Flynn chose not to even show up at this hearing. I personally think that's an affront to these POWs, and I think further that it continues to show this Government's disdain for these men who underwent these terrible experiments.

Finally, Mr. Chairman, I want to thank you, because this marks the first time in 44 years that the Congress of the United States has agreed to focus upon this problem. You and the members of the committee are to be commended for making this matter public

only 13% of POWs held by Japanese during WWII 1986

6971

and for trying to determine how to bring just compensation and appropriate health care to these former POWs.

Thank you very much.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Pat, for an outstanding statement. It was very well articulated. You certainly know your subject and you have put a lot of study into it.

The fact that you made a point about the one fellow, "Pappy" Whelchel, and that he fought for 40 years and died without getting any compensation or any benefits whatsoever—is that correct?

Mr. WILLIAMS. For benefits, compensation, health care or counseling for those illnesses, which were the result of his incarceration and experimentation.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Did he get anything as a result of service-connected benefits?

Mr. WILLIAMS. I believe he did. I believe Pappy did receive some benefits, some compensation for other difficulties that he had due to other service-connected problems.

Mr. APPLEGATE. How long did he spend at Mukden?

Mr. WILLIAMS. I'm uncertain, Mr. Chairman. It seems to me he was there more than a year.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Were there experiments done, to the best of your knowledge, at Camp Mukden, or were they all done supposedly at the other camp, which I don't have by number, which I think was some 350 miles away?

Mr. WILLIAMS. To the best of my information, Mr. Chairman, they were done in at least two and perhaps several locations, including Mukden.

Mr. APPLEGATE. I thank you again.

Mr. SOLOMON, do you have questions of Mr. Williams? *CHUCK WAS IN 2 CAMPS IN MUKDEN? MANU HURIA*

Mr. SOLOMON. Mr. Chairman, I first of all want to commend Pat for his articulation and documentation here this morning. We really do appreciate it, Pat.

Do you have any idea how many POWs who were actually at Camp Mukden are still alive? Do we know that? *DAMN FEW!*

Mr. WILLIAMS. Well, you know, it is very difficult to find out. The outreach portion of the omnibus POW legislation is not working as I think we had hoped, so we are uncertain how many there were. We believe that there were several hundred survivors.

Mr. SOLOMON. I just might point out to the committee that our full committee passed a bill several months ago, which is over in the Senate right now. It provides a presumption for certain disabilities.

Mr. MOON (subcommittee counsel). Yes, sir. H.R. 4333 would grant a presumption of service connection for traumatic arthritis, for spastic colon, and for residuals of frostbite, if there is no intervening accident which would have caused it. We know that there is no documentation, especially among the Japanese camps, but if a man has the condition, and the VA has not recognized it before, and he didn't get, say, frostbite on a hunting expedition after he got out of service, then under this bill that we have passed the VA would recognize those conditions.

It would also confer dental treatment for any POW held for 90 days or more.

Mr. SOLOMON. I was just going to point out, Mr. Chairman, that you were one of the major sponsors of that legislation that is over in the Senate. There is also other presumptions for nervousness, et cetera, that are already written into the law. We ought to push as hard as we can to get that bill enacted into law.

Pat, I thank you very much for coming before us.

Mr. WILLIAMS. Thank you very much.

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you very much, Jerry. I think that bill will be passed by the Senate and will be passed into law. I think it's a move forward.

We next have Mr. Tommy Robinson from Arkansas.

Mr. ROBINSON. Pat, I also want to commend you for your excellent efforts in reference to this matter. I want you to know that I think it's unconscionable that our Government would deny that these prisoners were mistreated the way they were. I want you to know, when our Government witnesses come forward today, I intend to grill them to the best of my ability.

Once again, I appreciate your efforts. Hopefully, because of you and others, we will be able to compensate these veterans, even though it is long overdue. I thank you for appearing today.

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you, Mr. Robinson.

I might just point out that, while we don't know how many are living, at the time of liberation, from the information that we have, there were 80 American officers and 1,038 enlisted men, 176 British officers and 108 enlisted men, 58 Dutch officers, 7 enlisted men, and 4 civilians, for a total of 1,671.

Pat, once again, thank you very much for coming to the committee and bringing this very important testimony to us.

Mr. WILLIAMS. Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. I would like nothing better, after 4 or 5 years of working on this issue, to remain with you, obviously. But I have in my own committee a markup proceeding without me, so I must get over there. I am going to try to return and see if I can't hear some of the testimony.

Mr. APPLGATE. Very well.

The next witness that we will hear is Dr. John H. Hatcher, Ph.D., Director of Army Records Management, Department of the Army. Dr. Hatcher, welcome to the committee.

We do have your statement and it will be submitted for the record, without objection. If you wish to summarize, or however you see fit, we are willing to listen.

STATEMENT OF JOHN H. HATCHER, CHIEF, ARMY RECORDS MANAGEMENT, DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY, AND ARCHIVIST OF THE ARMY

Dr. HATCHER. Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I apologize for the Department of the Army for the lateness of the statement reaching you. I can realize the problems that this imposes.

There are two things I would like to say immediately. I was referred to earlier as the Department of Defense representative. I am not that. I am speaking strictly for the Department of the Army.

I should like the committee to know that I appreciate the weighty issues that you're going to be wrestling with. They are emotion charged and they commence to fall into the category of an-

cient history. There are some peculiar problems that have developed entirely independent of what happened in the beginning days of World War II which is going to make it even more difficult to wrestle with.

With all of this, I should also like to point out that I am a veteran. I walked out of the hills of Kentucky when I was 18 years old, about 3 weeks after the war started. I spent the war in the Pacific and was on occupation duty in Japan when many of these incidents commenced to happen. So my entire life has been spent in the Federal service, 27 years in uniform and for the last 15 or 16 in a civilian capacity.

I am afraid that my statement will not have all the fire and drama that properly attends this issue, because my discussion will have to be fairly technical. That discussion has to center around only one issue, possibly one point of one issue, and that is whether or not the Department of the Army has records to support any of the proceedings or considerations that will take place in this committee.

Certainly at this point I don't think I want to read verbatim from my statement; I'm sure it provides more information about Army records than this entire room will ever want to know. It is not exactly the most exciting subject in the world for those who have not spent their lives in it. But it is necessary to talk in some very broad detail of the problems that are inherent in such a massive system of records keeping as we have in the Department of the Army.

To begin with, we have a management structure of about 40 or 50 people here in the Nation's capital, and an infrastructure of possibly 400 other positions and people scattered throughout the Army and throughout the world. In order for the Army to operate itself, we require about 5 million cubic feet of records a year. They are broken up into various categories, in many different categories, and we keep those records for varying periods of time—some of them as briefly as only a few minutes, and others we keep for the life of the Republic, for as long as there actually is a United States.

In this massive accumulation of materials we have found that over the course of the years that we probably create and destroy in any given year's time a million feet of records that never actually get beyond the office that they appeared in. So the sum total of this is that we do have a tremendous number of records on hand. In the 40-year period that has intervened between the incidents in Manchuria and the present time, we probably created upwards of 40 million feet of records and destroyed 40 million feet of records, and kept out of that less than one-half of 1 percent.

But even that one-half of 1 percent that survived the passage of time and eventually appears in the National Archives tells a very complete story of the Army's involvement. We feel that we have investigated the possibility of providing records to support the history of what has happened.

We have come up with some materials—certainly not conclusive. We have not come up with any primary materials. Now, primary materials would be things of an actual experimental nature, case files, medical files, records obviously created by Unit 731 during that period, possibly reworked or treated by SCAP, the Supreme

Command Allied Powers, General MacArthur's headquarters. None of that we have. We don't know whether we ever had possession of that or not.

It's possible that in one brief period we may have had some of those materials. We did not address that issue conclusively because, contrary to our use of the German captured records following World War II, the Japanese captured records were actually brought to the United States and held here in the Nation's capital, primarily in the National Archives building itself for a number of years, finally boxed up and sent back to Japan, because the problem of language was too difficult for us to overcome. It was written in many different dialects, many different alphabets, congu or conji, all of those things. The records were just more difficult than we could do anything with. In fact, they were so difficult that we did not even copy them. I think we boxed them up and sent them back to Tokyo. *I CAN'T BELIEVE IT! AND DON'T!*

In the case of the German records, the language was no difficulty there. We used them, we copied them, and we still have those copies. So in those records that were returned to Japan may have existed some of the primary materials that we don't have.

Now, in the intervening years, the subject, with all of its charged emotion, has become very popular. It has fired the popular imagination. The television cameras are used very widely to take care of the popular appetite for these things.

As near as we can determine, most of the documentaries that have been produced, and most of the materials that have been located, are secondary materials that were prepared as a result of a report from General MacArthur's headquarters, from SCAP itself. This report still exists, has been interpreted. We have done some other reporting through the years from our own Army centers that were interested in this sort of experimental and development work. But again, that is all of a secondary nature. It deals generally with probably the nature of the things that happened, with no regard whatsoever for the individuals that were involved in it, either those conducting the experiments or the people that might have been experimented upon.

The fact remains that we simply have no identifiable body of records anywhere in the Army's holdings, or the Army's holdings that have subsequently been passed into the National Archives, that would tend to either support or, on the other hand, to refute the claims that are being made.

I mentioned before the Army's recordkeeping system is a massive system. We deal in macro figures of millions of cubic feet of records. That is not to say that when we need a particular set of information that we start in box one and run through a million boxes of paper looking for it. Certainly we have that material broken up functionally, subjectively, chronologically, organizationally, so that we know the sort of information we're looking for and can generally zero in on those particular agencies and examine their holdings.

This through the years is what we have done with the issue at hand. We looked at records currently in Army offices that would be interested in these areas. We have looked at those records again in the National Archives that would be interested in those areas, and

STUPIDITY
AT ITS
WORST

we have come up with possibly a couple of hundred pages of material, certainly not an impressive volume of materials, to support the enormity of what is claimed to have happened.

I alluded in my opening remarks to some special difficulties that would attend the problems of the committee. One of those difficulties is the disastrous fire that we had in St. Louis in 1973, which virtually wiped out the World War II Army portion of military personnel files that were held there. The Air Force didn't do too badly; the Navy had scarcely any loss at all. But the bulk of that fire was centered in Army World War II records. That probably is the main crux of the veterans that we would be looking for in that section. The individual files almost completely were destroyed. We have been able to do computer reconstructions where we have established some essential facts of military service, for the most part facts legally sufficient to sustain entitlements and VA benefits. But so far as going into individual files, even on a name basis, and producing evidence that proved conclusively that an individual had been subjected to interment in these particular camps, or the treatment they had in those camps, that would be virtually impossible on the basis of the surviving records.

So, Mr. Chairman, I have to conclude at this point, that we have through the years delivered up to the public, through the avenue of the Freedom of Information Act, and through our own historical efforts, all the materials that to this point we have been able to identify that deal with this subject. **GAMW LITTLE!**

[Prepared statement of John H. Hatcher appears on p. 39.]

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Dr. Hatcher.

Let me ask you this. Can you tell me what other organizations might have retained records of the post-war occupation of Japan? Are there any other organizations that you know of that keep these records?

Dr. HATCHER. Do you mean beyond the Department of the Army?

Mr. APPLEGATE. Yes.

Dr. HATCHER. Well, certainly the State Department would be involved in this area, and to a degree, the other two military departments. The Department of the Army has never been strongly represented in the Far East. Obviously, World War II was largely an Army war in Europe. The Air Force and the Navy, to a much larger degree, did the bulk of the fighting in the Far East. When the occupational forces settled in, it was those units that virtually did that occupation service and in the intervening years have maintained strong bases in the Far East.

So it would be fair to query the Departments of the Air Force, the Navy, and the State Department.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Let me ask you this. Did the Army have files of experimentations or any files relative to Mukden, or the so-called testing camp?

Dr. HATCHER. No, sir. We do not presently have.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Did you have? Did the Army originally have those files from those camps?

Dr. HATCHER. No, sir. We have no evidence that we ever held any materials from those camps. The earliest record that we can come up with is the report prepared in General MacArthur's headquarters. This was 1945 or 1946. And it appears that this report

EXCUSES
EXCUSES
NOT THE
POW'S
FAULT.
WHY NOT
JUST
BELIEVE
HIM?

was largely done from interrogations, from interviews, from that sort of material, without much, if any, access to original documentation that might have come from Mukden or similar establishments.

Mr. APPLGATE. Did your bureau have files of any other alleged experimentation camps, either in the South Pacific or in Europe?

Dr. HATCHER. Not in the South Pacific. There was a goodly amount of POW material, POW camp material, that we came into possession of in the Philippines. But to the best of my knowledge, for the rest of the Far East, we had little, if any, original materials. Again, the language was the primary difficulty there.

Just the opposite case existed in Europe. We literally were drowned with documentation in Europe that we had captured on the spot and lent itself to immediate use. In fact, we had special units set up in Europe. The Ash Can Project is one case in hand, which used exclusively records of the Nazi party, or the concentration camps themselves, to prepare the prosecutions for Nuremberg. But we didn't have access to this sort of material in the Far East.

Mr. APPLGATE. Anything that you had then you don't have now, though? Do you have any of those records now? I see in here that you destroy 99.5 percent of all the records that you create.

Dr. HATCHER. Yes, sir.

Mr. APPLGATE. What is the five-tenths of 1 percent?

Dr. HATCHER. The five-tenths of 1 percent are those things that are determined to be permanent records in accordance with the Federal Records Act of 1950, determined by the Archivist of the United States, to be so important as to be kept as long as there is the United States.

Mr. APPLGATE. That would obviously not pertain to individual members of the armed services, but important to the security of the country? What is the determination based on?

Dr. HATCHER. The security of the nation, something that documents the existence, the organization, the activities of the Army with respect to the security of the nation. Personnel records, individual personnel records, per se, do not come near that category. As a matter of fact, we normally consider them at the outside to be a 75 year record.

Mr. APPLGATE. If that is the basis, do they still do it that way, or because of the fact that now you have microfilms that they can keep a lot more files available? Do they still destroy 99.5 percent of all the records?

Dr. HATCHER. Yes, sir. Even though we have a much more sophisticated recordkeeping system, the electronic systems where we have great storage capacity, the vast bulk of the records that we create are of ephemeral value.

We run into a cost problem as well. The more sophisticated the recordkeeping system, the more expensive it becomes.

Mr. APPLGATE. Do you know if the material that was returned to Japan might have been microfiled before it was returned?

Dr. HATCHER. No, sir, it was not.

Mr. APPLGATE. It was not.

Dr. HATCHER. It was simply packed up and sent back. Again, it would—

Mr. APPLGATE. Shouldn't we have done that?

A "DEAL"
SUCH AS
THIS IS
NOT
PERTINENT?
BULL!!!

Dr. HATCHER. Really, I can't—

Mr. APPLGATE. Don't you always keep a file of things you send out, like we do, so we can sort of make a reference?

Dr. HATCHER. The problem here is, with the language it was written in, we simply could not find enough translators and interpreters to tell us what we had. It was quite different in the case of the German materials, with the modern European languages. Washington runs over with German-speaking Americans. We don't have quite that many people in Washington who can handle Hongul or Konchi or some of the others.

ANOTE
HECC WITH
THE
POWER
MAKE
HIM
PROVE
CASE
BUT
DESTROY
THE
RECORDS

It may not have been a good decision at the time. I can't address that issue. But for whatever reason, the language difficulty, the cost of copying, the probable or improbable future value of those things, that had to have been taken into consideration. It was a joint Defense and State Department decision at the time, that these materials would be repatriated without retaining copies.

Mr. APPLGATE. In your statement I notice that you say that you have searched the proper places in the Army recordkeeping system through the years for data to support this cause, the cause being, I guess, the subject of the BBC or other allegations made, and appear to have turned up some 200 pages of secondary material. In talking about secondary material, do you mean—

Dr. HATCHER. Reports that were written after the fact, not materials that we would have captured in Mukden and brought to this country, or that we even had access to at the time.

Mr. APPLGATE. So you don't think that anything you have come up with is anything of any great significance or importance?

Dr. HATCHER. It's just not that detailed, sir. Certainly it does nothing in the way of identifying people. In many cases, it deals very generally with the type of experimentation.

With regard to the proper places, obviously, we went to those agencies, those parts of the Army that are concerned with this. There's no secret about that. This would be Fort Detrick, Edgewood Arsenal, Aberdeen Proving Ground, Dugway Proving Ground, those laboratory facilities that would have the sort of interest and the capability of considering these materials.

Mr. APPLGATE. Lastly, your conclusions. What you say is, "Based upon the manner in which records pertaining to American prisoners of war were generated by multiple sources at the end of World War II, cataloged and preserved in the Archives, the absence of such records suggests that Americans were not subjected to biological experimentation as alleged."

You don't think there was any supportive materials in what was sent back, that we didn't keep copies of, that could have added to the argument of what these people are trying to prove?

Dr. HATCHER. It might have been, sir, but we really don't know the content of the materials that were repatriated. Again, drawing from the European comparison, we have very detailed accounts of what was done at Dachau, at Auschwitz, even to the point of knowing people's names and the sort of treatment they were exposed to. We have large quantities of textual materials available in this country that deal with that issue. Again, comparing the large quantity of materials we have on that, with the paucity of material

that we have from the Far East, suggests that it was not a parallel situation.

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you, Dr. Hatcher.

Mr. Solomon.

Mr. SOLOMON. Dr. Hatcher, the chairman has covered most of my questions.

I am really intrigued about this material that was packed up and returned to Japan. With all due respect to you, sir, and I do have a great deal of respect for you—there are an awful lot of good, conscientious, capable bureaucrats in the Federal Government—but there's an old saying that goes way back beyond World War II, that the definition of a bureaucrat is one who shoots the bull, passes the buck, and makes six copies of everything. I just find it hard to believe that we packed up all this information and sent it back and we don't have copies of it. Again, this is no criticism of you.

What do the records show? Who did we send it back to? Did we send it back to Douglas MacArthur?

Dr. HATCHER. No, sir. We returned it to the Government of Japan.

Mr. SOLOMON. The Government of Japan?

Dr. HATCHER. Yes.

Mr. SOLOMON. Do we have any indication of whether it still exists?

Dr. HATCHER. I'm sure it still exists. I mean, the Japanese are good record keepers. YEAH - THEY GET IT.

What we had was literally the records of the Imperial Government that we confiscated in 1945 when we moved into Tokyo. I was there and it did pose some problem for a while because we suddenly stripped that Government of all its operating records. Then we looked around to pick out the good guys and the bad guys, and they commenced to perform the functions under the direction of General MacArthur's headquarters. But in most cases, there was very little of the bureaucrat's tool of trade that he needs to go with. We kept those records for 15 to 18 years in this country. Again, we had a number of scholars—I was not directly involved in it—but a number of scholars who looked at them and considered them to be pretty much run-of-the-mill, Government operating records. Some things, some cabinet-level materials, were probably of considerable interest. But again, the sheer problem of translating and getting them into a useable form, and the cost of doing it, just absolutely defeated all of our purposes.

Mr. SOLOMON. Again, it brings us back to one of the great injustices. During the Second World War we had a great many Japanese-American citizens who were interned, unnecessarily so. They were good, loyal American citizens and many of them who later fought with us during the war. It just seems to me that after the war was over, and if this went on for 18 years, to say we didn't have the expertise in this country to translate those records is almost incomprehensible.

Also, I would just like to point out, without criticizing Japan or the Japanese people, of course, today their country is one of our strongest links in our defense of the Free World, along with South Korea, and I have to say Taiwan, too, the Republic of China, the

Philippines and so on. The Japanese people are not proud of that Second World War, as are the Germans are not proud of the Second World War.

It just seems to me, if those records still exist, because of the problems we have with those men that served in combat and were prisoners of war at Mukden, it just seems to me that if we made some effort to discuss this with the Japanese Government that perhaps we might get some of the information back. Certainly they have the expertise to decipher the information that was there. Perhaps we ought to make that effort, without bringing any criticism on anybody, just for the sole purpose of trying to help these people.

In my closing statement let me just ask you, do you or the Government have any idea of how many live POWs there are from Mukden today?

Dr. HATCHER. No, sir, I have no idea. The best records we have on this indicate 1,200 or 1,300 Americans—

Mr. SOLOMON. Still alive?

Dr. HATCHER. In the camps at that time. Now, how many of those survived and how many are still alive, it would be very difficult to pinpoint. *GETTING CLOSE TO ZERO,*

Mr. SOLOMON. Mr. Chairman, I have nothing further.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. Solomon.

Mr. ROBINSON of Arkansas.

Mr. ROBINSON. Dr. Hatcher, I have two questions. Number one, what did you find in your review of the 200 pages of secondary material? Explain to me what is in those 200 pages that you consider secondary.

Dr. HATCHER. I have to explain, sir, first of all, that I'm certainly not expert in biological warfare, and except for having seen some of the source documents, I could not even begin to describe to you the nature of what appeared in those 200 pages. Most of it was of a highly scientific nature, discussing formulas and that sort of thing. It appears to take the form of about three or four different reports of varying length, most of which were prepared by scientists.

The bulk of what we found, aside from the one which appears to be the original document, the one document from General MacArthur's headquarters, the bulk of the other materials came out of our own laboratories over at Fort Detrick. They have been releaseable to the public for some time and have been a very popular item, so popular, in fact, that we receive regular requests for that material almost to the point of having it duplicated and ready to go.

But so far as telling you the actual content of the material, I can't do it. It has been some years since I've seen any part of it. Mr. ROBINSON. How about duplicating that material and sending it to our committee? I would certainly like to have that.

Dr. HATCHER. Yes, we can do that. In fact, the historians have been quite interested in this area. There is a file right here in town and we can provide the committee with a complete set of that.

Mr. ROBINSON. The second question I have, are there records kept by agencies outside the U.S. Army today, Army records, outside of your supervision?

Dr. HATCHER. What was that again, sir?

Agreed to this 1-18-88. STILL WAITING 5-20-88

Mr. ROBINSON. Are U.S. Army records kept by any other Government entity outside the supervision of your office?

Dr. HATCHER. Army records. That becomes a little complicated. We have some joint commands that are composed of Army, Navy, Air Force and other defense elements, that there are Army record-keeping activities in. But they would be primarily concerned with joint activities as opposed to purely Army activities.

Now, some good cases of this from the World War II period would be, of course, SCAP itself, the Far East Command, the Southwest Pacific Command, which were generally joint commands. By a preponderance of Army people in most of those commands, we became the housekeepers for those records. That's why I can comfortably discuss those joint records in the same language as Army records, because they are basically put up in Army formats, by Army people. But currently, no, I know of no situation where Army records would be managed or kept by activities outside of the Army.

Mr. ROBINSON. Mr. Chairman, I have no further questions.

Mr. APPELEGATE. Thank you, Mr. Robinson.

Mr. Solomon had thrown sort of a question up in reference to the 200 pages. Do you still have that secondary material?

Dr. HATCHER. Oh, yes. That material is available. It's almost an exportable package, it's been so popular. So there's no problem. We can deliver that to the committee immediately.

Mr. APPELEGATE. Yes, could we have a package of that? We would appreciate that very much.

Let me ask you this. Of all these files that you were talking about—this is a very imaginative question, I guess—but of all the files that were sent back to the Government of Japan, what is the possibility of asking the Government of Japan to returning them to us?

Dr. HATCHER. I don't think it would be possible, knowing how—

Mr. APPELEGATE. It's possible to ask them.

Dr. HATCHER. Oh, it is certainly possible to ask them, but so far as the Government of Japan being able to, if they were inclined to, I don't think they would be able to, because I'm sure, when those files were returned to Japan in the late Fifties or early Sixties, that they immediately were decentralized, sent back to the Government agencies in Japan that would be interested in them. I doubt if it would be possible to even pull them together again.

Mr. APPELEGATE. Would you feel, to your best knowledge, that they would still have those records on file?

Dr. HATCHER. If they follow a system similar to ours, probably a very small part of them. I'm sure that the Japanese have a disposal system for records the same as we, where they would tend to weed out and destroy those things that were ephemeral or had no lasting value.

Mr. APPELEGATE. Upon request, do you think the Government of Japan would be willing to even make a stab at it, if there was any possible way to prove that they did not experiment on American POWs?

Dr. HATCHER. I really can't comment on that, sir, because I think that would have to be handled through the State Department.

Mr. APPLGATE. Well, we'll mull that over.

Dr. Hatcher, thank you very much.

Dr. HATCHER. Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. APPLGATE. The next witness that we will have to appear before the committee will be Mr. Frank James, who was a former prisoner of war in Muken. Mr. James, welcome to the committee. We're looking forward to hearing your testimony.

Mr. James, did you make a revision in your remarks?

Mr. JAMES. Yes, I did.

Mr. APPLGATE. Do you have that available to us?

Mr. JAMES. What I did, the paragraphs that pertained to those particular comments were just removed, the paragraphs in their entirety.

Mr. APPLGATE. Was that the only revision, on the first page, that you made.

Mr. JAMES. That's right. It was regarding the first page and on the second page that had to do with the ship.

STATEMENT OF FRANK JAMES, FORMER PRISONER OF WAR, CAMP MUKDEN, MANCHURIA

Mr. JAMES. Mr. Chairman and distinguished members of this subcommittee, I thank you for this opportunity to speak on the subject of the use of American prisoners of war as guinea pigs for the purpose of biological warfare research by the Japanese Army Unit 731. I was one of the POWs captured by the Japanese armed forces after the fall of Bataan and Corregidor in the Philippines during the early part of 1942.

*CHUCK LEWIS
WAS ONE
OF THESE*

Of the Americans captured, more than 1,000 were moved by ship in 1942 from the Philippines to Manchuria. This group was joined enroute in Korea by some British and Australian soldiers captured in Singapore. These men were used as slave laborers, working from daybreak to darkness, 7 days a week, in the Japanese factories located in Mukden.

TRUE

I stated that these were captured Americans, not prisoners of war, since the Japanese did not recognize the standing of POWs until late 1943 and early 1944. As captives, we had not been reported by the Japanese as being alive or dead. During the period that we were held captives was when we were used as guinea pigs for the biological research Unit 731, which was located at Mukden as well as Harbin, their main office.

The evidence I wish to present today covers what I saw of the biological testing, my personal involvement with Unit 731, and the impact upon the health and welfare of American POWs, including myself.

*DATE
CHUCK
NOTED
IN HIS
NEW
TESTAMON*

Upon arrival at Mukden on November 11, 1942 we were met by a team of Japanese medical personnel wearing masks. They sprayed liquid into our faces and we were given injections. Prior to this, on the dock in Pusan, we had glass rods inserted in our rectums. *But keep to me of this?*

This group, 731, left the camp and returned only two more times, to my knowledge. The following 3-month period after our arrival in Mukden, no medication was issued to the sick POWs. They were placed in four so-called hospital wards, with the worst cases placed

in Ward 4, under the care of an Australian doctor, Major Brennan. Ward 4 had the highest death rate.

During this 3- or 4-month period, in the winter of 1942, some 300 American POWs—or captives, as they were regarded at that time—had died, out of the original group that had left Pusan.

Over 200 of the dead were stored above ground in an old wooden building during the winter months. As spring approached, the bodies began to thaw, so burial details were organized to thaw out the permafrost on the ground and dig graves for the dead. A team of Japanese medical personnel, Unit 731, arrived with an autopsy table for taking specimens. The table was installed in the wooden building where the dead were stored and two POWs were selected to work with this team. I was one of the two men.

Our duties were to lift the bodies off the tables, those bodies that had been selected. These were identified by a tag tied to their big toe which listed the POW's number. The Japanese then opened the bodies—the head, chest and stomach—and took out the desired specimens, which were placed into containers and marked with the POW's number. The specimens were taken away by the Japanese medical group.

Later, the group returned to Mukden again to perform what seemed to be a psycho-physical and anatomical examination on selected POWs. I was one of them.

The examinations included the following: upon entering the room, we were required to walk in footsteps that had been painted on the floor, which led to a desk, at which the Japanese medical personnel sat. He observed us as we walked. We were also asked questions about our national origin, and "American" was not an acceptable answer. It had to be Scotch, French, English or whatever the ethnic background was. I remember being asked was I getting enough steak, and I answered, "What's that?"

The medical person also measured my head, shoulders, arms and legs with calipers, and asked many questions about the medical history of my family.

The impact of being used as guinea pigs for biological weapons testing may never be known unless the documents that Unit 731 turned over to the armed forces—which was in exchange for immunity from prosecution at the War Crimes Tribunal—are released. Medical information pertaining to the health of each POW should be released to him, his doctor, and the Veterans Administration.

In summation, Mr. Chairman, I appreciate the opportunity to be heard before this august body. I can assure you that I am as patriotic an American as can be found in our wonderful United States of America. I have always taught my daughters to be thankful that our founding fathers had the foresight to create a lasting nation, founded upon the common man and ensuring his personal rights, including the pursuit of happiness.

Yet the evidence I have given today may sound vindictive. That is not my purpose, although I admit to feeling anger about what I have learned since the war about the dealings of the Army staff on this matter.

I request that whatever documents pertaining to myself and other POWs, and the research into the immune system, be released. I am specifically desirous of obtaining the photograph taken

of me by Unit 732 in early 1943. At that time, I had lost all my body hair, weighed about 80 pounds, and wore only a sweater. Above my head was a sign with my POW number, 1294.

SAME
STORY
FOR
ALL
JAP-HELD
POW'S
SANDY
JUST
FAKED
IT
AGAIN
IN
JAN.
1966

I have repeatedly attempted to get included in my VA health records the diseases from which I suffered during my time as a POW, but I always get the same answer from the Army or the VA—no medical records exist. So, by God, if there is documentation about the health of an American POW with the Mukden number 1294, I want help to dig this information out. One thousand, two-hundred forty-three days of my life are a void in the official medical records.

To this day, I can still see those half-frozen, half-thawed intestines of the bodies that the Japanese medical people opened up on that autopsy table.

Also I would like to comment on the difficulty of establishing service connection with the VA for diseases occurring through my POW time. I have an 80 percent disability, all due to being medically retired from the Army in 1966. As of January of 1986, I have attempted to get service-connected status for beriberi. The Army has given me 10 percent for neuropathy. This is what they could find. They don't know where it comes from or anything. I have loss of feeling in my legs.

Scurvy, pellagra, dysentery, cerebral malaria, whatever diseases were involved in the experiments, the VA doesn't make any statement regarding these diseases, although they have addressed that I have emphysema, cardiovascular diseases, arteriosclerosis. I am a diabetic. I'm losing my eyesight. I have 20 percent disability for hearing. That's pretty good, I think. I have tried to keep a stiff upper lip. But I assure you, it's been a long, drawn-out struggle.

With the passage of the Public Law, 96-32, I think, the VA has basically not stated you are zero service-connected for it on what they found at that time that you had a physical examination. Now, what causes this over the years, right down at 80 pounds. Malnutrition? Sure. But the beriberi I had, it went from wet beriberi and progressed into dry beriberi. I had that in prison camp for 3 years. After I came out of the military, I was treated for 6 months at Fletcher General Hospital. They gave me a bottle of vitamin pills and sent me home for 30 days. I came back—and they had a diagram of me they would draw. I came back with no feelings from my elbows to my fingers, no feeling from my knees to my toes. I would smoke a cigarette and the flesh would burn on my fingers. I would smell it but not feel it. I couldn't step in the bathtub because I couldn't feel whether the water was hot or cold.

For 6 months they progressed in giving me vitamin pills. But then when I went for discharge, and I wrote beriberi on it, they called it neuropathy, which is the end result. That is the problem that the prisoner of war has.

There is no medical doctor willing to express an opinion that these had any effect on the body, which without a doubt it has. The diabetic, which was found in 1967. Arteriosclerosis, a long, drawn out item. Beriberi was nothing more than the tighening of the arteries, and the pains that we had constantly in our legs was the force of the blood trying to pass into these arteries that were contracted. It was the pain of that dry beriberi.

I thank you again for this opportunity, Mr. Chairman, to give my story.

[Prepared statement of Frank James appears on p. 46.]

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. James.

Mr. Solomon has a Foreign Affairs meeting that he must attend, so I am going to defer to him at this time.

Mr. SOLOMON. Thank you, Mr. Chairman. That's what makes you one of the best chairmen we have in this House.

Mr. James, let me just say that I really appreciate your testimony and your coming before us today. I certainly can sympathize with you. We certainly hope that we're going to be able to get some results from this hearing.

Just so we will know, when you first came home and when you were mustered out, so to speak, you went to a VA office building and were assigned a "C" number, and from that, were you able to tell your situation and place in your VA record the problems that you developed while you were a prisoner of war? Or did these problems come later?

In other words, in your testimony you say on the last page that you repeatedly attempted to get included in the VA health care records the diseases from which you suffered. I'm just wondering how many of those appear in your record now and how many you're trying to get put in your record.

Mr. JAMES. The two that appear in my record is the malaria—and this was a story, too. The Army—

Mr. SOLOMON. Malaria?

Mr. JAMES. Malaria was included in the record, and neuropathy, which they defined as the lack of sensitivity of the nerves in my hands and feet.

As far as the processing out at Camp Atterberry in 1946, the VA was in the separation center and I had filled out the document they requested. I was never brought before a VA examination until 1966. That was the first examination that the VA attempted.

The VA gave me 10-percent disability for malaria—or 10 percent for the neuropathy and 0 percent for the malaria. Then the Army sent a letter to the public health in Kokomo, Indiana, a little town of 30,000, stating I had four-plus syphilis. I was required to report to the public health. I did. They gave me a shot of biosalvasane, told me to come back next week, and they gave me a shot of bismuth, and I must take this for the next year, that I have four-plus syphilis. The Army wanted me as a recruiter, so the Army got me, a recruiter. I couldn't stay home in Kokomo, Indiana and take shots for syphilis for a year and have that hanging over me.

So the Army put me through at Atterberry, 30 days on penicillin. At the end of that I came out and went on duty. Six months later I had a check up, back in the VD ward I went again, another 30 days course of penicillin. Well, the third time they attempted that, I told the doctor "I'm running through this; what the hell is it?" He says, "Well, on the Kline test, the similarity of malaria and syphilis is the same." So they're saying I've got syphilis. Well, this doctor gave me a statement saying that the low titer serology was due to malaria, therefore, from then on out when it came up. But it cleared after some 10 or 15 years.

Then I got a letter of award from the VA stating 10 percent. It also stated in there beriberi, not service connected, which caused neuropathy. But they're not interested in what caused it. It's what they found. The doctors treated me for 6 months with vitamin B. What do they treat vitamin B to? A lack of vitamin B is beriberi. But still, it wasn't in the records that the Army presented to the VA.

We were required, when we came to the depot at Manila, on the way back from the prisoner of war camp, we signed a statement by the Army stating we would not tell before our experiences or conditions, what happened to us in the prison camp, before any audiences or the newspapers, under threat of court-martial. This was an attempt to harmonize the American public to get to like the Japanese. They didn't want us to go back and stir things up.

Mr. SOLOMON. Mr. James, did you go back into the Army?

Mr. JAMES. I did. I went back in the Army and stayed in for—

Mr. SOLOMON. So you were mustered out and then re-enlisted?

Mr. JAMES. I was mustered out, yes. I reenlisted. I could either go in the Army or stay at home and take the VD shots. So I went back in. I originally didn't intend to go back, but that's what happened.

Mr. SOLOMON. Mr. James, I could ask a lot more questions. I am sure the chairman will explore it. But it might be helpful to this committee, and the possible legislation that we might develop, if we could have access to your VA medical records, it might give us examples that we could follow a little bit later on. If you feel like giving us that permission, we might use that to explore future legislation.

Mr. JAMES. My claim number is C-1068-9611. They're the VA records at the regional office, San Francisco.

Mr. SOLOMON. We would then have your permission?

Mr. JAMES. Yes, you have.

Mr. SOLOMON. What is your disability right now?

Mr. JAMES. 80 percent.

Mr. SOLOMON. Mr. James, I really do appreciate—

Mr. JAMES. I had to quit work about 6 months ago. After I retired from the Army I got a degree in accounting and I went into the audit business. I had to quit about 6 months ago because my memory is slipping. An auditor with a slipping memory, nobody wants him around.

I applied for 100 percent but got no answer to that. TYPICAL

Mr. SOLOMON. Thank you very much.

Mr. Chairman, thank you for yielding ahead of time, too. I appreciate it. I apologize for having to leave and will try to get back.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. Solomon.

Let me ask you this, Mr. James. Your percent of disability now is 80 percent. How long has it been 80.? At what point, say, did you reach 60 percent?

Mr. JAMES. When I came out of the Army on medical retirement, I came out with 70 percent disability from the Army. The VA picked it up in 1966. So exactly what the Army said, the VA picked it up, which is arteriosclerosis, hearing loss, diabetic, emphysema, and bursitis. It got down to the fine point of a scar on my abdomen. It was zero rated, service connected.

But during the time after World War II, my medical history—these were what they could find in examinations and so forth, what led up to it.

Mr. APPLGATE. You mentioned in your statement that you have requested so many times to getting documents pertaining to yourself and other POWs and the research into the immune system. You skipped over that part in part of your testimony.

Mr. JAMES. Yes.

Mr. APPLGATE. What have you done—

Mr. JAMES. Well, really, I haven't done anything other than, you know, through the VA and through the Army. I wrote to the Army to get my period in time of war, a statement in relationship to my disabilities. Then I stated I had this, this and this during the prisoner of war times which contributed to this. Of course, they came back and said there was no medical records showing you had any of those things; therefore, beriberi doesn't have anything to do with your heart. Then I went back to the VA three times.

Mr. APPLGATE. Let me ask you this. You want to get your records. Do you think they are still available, or do you think they have been destroyed along with the other 99.5 percent?

Mr. JAMES. I think they're with the 99.5 percent, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. APPLGATE. You think they've been destroyed?

Mr. JAMES. Sure.

Mr. APPLGATE. What I will do—

Mr. JAMES. Unless they sent it back to Japan. I was on Japanese TV once before, interviewed at my home in California by the Japanese. I will write to the Oshidi after I complete this and will let the Japanese look into it. I can say "The ball's over in your court again. The Army says you've got the records. How about giving us some help from Japan?"

Mr. APPLGATE. What we could do, I would be very happy to make an attempt to try to find out myself if those records exist, with a little bit of information, the Social Security number and some other things. I would be happy to try to find that out for you. So you could submit that to me, right?

Mr. JAMES. Yes.

Mr. APPLGATE. You give me that information and I would be happy to try for you. I won't promise you that I'll be able to come up with any results for you, but you can be assured that I will try. With perseverance, maybe we'll find that record. If it has been destroyed, there is not much we can do.

Let me ask you this. Have you spent any time in a Veterans' Administration hospital?

Mr. JAMES. Yes, I have. I had open heart surgery.

Mr. APPLGATE. Where was that?

Mr. JAMES. At the Palo Alto hospital. They gave me a "rotorooter" job on the major arteries.

Mr. APPLGATE. And when was that?

Mr. JAMES. That was in 1981.

Mr. APPLGATE. How are you feeling now from that?

Mr. JAMES. I can't do much. I try to think young, but everybody says I'm an old chap.

Mr. Chairman, I want to mention something. I have here in my hand a copy of the diary by Major Peaty, who was the senior rank-

A "PING-PONG"
GAME USING
P.O.W.'S AS
THE BALL.

ing British officer in charge the British and Australian groups. He mentioned that on February 15, 1942, the Japanese were cutting the bodies up. This is an extract of his diary which he maintained throughout the POW camp.

Mr. RODRIGUEZ will mention some of the blood tests which were performed. They are very thoroughly documented in this diary, of the taking of 200 c.c.'s of blood from each individual and leaving with it. There were various tests that they would come in and perform on us, and then come back again because the tests were inconclusive, things such as that.

Mr. APPLGATE. What particular procedures in the autopsies caused you to believe that the dead men had been deliberately injected or infected with bacteria or germs? What was different from what you thought would be just a normal autopsy?

Mr. JAMES. They didn't open everybody. There were particular numbers of POWs they wanted to open. This is where I mentioned the tags. There were certain POW numbers that they wanted. It wasn't on everybody.

Mr. APPLGATE. So your supposition was that the reason they did that was because you figured those were bodies that, while they were living, had been infected?

Mr. JAMES. Had been in part of a test while they were living, and now they were following up and doing the tests before they buried them.

Mr. APPLGATE. But that was only supposition on your part?

Mr. JAMES. That's only a supposition on my part, sure. But they did put them in containers with the POW number marking on it.

Mr. APPLGATE. You had mentioned that when you arrived at Mukden on November 11 you were met by a team of people wearing masks, and they sprayed liquid into your face and gave you injections. Do you think that was just a normal procedure for delousing, or do you think that was—

Mr. JAMES. No, I don't, because there were not the regular medical personnel which stayed around our camp. They were outside medical personnel.

Mr. APPLGATE. They were not the regular medical personnel?

Mr. JAMES. No.

Mr. APPLGATE. Who were they?

Mr. JAMES. They were outside personnel, Japanese personnel.

Mr. APPLGATE. Military people?

Mr. JAMES. Military-types, Army.

Mr. APPLGATE. But they were medical people?

Mr. JAMES. They were medical people.

Mr. APPLGATE. So your supposition again is that you figure they were specialists in perhaps biological—

Mr. JAMES. If in the camp this was brought into the open, that this was going on, many of these things that had occurred, then logically there would be no way of knowing. The same way as saying what diseases were being used for this and that, that would only be known if the records were available, because they surely, definitely would be—The Australian doctor, Major Brennan, states very specifically that none of the Australians—there weren't that many, maybe 15 or 20—were used as guinea pigs. But he didn't—

nobody I think asked him if any of the other Americans had been used.

Mr. APPLGATE. You submitted your statement here today. Did you want your entire statement submitted for the record, or did you want the fourth and the sixth paragraphs deleted?

Mr. JAMES. I wanted those deleted.

Mr. APPLGATE. You want those deleted.

Mr. JAMES. That's right.

Mr. APPLGATE. You don't want any reference to those?

Mr. JAMES. No.

Mr. APPLGATE. I commend you, Mr. James. You have served your country, and you mention in here that you're trying to assure me that you are as patriotic an American as can be found. I don't think you have to assure anybody, sir. You served your country and that goes above and beyond. You fought and you were captured, and you were taken in as a captive or prisoner of war, however they wanted to term it. You were subjected to demeaning and inhuman treatment while you were captured, I'm sure.

So I just want to say that I appreciate your appearance here and your testimony. I will do all that I can to try to find out if your record is available. If it is—and I will be more than happy to check with the Army to see if it is. I will also be happy to check with the Government in Japan to see if they can check into the records again, to see if it's available.

But I appreciate your testimony. It has been most enlightening. I thank you for appearing before the committee.

Let me say that counsel to the Chair does have a question he wants to throw out to you.

Mr. MOON. It is not as much a question as it is a statement, hopefully reassuring to you, about beriberi and malaria and those other things.

You could very well, and probably, did have malnutrition and beriberi while you were in the camp. There is sometimes a breakdown in communications the way the VA tells you what they have done on your case. Now, granted, they may not find any official records of beriberi.

But you didn't have any symptoms when you got out, for two or three reasons. If you had, they would have granted you service connection for it. Number two, you probably couldn't have reenlisted right away. But I assure you, the operation of the law in the VA, if you ever have any symptoms from malnutrition or beriberi or malaria, they will grant you benefits if they're disabling. You will have no problem, even though at this time they say it's not service connected. Mainly it's because they have no records that you have anything from it. But once you have the symptoms, rest assured, they will honor it.

Mr. JAMES. They call it another name. Anything to do with the nerves in the body is neuropathy, isn't that right?

Mr. MOON. Well, I can't discuss your case at length. I understand you do have about 14 or 15 service-connected disabilities.

Mr. JAMES. I do.

Mr. MOON. And the VA measures the extent of how disabling they are. If they do get worse, you'll be paid for them. I'm just trying to reassure you of that. *SO WAKE*

*Moon is a dreamer -
He lives in never-never
land.*

Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. APLEGATE. Thank you, Mr. Moon.

Again, thank you, Mr. James. If you will give me the information that I need, my aide, Tim Sechrist, will get that information from you. Thank you very much.

Mr. JAMES. Fine. Thank you.

Mr. APLEGATE. Our next witness will be Mr. Greg Rodriguez, Jr. Mr. Rodriguez, if you would come forward to the desk. Mr. Rodriguez is a son of a former POW who spent time at Camp Mukden. We appreciate having you before the committee and are looking forward to hearing your testimony.

Again, we have your revised document here and it will be submitted to the record. If you wish to summarize it or read it—it isn't very long—I will leave that entirely up to you.

STATEMENT OF GREG RODRIQUEZ, JR.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Mr. Chairman and honored members of the committee, first let me express my gratitude for the opportunity to appear today.

My interest in the survivors of Mukden is based on an abiding concern for justice. I am the son of Mukden POW 768, a man who has been denied justice repeatedly as he sought to be a good soldier and citizen and serve his country.

In 1978, I began to research the Mukden experience. I set out to document the chaos of the compensation process that former prisoners of war must endure. I was told at that time by Government officials that there were no records of the Mukden camps.

Although I set out to document the chaos, I uncovered a calloused and culpable conspiracy designed to seal the fate of the Mukden survivors and break their will. The conspiracy I spoke of was the granting of immunity from prosecution of the war criminal Ishij.

At this time I would like to insert into my testimony the Missoulian editorial of February 24, 1986, which says, in part: "It is time the country came to the help of these tragic men.

Until it does, their unrecognized suffering and service is like a shadow over the honor of this land.

They number very few, and that's part of the rub. In the mass of veterans, the ex-POWs are a small blip. The VA has no special procedures for handling them.

Representative Pat Williams has introduced bills which would provide automatic compensation. About this, the Missoulian editorial says "Williams' bills cut cleanly through the bureaucratic bog. Never mind the technical requirements that vets are supposed to meet to win disability. The former POWs, by virtue of their hardship service alone, will be given 60 percent disability compensation."

These bills are simple justice. The eligible former POWs are dying off. There aren't many left. It won't cost this nation much to grant them what their sacrifices earned. These bills are simple justice, and must be passed.

Let me address the compensation issue further. In 1985, a thesis by Peggy Tadej, who is now an Urban Fellow in the District of Co-

lumbia Mayor's office, found that of the 490 former prisoners of the Japanese contacted, more than 200 complained about compensation problems.

Tadej correctly concludes about the Gramm-Rudman legislation. "From a political point of view, it is essential that these families push through the political barriers holding them from receiving their well-deserved compensation. However, President Reagan's proposed budget suggests eliminating all benefits for veterans with disability ratings below 30 percent and ending dependents allowances for those with ratings below 50 percent. This would, indeed, reduce the Federal outlays. Veteran beneficiaries would lose 56 percent of all their cash benefits—currently between \$66 and \$122 per month. That's based on the CBO 1985 report. All POWs that are not receiving 30 percent will be affected by these changes. This has caused great fear among former prisoners of war who aren't receiving over 60 percent."

In 1982 I appeared before an oversight committee with W.W. "Pappy" Whelchel, a survivor of Mukden. Pappy was able to describe in detail the experimentation he was subjected to by the Japanese. He became embittered before this death and he told me about Government officials. "If they weren't there, they don't care."

When he died in 1984, he was found to have cancer and 13 other disorders. Both he and his widow felt that his conditions were a result of the Japanese experiments. His widow felt that he was inadequately compensated for his suffering.

In 1983 I published a thesis for my master's degree in behavioral science. The thesis topic was the compensation issue and the conspiracy. However, as I have stated earlier, I have an abiding concern for these survivors, not just a passing academic interest.

I would now like to present evidence which I have uncovered through my research over the past 8 years. I have thousands of dollars invested in this research and hundreds of pages of formerly top secret documents. Like Diogenes, I have searched the world for an honest man. I believe in Dr. Murray Sanders I have found the man who speaks the truth about Unit 731 and the conspiracy to cover up those war crimes committed by Ishii.

From 1941 on, the Americans who served in the Pacific have been victims of a series of logical, illusory explanations or L.I.E.S. This tissue of lies has now been torn and the truth can now be seen by those who seek it.

My father and the Americans who were captured were listed as MIA and their bodies were delivered into the hands of the enemy. Forces loyal to the war criminal Hirohito had just what Ishii and United 731 wanted—American guinea pigs.

Because this hearing is concerned with the problems of compensation and not with the experiments of Unit 731, I will limit my testimony regarding the experiments.

I was contacted in 1982 by a physician who was an OSS officer during World War II. He went behind enemy lines and interrogated captured Japanese medical personnel about biological warfare. He presented his evidence in 1947 to the War Crimes Commission.

This physician spent the last years of his life assembling a manuscript about Unit 731. This manuscript is quite revealing and re-

mains unpublished. When he died, I was given the documents he had assembled and I have waited to reveal some of the data at the appropriate time.

As I stated before, the men of Mukden have been told there are no records to assist them in their quest for compensation. Just last week I uncovered about 200 pages of records about Mukden which were declassified.

Let me now quote from records which I have which state "In 1944 the BKA—" that's the bacteriological unit—"succeeded in cultivating pests which were applied to Manchurian and several American citizens captured during the war." A second document from the Investigative Division states, "This agent is making every attempt to ascertain the connection between hospitals in Japan who experimented on POWs with the Ishii unit at Harbin, and the Kwantung Army Stables at Shinkio. To date, this agent has received communication from various sources which reflect that nine hospitals in and around Tokyo were conducting experiments on POWs. It has also been brought to the attention of this agent that one organization in northern Japan, operated by a doctor named Ariyama of Niigata Medical College, was conducting experiments in artificial blood. Western Army headquarters at Fukuoka were conducting experiments on prisoner patients that followed no definite pattern."

* Mr. Chairman, one member of Unit 731, R. Naito, went on to continue research on artificial blood after he founded the Green Cross organization. The Green Cross was recently granted patents to market artificial blood products in the USA. Who says Japanese war crimes don't pay?

I would also like to point out that I have his confession here in which he states that Ishii wanted—Naito states that Ishii wanted to be at Harbin so he would have ready access to POWs. This Naito was the spy who was planted with Dr. Murray Sanders when Murray landed in Japan.

Mr. Chairman, time and again I have found documents which show that records have been kept about Americans. These include 8,000 slides taken from the bodies of Americans experimented on at Mukden. If released, these records might assist those who seek compensation.

In the dairy by Dr. Peaty I have the dates that the autopsies were done, as well as various medical experiments. I would be happy to share that, if asked.

The Americans who survived the Japanese have been treated not as patriots, but as pariahs. Of the 16,000 who returned, only 4,600 were even given physical examinations.

Mr. APPLEGATE. I'm sorry. How many?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Of the 16,000 who returned, only 4,600 were given physical examinations.

Mr. APPLEGATE. Sixteen thousand from—

Mr. RODRIQUEZ [continuing]. From the Pacific Theater. I'm speaking about the whole Pacific Theater here.

The Government that abandoned them sealed their fate by fabricating the logical illusory explanation that there are no records. The question of adequate compensation can only be addressed by the passage of legislation introduced by Representative Williams.

Only his bill provides for automatic compensation based on the presumed disabilities caused by the Mukden experience.

Mr. Chairman, the most difficult thing to overcome is the will not to believe. The horrible facts of abandonment, sell out, cover up and lies, leave me with little faith in most of our leaders. The question that remains is who will watch over those who have been chosen to watch over us.

I come before this committee armed only with the facts and the truth. I come to you today in a cause as sacred as the cause of liberty. I come to you today in the cause of humanity.

The facts are that there was a cover up, and the truth is that today men still suffer. The question you must answer is whether justice in America will prevail for these men who have been so tragically treated.

Thank you for this opportunity to appear and address the issue of adequate compensation.

[Prepared statement of Greg Rodriguez, Jr. appears on p. 48.]

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. Rodriguez, for your statement.

I cannot verify all of the statements that you make. However, I know that you put a great deal of investigatory work into it and you believe everything that you have submitted to us, and it may or may not be totally factual. I don't know, because what you state to me, much is new. But it certainly is some very strong charges.

Could you fill me in a little bit on the Green Cross organization?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. The Green Cross I believe is the largest pharmaceutical organization in Japan at this time. In fact, they are building a building in Los Angeles. As I said, they specialize in artificial blood products.

Mr. APPLGATE. Who owns that?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Naito did, but he died.

Mr. APPLGATE. But it's a privately-owned corporation?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes.

Mr. APPLGATE. Do you think it has relationships to those who served in World War II who took part in experimentations?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Well, Naito himself was a member of Unit 731, as I stated. Also, many of them went into that because it was a good way to apply what they had learned.

Mr. APPLGATE. Was that part of the BBC?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. I helped the British do the film, and it was not only a part of that film, but it has also been a part of the Tokyo Broadcasting System films which have come previously.

Mr. APPLGATE. On Pat Williams' bill, which would provide automatic compensation, which I believe it would be an automatic 60 percent—

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. That is correct.

Mr. APPLGATE [continuing]. Of all those, do we know how many are living today?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. No. The Government says they don't have any records.

Mr. APPLGATE. I think we determined by one report that there was about 1,600 or so that returned from Mukden.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Oh, yes. We know how many returned. We don't know how many are alive today.

VERY
VERY
FEW!

Mr. APPLGATE. Of that number—I don't have the figure before me of how many were Americans—but we don't know how many are alive today, so we don't have a breakdown of how many are receiving 60 percent or more now who wouldn't be eligible under the bill, or are under 60 percent.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Well, if they are already receiving 60 percent, this would not prohibit them from having the 60 percent added. It would depend. This would be automatic compensation designed to bring them up to the point so that their widows, who until now have been cut off—I can give you specific names and examples of—

Mr. APPLGATE. You're interpreting the bill as being a 60 percent add on?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. To bring it up to 100 percent. If they already have some, it would not be counted as that. If they're getting 60 percent, the 60 percent would add on and bring it up to 100 percent.

Mr. APPLGATE. Then the bill would say this compensation would be automatic for any survivor or any returnee that was in any POW experimental camp, or any camp?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. No, sir. There are two bills. One is 2412, which provides compensation for Korean prisoners of war and Japanese prisoners of war, and civilians, and 2411, which provides compensation for European prisoners of war.

You see, the problem with the past legislation is that it presumes disability but does not provide compensation, testing each man's experience on a case-by-case thing. That's cost effective; we save money that way. But is it just?

Mr. APPLGATE. I have not had a chance to go over the bill line by line, and there has been no hearings set, although we have passed a bill which was referred to earlier which would affect 4 areas for prisoners of war.

I think you made a statement—although it is not in here—that you said it off the record. But Peggy Tadej—is that her name?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Peggy Tadej, T-a-d-e-j.

Mr. APPLGATE [continuing]. Correctly concludes that "from a political point of view it is essential that these families push through the political barriers holding them from receiving their well-deserved compensation." But in there somewhere you had mentioned the fact that, if I understand, that Gramm-Rudman had an effect on the reduction of some of these benefits.

Did you state that?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. This was in 1985 when the study was done, and the responses that were received were at that time. So yes, it was based upon that. There was a great fear generated among families of prisoners of war, particularly those who have fought to get, say, up to 30 percent, when the Reagan administration said "Hey, we're going to do away with this."

Mr. APPLGATE. Well, I know there were some statements made. But let me say we fought hard to make sure that the compensation and pension benefits were protected from Gramm-Rudman, so that they are not affected by Gramm-Rudman. Counsel for the minority will want to ask a question in a minute concerning another part of your statement there.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Sir, may I point out something here?

In this diary, which was kept by Dr. Peaty—Frank James had referred to this—he referring to February 15, 1943, when it talks about the autopsies being performed. Two days before that it says "about 10 Japanese medical officers and 20 other ranks arrived today to investigate the cause of a large number of deaths." Then, the next day, vaccinations for small pox. Then the next day was the autopsies. This Japanese medical team kept coming back. The third time, as Frank mentioned, was on June 4 of 1943. The third medical investigation started. Anti-dysentery inoculation, roll call outdoors for the first time, diarrhea steadily increasing. Then Dr. Peaty says—and I quote from the June 23, 1943—"I hope that the men get through and can make known the scandal of the lack of medical care which was responsible for the deaths of 15 percent of the American prisoners of war in this camp."

Now, earlier he referred to the report by the Government which does say that there were 1575 prisoners of war. I did find a copy in the War Crimes file the Red Cross investigation of the Mukden camp, and in it the Red Cross representative says that, after investigating this, he "wished" he "were a POW." *STUPID & DIOF-NAIVE*

This was just a cover up. The Japanese told him that they had eight medical doctors working for the prisoners, also medical personnel and former medical aides. What they did was they took those slides, took the tissues from the autopsies and made 8,000 slides. The 1947 Hill-Victor report shows that there were 8,000 slides delivered to the U.S. Government from the Japanese pathologists who did the autopsies. Those slides, I believe, are at Dugway now. If we could get those slides—and I would urge your committee to try to get them; they've been very slippery—if you can get those slides, you might be able to tie a specific POW number to a specific slide.

There is proof of the experiments at Mukden. Dr. Sanders told me that he was aware of the experiments at Mukden, but not until after he cut the deal. He said he would have never cut the deal to grant Ishii immunity from prosecution if he had known Americans were experimented on. But he said that an American officer of a high rank, "whom I pledged to never reveal his name," had told him that the Americans at Mukden were guinea pigs.

I don't think we can get any closer to a smoking gun than that.

Mr. APPLGATE. Let me ask you this. Have you heard of the American Prisoners of War Information Bureau?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes.

Mr. APPLGATE. I have a report here: Prisoner of War Camps in areas other than the four principal islands of Japan, Liaison and Research Branch, American Prisoners of War Information Bureau, Captain James Norwood and Captain Emily Shek, dated 31, 1946. In it they point out that in the first year or so Camp Mukden didn't come off too well, but then, supposedly, it moved into getting back to what you were saying, into the Hoten POW camp. It sounds pretty much like what the Red Cross was saying, like it's a wonderful place to be—

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. "A model camp", it says. *I'm reading.*

Mr. APPLGATE. According to the report issued here, that's pretty much what they state—and I'm not going to go through all of these

WHERE DID
ALL THOSE
CORPSES
COME FROM
(SEE P. 17)
OR
THOSE 8,000
SLIDES, ETC.
ETC. ETC.

I must interject this information here. Recently, while attending a POW group session with the VA Social Worker Ed Mikulski at Bay Pines VA Medical Center in Florida, I spoke with a man who arrived at Mukden the same day as my husband, November 11, 1942. He told me, as Chuck had, how the Japanese stripped them in the horribly bitter cold of Manchuria -- deadly sub-zero temperatures -- and forced them to stand naked in the snow. This man told me they were forced to shed their shoes and stockings also. Being a bit older than the average young man held POW, he knew enough to remove them as ordered, but he stood on the socks, or if ordered off the socks, he stood on his shoes, and somehow avoided standing on the icy ground. Most the others did not or were unable to do this and were forced to stand on the ground. Consequently they froze to the ground and when forced to move, tore all the skin from the soles of their feet. This is only one incident in one day as a POW at Mukden. The Red Cross worker who saw it as a "model camp" was most gullible and obviously downright stupid and naive.

The anger of POWs held there, described on the following page, is most understandable.

things if you don't have it. But in just talking about medical facilities, it says the medical equipment equaled that of the Japanese Army branch hospital. There was a considerable quantity of Red Cross medical supplies, and that the prisoners had been vaccinated against small pox and inoculations for dysentery, cholera and different things of that nature. It sounds like a great place.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. It does. In fact, the Red Cross report says the "men are free". In fact, I have used the document you are referring to there as I have gone around the country interviewing men of Mukden. They become very angry and aggitated when I read to them what our Government says in that report. I found it quite effective in getting them to remember some of the details of how "good" it was there.

Mr. APPLGATE. This is not a Government report, though, as I understand.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. That's on the camp. Yes, I know what you're talking about.

Mr. APPLGATE. Well, I was just wondering if you were aware of that, which I was sure you were.

Let me defer to counsel for the minority.

Mr. WILSON. Mr. Rodriquez, all of us, of course, would want to commend your father for the great service to his country, so any questions that I might ask certainly are not intended to reflect adversely upon his service.

You made a statement I think, sir, that only 4,000 of 16,000 POWs were examined when they returned and prior to the time they were discharged. Was that your testimony?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes. I believe, if you look at the Public Law 95-479 study, page 57, you will find that substantiated.

Mr. WILSON. I have to say to you, sir, that I think the Veterans' Administration and or the military, although they might not have conducted the kind of complete examination that a former POW might have wanted, would dispute that statement and say that almost all of those people were, in fact, examined prior to the time they were discharged. *CURSORY ONLY -*

On page 2 of your testimony you make reference to a thesis by another individual, to which the chairman also alluded. Did you research the statistics in that paragraph yourself, or did you just accept the thesis of this lady?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes. This was the second thesis that was done at the behest of the president of Whitworth College in Spokane, Washington, following up the study that I had done. So I am very familiar with this.

Mr. WILSON. I would say to you, Mr. Rodriquez, that the dependency allowance for veterans drawing compensation was reduced from 50 percent to 30 percent by the Congress in about 1978 or 1979, during a previous administration, and was opposed by that administration. Did you know that?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. No, sir.

Mr. WILSON. When the budget, which is referred to in this particular paragraph, was submitted to the Congress, there was a suggestion that the dependency allowance be restored to 50 percent cases from 30 percent. Are you aware of the fact that the Congress

did not agree with that and that that dependency allowance suggestion was not, in fact, passed into law.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. As I stated, I think this is based on 1985 and I think I made that clear.

Mr. WILSON. There is a statement made here that this would reduce benefits by 56 percent for the individuals affected. I would suggest to you that that's a totally incorrect conclusion, and I would suggest to you that you might want to research that yourself again and then correct the record.

You also make a statement that these benefits would be reduced between \$66 and \$122. I would suggest to you that those are also incorrect figures and it is not nearly that much in the individual average case.

There is also a statement made that all POWs that are not receiving 30 percent will be affected by these changes, and it is inferred they would be affected adversely. Many, many POW's are not drawing compensation at all. Would you not agree that they would not be adversely affected if they weren't drawing compensation in the first place?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Those who aren't receiving any service certainly can't be hurt by cuts, that's true. ZERO FROM ZERO LEAVES ZERO

Mr. WILSON. Then the statement that all POWs that are not receiving 30 percent will be affected by these changes is really not a correct statement, is it? Would that not be correct?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. That's correct.

Mr. WILSON. Mr. Rodriguez, are you sure of your facts when you say that President Reagan's administration suggested reducing or eliminating all benefits for veterans with disability ratings below 30 percent?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. That was based upon material that I had read in a veterans' organization magazine.

Mr. WILSON. Again, I would suggest, sir, that you might want to research that again because I believe that to be an incorrect statement, also.

Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. APPLGATE. Mr. Rodriguez, could you tell me what veterans' magazine it was that you saw that? Do you recall?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. I believe that it was in the Western States chapter, a newsletter—it was a newsletter rather than a magazine—of the American Defenders of Bataan and Corregidor. I can't specifically state the page number, et cetera, no, sir.

Mr. APPLGATE. The former POWs of Bataan and Corregidor?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes. I cannot say specifically at this point—I think you are straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel, because the issue is that we need the automatic compensation which would provide compensation, without the people having to jump through the various hoops. A.Y.E.V.

Mr. APPLGATE. Would you suppose that most of the prisoners of war are receiving at least 60 percent now?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. I think the Public Law 95-479 statement would answer that. I didn't not bring that with me this morning.

Mr. APPLGATE. Counsel for the chair would like to ask a question.

Mr. MOON. I would just like to clarify your personal position on these bills. Are you saying that every POW should be entitled to 60 percent compensation, whether he has a disability or not, without a showing of disability?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. I don't think that the average industrial impairment—is that what it's called—the average industrial impairment—

YES
AS
NO
HCC
WAS
UN-
SATIS

Mr. MOON. No, it is the existence of a disability caused by service. Are you saying we should ignore the service-connected origin and pay a man 60 percent based on what type of service he had rather than any disability coming from that service?

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. I am saying that the studies have shown there are disabilities which result from being a prisoner of war, and that we should not only presume disabilities but provide them compensation for that as service-connected, yes.

CRAF, MOON!

Mr. MOON. In effect, you're saying it should be a bonus for the quality of service rather than a showing of disability.

Thank you. MOON CAN'T UNDERSTAND ALL ARE AT LEAST

60% DISABLED
FROM HARDSHIPS,
DISEASE, STARVATION
SUFFERED BY ALL
POWS HELD BY
JAPANESE.

Mr. APPLGATE. Mr. Rodriquez, thank you again for appearing before the committee. I appreciate having your testimony. We will be taking a long look at that, as well as the other testimony. This, of course, is an oversight hearing. We are not hearing it based on any specific legislation.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Yes, sir.

May I ask one question?

Mr. APPLGATE. Sure.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. Will you be appealing to the Japanese to release the records which were found?

Mr. APPLGATE. Well, yes. We will consider doing that. I am going to be writing on behalf of Mr. James specifically. It could be that I would then ask for all of the records.

If the Government would request all of the records to be returned, so that we may be able to make a copy of it. I would think the Japanese Government would be willing to do that in order to redeem themselves from the accusations and allegations that have been made.

Mr. RODRIQUEZ. The original report by Lieutenant Colonel Sanders stated that a duplicate set of records, which had been believed were destroyed, were found at Niagata, and they were given to the Department of the Army. I can provide you with that, if you want. That should be a good lead.

Mr. APPLGATE. Okay. Thank you again, Mr. Rodriquez.

Our last witness today will be Mr. William Triplett. Mr. Triplett is an author and has written and published a book which is titled "Flowering of the Bamboo", which I think has reference to our subject matter today.

We appreciate your appearing before the committee, Mr. Triplett.

STATEMENT OF WILLIAM TRIPLET

Mr. TRIPLET. Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Some of the things that I wanted to cover in my statement here have already been said in different part by other people. But since

my statement is brief, I would like to read through it because it does come at the subject at hand from a different angle and a different perspective.

Mr. Chairman and members of the committee, my name is William Triplett and I have been asked to come here today because of a book I researched for the better part of 7 years and which has been published already. The book's title, as you noted, is "Flowering of the Bamboo" and it is the nonfiction account of the 1948 Tokyo Imperial Bank murders.

My book deals extensively with the probable involvement of former members of the Japanese Imperial Army's 731 Unit in these murders. However, a great deal of my research—especially declassified Army documents—on the 731 Unit was not reproduced in "Flowering of the Bamboo" because the bank crime itself was the principal focus of my book.

But as I demonstrated clearly and unequivocally in my book, through the support of various materials, including declassified military documents: One, that 731 Unit bacteriological warfare camps existed is without question.

Two, that the 731 Unit conducted bacteriological warfare experiments on human beings is without question, and three, that U.S. military authorities of the occupation knew the above facts when dealing with former 731 Unit members is also indisputable.

I would like to say, however, that my purpose here is not to point any fingers and say who covered up what. You can look at the documents, if you wish, and judge for yourself.

But, more to the point, there are veterans here who have told of how they haven't gotten any decent VA treatment because the VA can't recognize or (identify) the disease or problem. What I would like to state for the record today is that the U.S. Government has held records, classified records, which, if they had been provided to the VA, would have helped VA physicians probably in their diagnoses of these veterans. **IF ONLY THEY HAD!!**

These are some of the records here, declassified documents from various DOD archives I have brought with me today. They chronicle in some detail a wide range of 731 Unit medical experiments on humans, with specifics on things like what bacteria was used, how much was used, how it was administered, how long did the victim take to develop symptoms, and whether the victim died, recovered, or was killed.

But as extensive as these documents I have with me are, they are really only the preliminary interrogations of the 731 scientists and physicians. As Dr. Norbert Fell, one of the senior American physicians involved in the interrogations, writes in one of the documents, "The human experiments were extensive enough to reach scientific conclusions. The methods of infection I mentioned were thoroughly explored and the results and conclusions are in no way based on imagination." These documents, which are dated mid- to late-1947, are only the very beginning of the massive information that 731 Unit members turned over to the U.S. Army.

For example—and there are two brief things I would like to read to you from this—first is from another interrogation report by Dr. Fell. "It was disclosed that there were available approximately 8,000 slides representing pathological sections derived from more

than 200 human cases of disease caused by various bacteriological warfare agents. These had been concealed in temples and buried in the mountains of southern Japan. The pathologist who performed or directed all of this work is engaged at the present time in recovering this material, photographing the slides, and preparing a complete report in English, with descriptions of the slides, laboratory protocols, and case histories. This report will be made available about the end of August."

Furthermore, from another formerly top secret report, "Members of the Japanese bacteriological warfare group are cooperating with American occupation authorities by writing books, reports and working on slides of tissues from autopsies of humans and animals who had been subjected to bacteriological warfare experiments. General Ishii is writing a treatise embracing his 20 years experience in all phases of bacteriological warfare."

These slides and these reports, these so-called books, all of which hold the exhaustive and minute details of the human experiments, have yet to be released. These details I believe would provide unfold help for the VA physicians to determine precisely what diseases and bacteria these veterans may have been exposed to. They would also reveal the full extent of just what the 731 Unit did for 10 years in Manchuria, which in large part still remains a mystery.

My ultimate point is that if anybody is going to see any sort of justice or even proper health care out of this whole affair, then all these medical reports and interrogation transcripts and treatises and specimen slides, et cetera, that the DOD continues to hold, must be made available.

Thank you.

[Prepared statement of William Triplett appears on p. 52.]

Mr. APPLEGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. Triplett. I appreciate your testimony.

I don't really know that I have anything of a specific nature, except to say that, in looking and listening, you mentioned about declassified military documents have already demonstrated clearly and unequivocally in my book, through the support of various materials. You talk about bacteriological warfare experiments on human beings as being without question, and I'm sure that it happened. I don't know—Well, I can't be sure if I don't know. The rumors have been very strong.

But the point I'm trying to make is that you don't specify in any area in here about any Americans.

Mr. TRIPLETT. Okay. There is, from the information I have seen, only one mention of American involvement. And if you think about things that happened there, and the way they happened, a lot of what you have to work with is not only what was said in these documents but also what was not said.

But in this same paper that I quoted just a while ago—and it really starts here—this report is from the War Crimes Office, Judge Advocate General in the U.S. War Department, written when the State, War and Navy Departments are formulating their positions for the deal that is about to go through. Mention is made here "It should be kept in mind that there is a remote possibility that the independent investigation conducted by the Soviets in the Mukden area may have already disclosed evidence that American

THE SHOCKING
EVIDENCE IN
TRIPLETT'S
BOOK "THE
FLOWERING
OF THE
BAMBOO" IS
DISCUSSED
FOLLOWING
THIS HEARING
TRANSCRIPT.

prisoners of war were used for experimental purposes of a BW nature and that they lost their lives as a result of these experiments."

Mr. APPLGATE. What report is that?

Mr. TRIPLETT. This comes from the U.S. War Department Judge Advocate General's Office. It starts with memoranda from the various departments that were involved in this—the State Department specifically, the War Department, and Navy Department. The part that I just quoted to you was from an appendix to that memorandum, and it is not identified in any other way other than an appendix to the State Department's memorandum in this decisionmaking process.

Mr. APPLGATE. May I have a copy of those for the record, or for our files?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Certainly. You're welcome to copies of any and all of these things.

Mr. APPLGATE. One other thing. You say, "What I would like to state for the record today is that the U.S. Government has held records, classified records, which if they had been provided to the VA would have helped VA physicians in their diagnosis of these veterans."

Mr. TRIPLETT. Yes, sir.

Mr. APPLGATE. How do you know that there are classified records?

Mr. TRIPLETT. They were classified. They were held and released only after—

Mr. APPLGATE. Oh, they are released?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Yes.

Mr. APPLGATE. So they are not classified now?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Oh, no. They are now declassified. I'm sorry. I should have said formerly classified.

Mr. APPLGATE. I just thought perhaps there were other classified records.

Had they had these available, it would have helped the VA physicians to be able to determine what?

Mr. TRIPLETT. To work with things. Now, I'm not a physician so I couldn't tell you what they could have deduced from this. But these are fairly detailed, at least in stating, as I said, what sort of bacteria was used, how it was administered, what sort of symptoms developed, how long were the symptoms sustained. In various cases you can read through these things, if you like.

Mr. APPLGATE. They could tell from that document—

Mr. TRIPLETT [continuing]. The specific type of experiment that was done.

Now, how deeply detailed it goes, I can't judge that because, as I said, I'm not a physician. But there is stuff here, no question about it.

Mr. APPLGATE. Could it tell the time and place of the experiments or anything like that?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Some identify them, some don't. Such as here, on tick encephalitis. In May 1943, lumberjacks in the Bontanko area of Manchuria became ill with fever and a paralyzing disease. During May and June the disease is most prevalent." So what happens is, quite by accident, the 731 people heard of this outbreak of

tick encephalitis that was working in that area. They then dispatched people to start working in that area to see what could be learned from tick encephalitis and then started incorporating tick encephalitis into their own experiments into Harbin.

Mr. APPLGATE. Was there anything relative to Mukden?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Yes, I was getting to that. I have it here. I don't know if I can lay my hands on it right away because there are so many. But there is one that I have seen that details anthrax experiments that were carried out at Mukden.

Mr. APPLGATE. So what you have there is part of the five-tenths of 1 percent?

Mr. TRIPLETT. I assume so, yes, sir.

Mr. APPLGATE. How much stuff do you have there?

Mr. TRIPLETT. I have not counted it page by page. I would say it's on the order of probably 150 pages, maybe a little more.

Mr. APPLGATE. You just have the one set?

Mr. TRIPLETT. Right. I am perfectly willing to leave all this material in the care of the committee if they would like to copy it all.

Mr. APPLGATE. Yes, if you would. I wonder if you could let us have that and we will xerox it.

Mr. TRIPLETT. Certainly. I should tell you that some of these are barely—they were xeroxed from what I assume were very poor originals, and some are unreadable. But with a little bit of patience and time, some things come clear, though others will forever remain lost because the xerox quality was poor. But these originals I have over here all came from the Army's Dugway Proving Ground, and if you have any way of getting to them to actually provide you the originals, they may be more legible on those accounts, I don't know. But again, all this I'm willing to leave with you if you would like to copy it.

Mr. APPLGATE. What we will do with those—they won't be made a part of the record itself, but we will keep them in our files for reference as we need them, because I think they will play a very important role in the future.

I would defer to counsel for the minority.

Mr. WILSON. Mr. Chairman, I don't have any questions, but there was a Colonel Flynn who was referred to in earlier testimony. That is really General John Flynn, who is Chairman of the Administrator's Advisory Committee on POWs and a very distinguished individual who was a prisoner of war in Vietnam for about 6 or 7 years.

Mr. Chairman, Mr. Hammerschmidt had a statement that he would like to have submitted for the record.

Mr. APPLGATE. Without objection.

[Prepared statement of Hon. John Paul Hammerschmidt appears on p. 56.]

Mr. WILSON. Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. APPLGATE. Thank you very much, Mr. Triplett, for appearing before the committee.

Mr. TRIPLETT. Thank you, Mr. Chairman, and members of the committee.

Mr. APPLGATE. I thank each and every one of you for appearing today, for those who have stayed throughout the hearing to listen,

and those who have testified before the committee. Thank you very much.

The committee is adjourned.

[Whereupon, at 11:55 a.m., the subcommittee was adjourned.]

APPENDIX

STATEMENT BY

DOCTOR JOHN H. HATCHER, PH.D.

CHIEF, ARMY RECORDS MANAGEMENT
DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY

BEFORE THE

HOUSE VETERANS' AFFAIRS COMMITTEE
COMPENSATION, PENSION AND INSURANCE SUBCOMMITTEE

AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR IN MANCHURIA

17 September 1986

(39)

(17 Mar 86)

Biographical Sketch John Henry Hatcher, OSJ, BCE, MA, PhD

John Henry Hatcher was born 10 December 1924 in Southeastern Kentucky hill country and enlisted in the Signal Corps shortly after his 18th birthday in 1943. Trained as an enlisted meteorologist and later as an Army Air Corps combat crewmember, he spent World War II in the Pacific. From occupation duty in Japan, he joined the Berlin Airlift in 1948 and along with brief combat tours in Korea and Vietnam, spent 19 of the next 23 years in Europe -- mostly in Germany.

He retired from active duty with the United States Air Force in 1971 having completed his academic education entirely on active duty. His bachelorate is from the University of Omaha, 1962; masters from Hardin-Simmons, 1963; and, doctorate from the University of Cincinnati in 1967. He has held teaching and faculty assignments with Hardin-Simmons; the University of Cincinnati; the University of Maryland in Europe; Kultus Ministerium, Baden-Wuerttemberg Komburg; and is presently Adjunct Professor with American University Graduate School. He has numerous publications in academic, archival, historical and military subjects. In 1968, the Sovereign Order of Saint John of Jerusalem conferred Knight of Grace rank on him in recognition of his work in the Kinderlift sequel to the Berlin Airlift.

Following retirement at Stuttgart and a yearlong teaching appointment with the University of Maryland, he returned to the United States in 1972 to complete post-doctoral work in the National Archives of the United States. In 1974, he accepted a position with The Adjutant General as Archivist for Southeast Asian military records. During the next two years he directed a massive project to bring some 63,000 cubic feet of Vietnam War records under effective intellectual and physical control. In 1976, he shuttled between Bangkok and Washington to direct the retrieval of American military records of the Army's Thailand experience as US Forces withdrew from the Southeast Asian mainland. Two years later, he took up residence in Ankara, Turkey, to claim and remove US Army-interest records on the disestablishment of CENTO.

In 1978, he executed a special project designed to restore control over about 1,000,000 cubic feet of retired Army records located in the 14 Federal Records Centers. The next year, he became Chief of Army Declassification Operations for national defense and security classified information and for 3 years was charged with carrying out the Presidential mandates of Executive Orders 11652, 12065 and 12356. This resulted in the declassification review and subsequent public release of about 100 million pages of previously classified information including the entire combat record of the Vietnam War.

In 1982, Dr Hatcher was appointed Chief of Army Records Management and the Archivist of the Army. Heading a staff of 30 senior analysts, he began a massive overhaul of The Army Records Management Program. The Civilian Career Management Program was expanded to cover approximately 400 positions throughout the Army. He initiated a project to "schedule" the Army's 8000+ operating ADP systems; began developmental work on MARKS to replace TAFPS; and introduced a quality of life dimension into Army records to protect the rights and interests of the soldier both during and after his uniformed career.

Presently on the staff of the Assistant Chief of Staff for Information Management, Dr. Hatcher resides with his wife, Hildegard, in northern Virginia's Fairfax County.

MR. CHAIRMAN AND MEMBERS OF THE SUBCOMMITTEE:

I AM JOHN H. HATCHER, CHIEF OF ARMY RECORDS MANAGEMENT AND ARCHIVIST OF THE ARMY. I HAVE BEEN ASKED TO APPEAR BEFORE YOU THIS MORNING TO DISCUSS THE EFFORTS THE ARMY HAS UNDERTAKEN TO DOCUMENT ALLEGATIONS OF BIOLOGICAL EXPERIMENTATION UPON AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR HELD CAPTIVE AT CAMP MUKDEN, MANCHURIA DURING WORLD WAR II AND TO DESCRIBE ANY RELEVANT DOCUMENTS PRESENTLY AVAILABLE IN ARMY ARCHIVES.

BEFORE ATTEMPTING A DIRECT ANSWER TO THE ISSUE UNDER HEARING, IT MIGHT BE HELPFUL TO LOOK BRIEFLY AT THE WAY THE DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY KEEPS RECORDS. THE DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY AND ITS PREDECESSOR AGENT, THE WAR DEPARTMENT, HAS AN EXCELLENT RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM. IT HAS BEEN DESCRIBED BY THE ARCHIVIST OF THE UNITED STATES AS THE BEST RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM IN THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT. IN MUCH THE SAME MANNER THAT THE ARCHIVIST OF THE UNITED STATES PRESIDES OVER THE RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM OF THE EXECUTIVE BRANCH OF THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT, THE ARCHIVIST OF THE ARMY IS RESPONSIBLE FOR LIFECYCLE MANAGEMENT OF THE INFORMATION BY WHICH THE ARMY OPERATES.

THIS IN NO WAY IMPLIES THAT EITHER THE ARCHIVIST OF THE UNITED STATES OR THE ARCHIVIST OF THE ARMY IS A FUNCTIONAL EXPERT IN THE SUBJECT MATTER OF ANY OF THE RECORDS THAT HE MANAGES. AND IT IS OFTEN A GREAT TEMPTATION FOR ARCHIVISTS AND RECORDS MANAGERS TO IMAGINE THAT THEY ARE EXPERTS BY SIMPLE ASSOCIATION WITH THE RECORDS THAT THEY MANAGE--A TEMPTATION WHICH IF YIELDED TO IS OPEN INVITATION TO DISASTER. THE LAW REQUIRES THEM TO BE PRESENT AT THE CREATION AND FINAL DISPOSITION, BUT THEIR ROLES ARE MINIMAL AT BEST IN BETWEEN. THIS THEN PLACES THE ARCHIVIST OR RECORDS MANAGER IN A POSITION TO KNOW WHY THE RECORDS WERE CREATED, WHO CREATED AND USED THEM, AND THEIR FINAL DISPOSITION. DISPOSITION INVOLVES THEIR RETIRED OR INACTIVE STAGES LEADING TO DESTRUCTION OR PERMANENT ACCESSIONING INTO THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES OF THE UNITED STATES.

THE ARMY CURRENTLY REQUIRES ABOUT FIVE MILLION CUBIC FEET OF RECORDS TO MANAGE ITSELF EACH YEAR. ONE CUBIC FOOT EQUATES TO 3000 PAGES OF TEXT. THIS FIGURE HAS BEEN CONSTANT, PLUS OR MINUS A COUPLE OF HUNDRED THOUSAND FEET, SINCE 1946 WHEN THE MEASUREMENT WAS FIRST TAKEN. THERE ARE TWO MILLION CUBIC FEET OF RECORD IN ARMY OFFICES AT ALL TIMES; WITH ANOTHER ONE MILLION CUBIC FEET CREATED AND

DESTROYED IN ARMY OFFICES; ONE MILLION CUBIC FEET OF INACTIVE RECORDS IN ARMY HOLDING AREAS; AND, ONE MILLION CUBIC FEET OF RETIRED RECORDS IN THE 14 REPOSITORIES OF THE FEDERAL RECORDS CENTER SYSTEM. THESE ARE MACRO-FIGURES; HOWEVER, THEY REPRESENT AN AMAZING ACCOMPLISHMENT. ARMY RECORDS HAVE VIRTUALLY STOOD STILL IN THE FACE OF A PAPER EXPLOSION IN THE RECORDS OF GOVERNMENT. DURING THE SAME 40-YEAR PERIOD, 1946-86, THE ARMY COLLECTION OF RECORDS IN THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES INCREASED FROM 39,000 TO 260,000 CUBIC FEET, I.E., A NET GROWTH OF ABOUT ONE-QUARTER MILLION CUBIC FEET AS THE SOLE RESIDUE OF SOME 40 MILLION CUBIC FEET OF RECORDS CREATED AND DESTROYED DURING THAT SAME PERIOD. THIS IS THE GREAT STRENGTH OF THE ARMY RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM--THE ABILITY TO WEED OUT AND DESTROY RECORDS AS THEY ARE NO LONGER NEEDED. THE ARMY ACTUALLY DESTROYS OVER TIME 99.5% OF ALL THE RECORDS IT CREATES.

THE ARMY CONTROLS ITS RECORDS BY A VIGOROUS SCHEDULING PROGRAM. A DECISION IS MADE AT THE TIME A RECORD IS CREATED AS TO ITS COMPLETE LIFECYCLE. THIS IS A JOINT DETERMINATION IN WHICH THE ARCHIVIST OF THE UNITED STATES CASTS THE DECIDING VOTE AS TO HOW LONG A RECORD WILL BE PRESERVED. THE ARMY CURRENTLY CREATES RECORDS IN ABOUT 3000 FILE

CATEGORIES. EACH HAS ITS APPROVED SCHEDULE. SCHEDULES VARY FROM AS LITTLE AS "WHEN NO LONGER REQUIRED" WHICH CONCEIVABLY COULD BE ONLY A FEW MINUTES TO AS LONG AS "PERMANENT" WHICH IS IN FACT THE LIFE OF THE REPUBLIC! EXCEPT FOR HOUSEKEEPING AND ADMINISTRATIVE FILES COMMON TO ALL ACTIVITIES, MISSION FILES CAN BE IDENTIFIED WITH SPECIFIC PROPONCENCIES. THE ARMY SYSTEM CONTROLS BOTH VOLUME AND IDENTIFICATION OF CREATOR THROUGHOUT THE LIFECYCLE AND BEYOND. KNOWLEDGE OF THE FINAL DISPOSITION OF RECORDS, INCLUDING DESTRUCTION, IS ESSENTIAL TO GOOD RECORDS MANAGEMENT. OTHERWISE, RECORDS SEARCHES COULD CONTINUE ENDLESSLY FOR RECORDS WHICH IN FACT NO LONGER EXIST.

THE ARMY IDENTIFIES ITS RECORDS FUNCTIONALLY AND SUBJECTIVELY. THIS IN LARGE PART IDENTIFIES BOTH CONTENT OF THE RECORD OR FILE AND ITS CREATOR THROUGH A REGULATORY NUMBERING SCHEME THAT IS SO WELL KNOWN TO THE RANK AND FILE AS PRACTICALLY TO CONSTITUTE A SECOND LANGUAGE. CONSEQUENTLY, ITS RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM IS NO MYSTERY TO ITS PERSONNEL. KNOWLEDGE OF ITS CONSTRUCTION AND CHARACTERISTICS, DESPITE MASSIVE VOLUME, MAKES SEARCHES OF ARMY RECORDS RELATIVELY SIMPLE AND NORMALLY CONCLUSIVE.

SEARCHING FOR RECORDS PERTAINING TO THE SUBJECT OF THIS HEARING IS NO EXCEPTION OR PARTICULAR CHALLENGE.

ALLEGATIONS OF BIOLOGICAL EXPERIMENTATION UPON AMERICANS AND OTHER NATIONALS HELD PRISONER OF WAR IN MANCHURIA DURING WORLD WAR II HAVE BEEN THE SUBJECT OF SPECULATION SINCE AT LEAST 1956 AND RECENTLY CAUGHT THE ATTENTION OF THE TELEVISION DOCUMENTARY INDUSTRY IN BOTH THE UNITED STATES AND UNITED KINGDOM. EVEN THE JAPANESE, HAVE PUBLISHED SOME ACCOUNTS ON IT THOUGH I DO NOT BELIEVE ANY OF THEM ARE AVAILABLE IN ENGLISH. FROM ALL OF THESE SOURCES, THIS

Shots for sure!

SUBJECT HAS FIRED THE POPULAR IMAGINATION. WE HAVE SEARCHED THE PROPER PLACES IN THE ARMY RECORD KEEPING SYSTEM THROUGH THE YEARS FOR DATA TO SUPPORT THIS CAUSE AND APPEAR TO HAVE TURNED UP SOME 200 PAGES OF SECONDARY MATERIAL. THIS APPEARS TO BE THE TOTAL ARMY HOLDINGS. WE HAVE BEEN UNABLE TO LOCATE ANY DOCUMENTARY EVIDENCE TO CORROBORATE THE ALLEGATIONS THAT ARE THE SUBJECT OF THIS HEARING. THERE MAY HAVE BEEN PRIMARY MATERIALS IN THE CAPTURED ENEMY RECORDS THAT WERE SEIZED DURING THE SCAP OCCUPATION OF JAPAN AND BROUGHT TO THE UNITED STATES AS WERE THE CAPTURED NAZI MATERIALS. ASIAN LANGUAGES PROVED TO BE SUCH A FORMIDABLE BARRIER TO THE USE OF THE JAPANESE MATERIALS THAT THEY WERE REPATRIATED IN THE LATE 1950'S TO JAPAN WITHOUT COPIES BEING RETAINED AS WAS DONE WITH THE GERMAN MATERIALS. BASED UPON THE MANNER IN WHICH RECORDS PERTAINING TO AMERICAN PRISONERS OF WAR WERE GENERATED BY MULTIPLE SOURCES AT THE END OF WORLD WAR II, CATALOGED AND PRESERVED IN THE ARCHIVES, THE ABSENCE OF SUCH RECORDS SUGGESTS THAT AMERICANS WERE NOT

Because the Army sent all back to Japan

I WILL BE HAPPY TO RESPOND TO ANY QUESTIONS YOU MAY HAVE.
can't find it... So if Army can't find it, it didn't happen !! BULL!!

TESTIMONY OF FRANK JAMES
 Committee on Veterans' Affairs
 Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance
 September 17, 1986

Mr. Chairman and distinguished members of the Subcommittee, thank you for the opportunity to speak on the subject of the use of American prisoners of war as guinea pigs for the purpose of biological warfare research by the Japanese Army Unit 731. I was one of these POWs captured by the Japanese Armed Forces after the fall of Bataan and Corregidor in the Philippines during the early part of 1942.

Of the Americans captured, 1,500 were moved by ship in 1942 from the Philippines to Manchuria. This group was joined enroute in Korea by some British and ~~American~~ ^{Australian} soldiers captured in Singapore. These men were used as slave laborers working from daybreak to darkness, seven days a week, in the Japanese factories located in Mukden.

I stated that these were "captured" Americans, not prisoners of war, since the Japanese did not recognize the standing of POWs until late 1943 and early 1944. As captives, we had not been reported by the Japanese as being alive or dead. During the period that we were held as "captives" was when we were used as guinea pigs for biological warfare research by Unit 731, which was located in Mukden and Barbin, Manchuria.

Upon arrival at Mukden on November 11, 1942, we were met by a team of medical personnel wearing masks. They sprayed liquid into our faces and we were given injections. This group (Unit 731) left the camp and returned only two more times, to my knowledge.

The following three month period after our arrival in Mukden, no medication was issued to the sick POWs. They were placed in four so-called hospital wards, with the worst cases placed in Ward 4, under the care of an Australian doctor, Major Brennan. Ward 4 had the highest death rate.

During this three- or four-month period in the winter of 1942, some 300 American POWs (or, captives, as they were regarded), had died, out of the original group that left Pusan.

Over 200 of the dead at Mukden were stored above ground in an old wooden building during the winter months. As spring approached, the bodies began to thaw, so burial details were organized to thaw out the ~~perma~~ ^{PERMA} frost on the ground and dig graves for the dead. A team of Japanese medical personnel (Unit 731) arrived with an autopsy table for taking specimens. The table was installed in the wooden building where the dead were stored and two POWs were selected to work with the team.

I was one of those two men.

Our duties were to lift the bodies off the tables the bodies that had been selected. These had been identified by a tag tied to the big toe, which listed the POW's number. The Japanese then opened the bodies (head, chest and stomach) and took out the desired specimens, which were placed into containers and marked with the POW's number. The specimens were taken away by the Japanese medical group.

Later, the group returned to Mukden again to perform what seemed to be psycho-physical and anatomical examinations on selected POWs. I was one of them.

The exams included the following: Upon entering the room, we were required to walk in footprints that had been painted on the floor, which led to a desk, at which a Japanese medical person sat. He observed us as we walked. We were also asked questions about our national origin and "American" was not accepted as an answer. It had to be "Scot," or "French" or "English" or whatever the ethnic background was. I remember being asked whether I was getting enough steak, and I answered, "What's that?"

The medical person also measured my head, shoulders, arms and legs with calipers, and asked many questions about the medical history of my family.

The impact of being used as a guinea pig for biological weapons testing may never be known unless the documents that Unit 731 turned over to the American Occupation Forces under General MacArthur -- in exchange for immunity from prosecution at the War Crimes Tribunal -- are released. Medical information pertaining to the health of each POW should be released to him, his doctor and the Veterans Administration.

In summation, Mr. Chairman, I appreciate the opportunity to be heard before this august body. I can assure you that I am as patriotic an American as can be found in our wonderful United States of America. I have always taught my daughters to be thankful that our founding fathers had the foresight to create a lasting nation, founded upon the common man and ensuring his personal rights, including the pursuit of happiness.

Yet the evidence I have given today might sound vindictive. That is not my purpose, although I admit to feeling anger about what I have learned since the war about the dealings of MacArthur and his staff on this matter.

I request that whatever documents pertaining to myself and other POWs, and the research into the immune system, be released. I am specifically desirous of obtaining the photograph taken of me by Unit 731, in early 1943. At that time, I had lost all body hair, weighed about 80 pounds and wore only a sweater. Above my head was a sign with my POW number - 1294.

I have repeatedly attempted to get included in my VA health records the diseases from which I suffered during my time as a POW, but I always get the same answer from the Army or the VA: No medical evidence exists!! So, by God, if there is documentation about the health of an American POW with the Mukden number of 1294, I want help to dig this information out. One thousand two hundred and forty-three days of my life are a void in the official medical records.

To this day, I can still see those half-frozen, half-thawed intestines of the bodies that the Japanese medical personnel opened on that autopsy table.

Thank you very much for this opportunity to speak.

AN OFTEN REPEATED
PLEA OF POWS
THAT FALL ON
DEAF EARS

TESTIMONY OF GREG RODRIQUEZ, JR.
BEFORE THE COMMITTEE ON VETERANS AFFAIRS
SUBCOMMITTEE ON COMPENSATION, PENSION, AND INSURANCE
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

Mr. Chairman and honored members of the committee, first let me express my gratitude for the opportunity to appear today.

My interest in the survivors of Mukden is based on abiding concern for justice. I am the son of Mukden POW 768, a man who has been denied justice repeatedly as he sought to be a good soldier and serve his country.

In 1978 I began to research the Mukden experience. I set out to document the chaos of the compensation process that former prisoners of war must endure. I was told at that time by government officials that there were "no records of the Mukden camps."

Although I set out to document the chaos I uncovered, a calloused and culpable conspiracy designed to seal the fate of the Mukden survivors and break their will. The conspiracy I spoke of was the granting of immunity from prosecution of the war criminal Ishii.

At this time I would like to insert into my testimony the Missoulian editorial of February 24, 1986 (Exhibit 1) which says in part: "It's time the country came to the help of these tragic men . . . They number very few, and that's part of the rub. In the mass of veterans, the ex-POWS are a small blip. The VA has no special procedures for handling them.

Williams' bills cut cleanly through the bureaucratic bog. Never mind the technical requirements that vets are supposed to meet to win disability, the former POWS BY VIRTUE OF THEIR HARDSHIP SERVICE ALONE will be given 60 percent disability compensation.

These bills are simple justice. The eligible former POWS are dying off. There aren't many left. It won't cost this nation much to grant them what their sacrifices earned.

These bill are simple justice -- and must be passed.

MR. GREG RODRIQUEZ, JR.
PAGE TWO
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

Let me address the compensation issue further.

In 1985 a thesis by Peggy Tadej, who is now an Urban Fellow in the D.C. Mayor's Office, found that of the 490 former prisoners of the Japanese contacted more than 200 complained about compensation problems.

Tadej correctly concludes "from a political point of view it is essential that these families push through the political barriers holding them from receiving their well-deserved compensation. However, President Reagan's proposed budget suggests eliminating all benefits for veterans with disability ratings below 30 percent, and ending dependents allowances for those with ratings below 50 percent. This would indeed reduce the federal outlays. Veteran beneficiaries would lose 56 percent of all their cash benefits -- currently between \$66 and \$122 per month. (CBO, 1985). All POWs that are not receiving 30% will be affected by these changes.

In 1982 I appeared before an oversight committee with W.W. "Pappy" Whelchel, a survivor of Mukden. "Pappy" was able to describe in detail the experimentation he was subjected to by the Japanese. He became embittered before his death and told me about government officials "If they weren't there, they don't care".

When he died in 1984 he was found to have cancer and 13 other disorders. Both he and his widow felt that his conditions were a result of the Japanese experiments. His widow felt that he was inadequately compensated for his suffering.

In 1983 I published a thesis for my Masters degree in Behavioral Science. The thesis topic was the compensation issue and the conspiracy. However, as I have stated earlier I have an abiding concern for these survivors, not just a passing academic interest.

I would now like to present evidence which I have uncovered through my research over the past eight years. I have thousands of dollars invested in this research. Like Diogenes I have searched the world for an honest man. I believe in Dr. Murray Sanders I have found the man who speaks the truth about Unit 731 and the conspiracy to cover up those war crimes committed by Ishii.

From 1941 on the Americans who served in the Pacific have

MR. GREG RODRIQUEZ, JR.
PAGE THREE
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

been victims of a series of logical illusory explanations or LIES. This tissue of lies has now been torn and the truth can be seen by those who seek it. *AFTLY NAMED*

The initial lie was one designed to perpetuate the myth that they were not abandoned. The American forces were told by General Mac Arthur that thousands of troops were on the way.

But the fleet that sailed was a fleet of ghost ships filled with phantom cargo. Help never came.

The men wanted to believe this logical illusory explanation. Indeed the songs of the Battalin' Bastards of Bataan and stories of the ships that never came are still topics of conversation whenever the survivors gather together. *YEP*

My father and the Americans who were captured were listed as MIA and their bodies were delivered into the hands of the enemy. Forces loyal to the war criminal Hirohito had just what Ishii and Unit 731 wanted -- American Guinea pigs.

Because this hearing is concerned with the problems of compensation and not the with experiments of Unit 731 I will limit my testimony regarding the experiments.

I was contacted in 1982 by a physician who was an OSS during WW II. He went behind enemy lines and interrogated captured Japanese medical personnel about Biological Warfare. He presented his evidence in 1947 to the War Crimes Commission.

This physicians spent the last years of his life assembling a manuscript about Unit 731. This manuscript is quite revealing and remains unpublished.

When he died I was given the documents he had assembled and I have waited to reveal some of the data at the appropriate time.

As I have stated before the men of Mukden have been told "there are no records" to assist them in their quest for compensation.

Let me now quote from records which I have which state "In 1944, the B.K.A. succeeded in cultivating pests which was applied to Manchurian and several American citizens captured during the war". A second document from the Investigative division states

MR. GREG RODRIQUEZ, JR.
PAGE FOUR
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

"This agent is making every attempt to ascertain the connection between hospitals in Japan who experimented on POW's with the ISHII unit HARBIN, and the KWANTUNG Army Stables in SHINKIO. To date, this agent has received communication from various sources which reflect that nine (9) hospitals in and around Tokyo were conducting experiments on POWs. It has also been brought to the attention of this agent that one organization in Northern Japan, operated by a doctor named ARIYAMA of Niigata Medical College was conducting experiments in artificial blood -- Western Army Headquarters at Fukuoka were conducting experiments on prisoner patients that followed no definite pattern.

Mr. Chairman, one member of Unit 731 R. Naito, went on to continue research on artificial blood after he founded the Green Cross organization. The Green Cross was recently granted patents to market artificial blood products in the U.S.A. Who says Japanese war crimes don't pay?

Mr. Chairman, time and time again I have found documents which show that records have been kept about Americans. These include the 8,000 slides taken from the bodies of Americans experimented on at Mukden. If released these records might assist those who seek compensation.

The Americans who survived the Japanese have been treated not as patriots but as pariahs.

The government that abandoned them sealed their fate by fabricating the logical illusory explanation that there are no records.

The question of adequate compensation can only be addressed by the passage of legislation introduced by Representative Williams. Only his bill provides for automatic compensation based on the presumed disabilities caused by the Mukden experience.

Mr. Chairman, the most difficult thing to overcome is the will not to believe. The horrible facts of abandonment, sell out, cover-up and LIES leave me with little faith in our leaders. The question that remains is who will watch over those who have been chosen to watch over us.

I come before this committee armed only with the facts and the truth. I come to you today in a cause as sacred as the cause of liberty. I come to you today, in the cause of humanity!

The facts are that there was a cover-up and the truth is that today men still suffer. The question you must answer is whether justice in America will prevail for these tragic men.

Thank you for this opportunity to appear and address the issue of adequate compensation.

William Triplett
3133 Connecticut Ave, NW, 801
Washington, D.C. 20008
202-462-8591

17 September 1986

To: The House Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and
Insurance of the House Veterans Affairs Committee

Mr. Chairman and Members of the Committee:

My name is William Triplett, and I have been asked to come here today because of a book I researched for the better part of seven years, and which was published last January. The book's title is FLOWERING OF THE BAMBOO, and it is the nonfiction account of the 1948 Tokyo Imperial Bank murders. My book deals extensively with the probable involvement of former members of the Japanese Imperial Army's 731 Unit in these murders. However, a great deal of my research -- especially declassified Army documents -- on the 731 Unit was not reproduced in FLOWERING OF THE BAMBOO because the bank crime itself was the principal focus of my book.

As I have already demonstrated clearly and unequivocally in my book through the support of various material, including declassified military documents:

1. That 731 Unit bacteriological warfare camps existed

Triplett--2

is without question.

2. That the 731 Unit conducted bacteriological warfare experiments on human beings is without question, and
3. That U.S. military authorities of the Occupation knew the above two facts when dealing with former 731 Unit members is also indisputable.

I'd like to say, however, that my purpose here is not to point any fingers and say who covered up what. You can look at the documents, if you wish, and judge for yourself.

X But more to the point, there are veterans here who have told of how they haven't gotten any decent VA treatment because the VA can't recognize or identify the disease or problem. What I'd like to state for the record today is that the U.S. government has held records -- classified records -- which, if they'd been provided to the VA, would have helped VA physicians in their diagnoses of these veterans. These are some of the records here -- declassified documents -- ^{from various DOD Archives} -- I have brought with me today. They chronicle in some detail a wide range of ^{731 UNIT} medical experiments on humans, with specifics on things like what bacteria was used, how much was used, how it was administered, how long did the victim take to develop symptoms, and whether the victim died, recovered, or was killed.

Triplett--3

But extensive as these documents I have with me are, they are really only the preliminary interrogations of the 731 scientists and physicians. As Doctor Norbert Fell, one of the senior American physicians involved in the interrogations, writes in one of the documents, "The human experiments were extensive enough to reach scientific conclusions. The methods of infection I mentioned were thoroughly explored and the results and conclusions are in no way based on imagination." These documents, which are dated mid-to-late 1947, are only the very beginning of the massive information that 731 Unit members turned over to the U.S. Army.

For example,

(Quote Fell document, re: slides)

Furthermore, from a formerly Top Secret report, I quote,

(S/NCC, point 4)

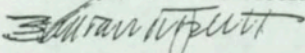
These slides, these reports, these so-called books -- all of which hold the extensive, minute details of the human experiments -- have (yet) to be released. These details would provide untold help for VA physicians to determine precisely what diseases and bacteria these veterans may have been exposed to. They would also reveal the full extent of just what the 731 Unit did for ten years in Manchuria -- which

Triplett -- 4

in large parts still remains a mystery. My ultimate point is that if anybody is going to see any sort of justice or even proper health care out of this whole affair, then all these medical reports and interrogation transcripts and specimen slides the DOD continues to hold must be made available.

BY THEN
ALL POWS
WILL BE
DEAD!!!

I swear that the above statements are, to the best of my knowledge, true and factual.



William Triplett
author, FLOWERING OF THE BAMBOO
Freelance journalist

REMARKS BY THE HONORABLE
JOHN PAUL HAMMERSCHMIDT

THANK YOU, MR. CHAIRMAN.

THIS SUBCOMMITTEE HAS LONG HAD A SPECIAL INTEREST IN THE COMPENSATION PROBLEMS OF FORMER PRISONERS OF WAR. WE HAVE RECOGNIZED THE DIFFICULTIES MANY FORMER POW'S HAVE IN ESTABLISHING CLAIMS.

THE MANY YEARS WHICH HAVE PASSED SINCE 1945 MAY COMPLICATE THE INQUIRY, BUT IT IS NEVER TOO LATE TO GIVE THIS ISSUE AS MUCH CONSIDERATION AS THE AVAILABLE EVIDENCE ALLOWS.

FORMER PRISONERS OF WAR ESPECIALLY DESERVE EVERY REASONABLE OPPORTUNITY TO ESTABLISH CLAIMS FOR SERVICE CONNECTED DISABILITIES, AND I WILL BE MOST INTERESTED TO HEAR TODAY'S TESTIMONY.

THANK YOU, MR. CHAIRMAN.

TESTIMONY OF PEGGY TADEJ
BEFORE THE COMMITTEE ON VETERANS AFFAIRS
SUBCOMMITTEE ON COMPENSATION, PENSION, AND INSURANCE
SEPTEMBER 17, 1986

Mr. Chairman and honored members of the committee, I come here today not as an expert, the only true experts are those who live with former Prisoners of War (POWs). These families have been subjected on a daily basis to the individualized problems faced by POWs. I am here to relate what I found to be true while gathering data for my research on Post-Traumatic Stress Disorders (PTSD).

PTSD is a condition suffered by many who do not even realize to the extent they have it or deny they may still be suffering. This condition is related to a stressor and followed by the psychological traumatic event that is outside the range of usual happenings or events. The stress producing the syndrome would invoke significant symptoms of stress in most people. Frequently their is a physical component of the trauma that involves direct damage to the central nervous system. This disorder is apparently more severe and longer lasting when the stressor is of the human design, such as malnutrition. Recent studies of former military POWs which were used to support the passage of H.R. 97-37 showed that malnutrition suffered by POWs causes premature death rates. Further, these studies show that one year of captivity is equivalent to (4 years) of normal aging. The mortality rate and heart conditions continue to plague the POWs.

YES!

Through the process of interviews, phone calls, the results of a questionnaire, and correspondence from POWs and their wives, I have compiled information I would like to share with you. Most of the information gathered has gone literally unrecorded. From the interviews I have conducted comes an oral history of the problems as seen by the former prisoners and their families.

My study examines the psychological effects left on American Ex-POWs of World War II and their families. In it, I attempted to examine reasons for the silence on the part of the survivor, his spouse and family, and the government to help make sense of the experience and bring understanding to this abnormal behavior.

Up to now, the men have remained silent and therefore the government has done nothing. I called this the "Legacy of Silence". They remained silent so as not to endanger their chances of staying on active duty. Those who did chose to leave the military were mustered out with wholly inadequate medical examinations. Many of the men who remained in the service after returning home, did so because they realized their medical problems resulting from imprisonment would require constant

1

EVERY JAP.-HELD POW I KNOW SUFFERS
PTSD, INCLUDING HUCK LEWIS.
SANDY SANDMIRE MUST DEAL WITH
IT DAILY YET TODAY!

attention and they expected to receive it as an active duty member of the military.

One POW explained his attempts to recreate his medical history to avoid later problems with the Veterans Administration (VA) at retirement. He contacted a camp doctor to verify his medical prognosis. The doctor had been at the same camp and after doing all he could for this POW he left him to die under the building in the cool mud. However, the POW's friends rescued him. But today, the doctor - perhaps due to the embarrassment - could not remember his case. The doctor did admit though that this POW had been under his care in the camp.

The pattern of illness that each of these men have are virtually undocumented in their VA records. The PTSD, heart problems, stomach problems, and skin irritations are more common among POWs. The major complaint was finding an American medical doctor who understood the (residuals) of malnutrition and extreme stress. The men who were fortunate enough to be treated by knowledgeable medical professionals found it made a significant difference.

My questionnaire was mailed to 490 American Defenders of Bataan Corridor Western States Chapter organization. Over 200 were returned, which is a 40% return. Only 156 were used to run the statistical data due to incorrect or incomplete responses.

Attached for your review is a copy of the questionnaire and the statistical results. I would like to point out several conclusions which can be drawn from the study:

The majority were in good health at the time of capture or imprisonment.

The average time spent in the POW camps was 40 months.

While 93% of POWs were in need of some type of medical treatment; only 16% were fortunate enough to receive any type of medical assistance.

Those who were most severely mistreated were the least likely to request medical assistance upon their return to the U.S.A. and even today continue to have adjustment problems.

If the administration's proposed budget cuts were implemented POWs with a disability rating of 30% or less would lose their benefits. My sample shows that the majority received less than 30% disability.

Most of the men were in more than one camp, the camps listed were in China, Japan, Philippines, Korea, Mukden, Taiwan, Burma, Europe, and Java. There were 23 Mukden survivors this is 30% of my total sample. From the Mukden survivors sampled 14 received 30% and less for disability and 9 were rated 60% and above. For the breakdown see the chart below:

DISABILITY RATING OF MUKDEN SURVIVORS

Disability Rating	Number Receiving Disability
0%	6
10%	5
20%	1
30%	2
60%	2
70%	2
80%	1
100%	4
	<u>23</u>

All of the Mukden survivors suffered any number of these diseases: malaria, berri berri, dysentery, pellagra, pneumonia, ulcers, dengue fever, T.B., scurvy, jaundice, lung infections. Yet, none of those responding have received disability for these diseases.

Those receiving disability are not being compensated for their POW experience. Quoting from one of the questionnaires that enclosed his VA claim letter. "Heart disease, bronchitis, residuals of chest pain, and arthritis, left shoulder were not shown by the evidence of record, and therefore, cannot be service-connected."

Because there are "no records" than presumptions or the conditions resulting from these diseases need to be compensated for even as they show up later in life and are recognized as a result of their experience as a POW. Medical research backs the complaints of reoccurring fevers from malaria. These individuals have had an extraordinary experience, one that is not related to any other. They deserve all your considerations.

Factors that enabled the men to survive were categorized as: faith, family, hope, humor, and anger. Although these factors pulled them through the prison camp experience, they have no correlation in aiding the POW in their adjustment today. Being alienated by foe, the country they served and the family they instill with the "Legacy of Silence", has left the POW and their families feeling victimized. The former POWs and their families have been left with the impression that the Government doesn't care, causing a psychological illusion of abandonment. As one woman commented "This is absolutely the first time anyone has cared enough to ask a wife of a POW how they are coping. We need help too! 'Walking away' is not solving or helping this situation."

If Government is of the people, by the people and for the people, then let these questionnaires be an indication of what the people in justice expect from you today. Please hear their cry for our support in helping them receive the compensation due.

In concluding there are two reasons for the need for Congressman Williams proposed bill:

1. The psychological effect that adequate Compensation would have on the POW's and their families, and allow them the treatment and health care they are entitled to.
2. The second result the passage of this legislation would be to provide the financial security in overcoming the deficiency in monies needed to survive and help alleviate the "family strife". Thereby ending the "Legacy of Silence".

Truly named ↑

EVALUATION OF THE QUESTIONNAIRE

The questionnaire was mailed to 490 American Defenders of Bataan Corridor Western States Chapter organization. Over 200 were returned, which is a 40% return. Only 156 were used to run the statistical data due to incorrect or incomplete responses.

HISTORY OF IMPRISONMENT

1. What was your rank at the time of captivity?

EM	PFT	SPEC	STG	LT	CAPT	CORP	OTH
5%	37.2%	9.9%	26.4%	7.4%	3.3%	9.1%	1.7%

2. What was the last grade of school completed?

8th grade	8.5%
8 - 10th grade	14.6%
11 - 12th grade	41.5%
1 year of college	10 %
2 years college	7.7%
3 - 4 years college	10 %
more	7.7%

3. What was the general state of health on the day you were first captured?

I was not sick, injured, or wounded	48.5%
I was sick, injured, or wounded	36.2%
I was not able to walk because of sickness, injury or wounds	1.9%
Other state of health when captured	13.1%

4. List the POW Camps in which you were held. Begin with the first one and time spent in each.

China	3
Japan	10
Korea	2
Phillipines	136
Mukden	23
Taiwan	4
Europe	1

* these are actual numbers because responses all spent time in more than one

Average months held captive 40 months

5. Did you require medical treatment while you were a POW?

Yes	No
93%	6%

6. For what conditions did you need medical treatment?

Malaria/Fevers	89%
Beri-Beri	28%
Skin Conditions	30%
Malnutrition	100%
Other	37%

7. Did you receive the medical treatment you needed?

YES	NO
16.5%	81.3%

8. Who usually provided the medical treatment?

I had no medical treatment	14.9%
I was treated only by a doctor who was a POW	66 %
I received poor treatment from enemy doctors	10.6%
I received good treatment from enemy doctors	2.1%
Other	6.4%
Blank	7.7%

9. In your opinion was the medical treatment adequate?

YES	NO
5.3%	91.6%

10. What was difference in weight from when you first entered the military and after being released as a POW?

The median weight difference 65 lbs.

11. Listed below are a number of fairly common experiences which POWs underwent. Please check any of them which applied to you:

Death March	51.7%
Solitary confinement	34.9%
Hard labor	86.9%
Threatened group punishment	91.8%
Held in prison ship	84.2%
Withdrawal of privileges	80.8%
Attacked by allied air or naval forces	66.9%
Physically punished, beaten or tortured	79.5%
Intensive/prolonged interrogation	28.1%
Enforced idleness	19.9%
Repeated solitary confinement	8.9%

Repeated solitary confinement	8.9%
Mistreatment by fellow POWs	13 %
Inadequate/deficient diet	89 %
Infected with germ warfare	15.3%
Other	20 %

12. What factors enabled you to survive your POW experience which you felt aided you to endure the hardships of captivity?

Faith	Family	Hope	Humor	Anger
55.5%	22.9%	38.5%	7.3%	12.8%

MILITARY STATUS

13. Are you now:
- | | |
|------------------------|-------|
| on active duty | 2.3% |
| on military retirement | 37.9% |
| left active duty | 59.8% |
14. When you resumed active duty after the imprisonment did you pass the regular physical examination 50.5%
have the physical standards waived 40.4%
15. If you are retired from active duty, under what conditions did you retire?
- | | |
|---------------------------|-------|
| Disability | 39.6% |
| given a medical discharge | 28.7% |
| other | 31.7% |

CURRENT DISABILITY STATUS

16. Have you applied for a disability rating from the Veterans Administration?
- | | |
|-------|-------|
| YES | NO |
| 87.5% | 12.5% |
17. Have you been rated for a disability by the VA?
- | | |
|-------|-------|
| YES | NO |
| 83.7% | 16.3% |
18. If you have been awarded a disability rating, please indicate from your award letter:
- | | |
|--------------------|-------|
| TYPE OF DISABILITY | |
| Physical | 62.9% |
| Psychological | 31.6% |
| Nervous System | 25.2% |
| Visual impairment | 16.5% |
| Other | 26.3% |

PERCENT	NUMBER RESPONDING
10%	19
20%	10
30%	11
40%	7
50%	12
60%	9
70%	11
80%	5
90%	0
100%	22
Missing	29
other	21

19. The average age now is 65.

20. Listed below are a number of conditions, characteristics, or problems. Check those that are true for you today.

Financial trouble	15.8%
Domestic/Marital difficulties	25.7%
Sexual inadequacy/impotence	60.7%
Drinking to excess	18.4%
Boredom	32.2%
Restlessness	73.4%
Reoccurring or severe nightmares	62.9%
Irritability	64.3%
Persistent or reoccurring pain	63.6%
Drug dependency	9.8%
Difficulty in concentrating	63.6%
Other	25.9%

21. Beside each of the statements presented below, please indicate whether you Strongly Agree (SA), Agree (A), Disagree (D), Strongly Disagree (SD), or are Undecided (U).

a. The mortality rate of former POWs is lower than the national average.

SA	A	D	SD	U
17.9	12.9	8.6	57.1	3.6

b. Germ Warfare was used on very few of the men that you know of:

SA	A	D	SD	U
18.1	47.1	5.1	5.8	23.9

c. The Government should pay the POWs 100% disability

SA	A	D	SD	U
48.9	16.5	15.1	6.5	12.9

d. The Government is too much involved now in the problem

SA	A	D	SD	U
8.2	4.5	31.3	50.0	5.2

e. The POW experience is something each individual has to deal with and make sense out of in their own best way.

SA	A	D	SD	U
26.5	39	12.5	16.9	5.1

f. The Government has been helpful in bringing understanding to the situation.

SA	A	D	SD	U
3.6%	23.6%	25%	38.6%	9.3%

22. Have you received psychological counseling?

YES	NO
35.5%	61.7%

23. Which of the categories listed below describes your overall political orientation.

Strongly Conservative	14.1%
Moderately conservative	43.7%
Middle of the Road	33.8%
Moderately liberal	7%

24. What is your religious identification

Protestant	Catholic	Jewish	Other	None
60.3%	16.9%	4.4%	8.1%	10.3%

25. Please estimate your gross annual income

less than 8000	11.5%
8000 - 11,999	23.8%
12,000 - 19,999	23.8%
20,000 - 29,999	25.4%
30,000 - 39,999	6.9%
more	8.5%

WAYS THINGS COULD BE DIFFERENT

26. Would you be interested in seeing the legislative changes suggested in the enclosed legislation?

YES	NO
94%	3.7%

27. Would you be willing to send a letter to your State Representative to co-sponsor the legislation?

YES	LETTER SENT	NO	BLANK	OTHER
90%	36%	6%	13%	8%

28. Would you take advantage of the benefits being offered by the proposed legislation?

YES	NO
86.3%	12.2%

29. Would you recommend the doctor you are seeing now as "learned" and supportive of your POW experience:

YES	NO
43.1%	55.3%

10

○

65-338 (72)

See page 282 for declassified documents referred to by Dr. Hatcher which document biological warfare (BW) experiments by Japanese.

As I continue researching the horrors of Unit 731 -- the BW unit (Bacterial Warfare) of the Japanese -- the truth emerges more and more clearly from more and more writings, documents, books, news articles, clippings, congressional hearings. In the Congressional transcript included herein there is a mention of William Triplett, one of the witnesses and his book, FLOWERING OF THE BAMBOO. Selby Library in Sarasota had a copy of the book, and I quote parts of it here. Triplett was writing about an infamous murder case and bank robbery in Japan, but in his searching for facts he came across facts about Unit 731. He says:

"The Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars is an esoteric journal, the likes of which I'd never read before my research on the Teikoku crime began. An article in the October 1980 issue had caught my attention. The author, John W. Powell, had secured an array of U.S. Army documents through the Freedom of Information Act, and presented conclusive evidence of a rather ugly deal the U.S. Army had struck with some former Japanese military men in 1947. Powell showed that senior military and civilian officials in Tokyo and in Washington, D.C., had succeeded in covering up the deal.

"As far as dirty ventures went, this one was fairly impressive. Not only were the Army's partners "Class A" war criminals, which had meant a guaranteed death sentence from the International Military Tribunal, but they were also responsible for the barbaric and scientific murder of American Prisoners of War. The article said that the Army had known all of this in advance of the deal, and had decided that the information they could obtain was worth any risk and any price.

"Sometime in the late 1930s Japan had begun an intensive field program to develop germ warfare. Throughout Manchuria and in the various provinces of occupied China, Japan's 731 Regiment, which had been formed and commissioned for this top-secret program, built installations for research. From the day their work began and until the Russians invaded Manchuria in August 1945, this infamous 731 Regiment infected, dissected, bludgeoned, injected, poisoned, vivisected, and simply cut up people in the name of researching and developing bacteriological weapons. Most of the subjects for these experiments were Chinese, but occasionally an American or Soviet POW was mixed in with the others to see if Caucasians withstood germ-infection differently than Orientals. Major research was conducted on plague, cholera, anthrax, glanders, syphilis, and dysentery. A good deal of time was also devoted to pumping prisoner-subjects full of horse blood to see if it would work as a substitute for human blood. It didn't. After suffering horrible convulsions and seizures, each victim died.

"After the war, rumors about Japan's biological warfare program surfaced. The Americans, a step ahead of the Soviets, caught up with some senior officials of the 731 Regiment who were willing to sell the results of their experiments in order to avoid even a cameo appearance before the International Military Tribunal. The price was high -- complete immunity and protection of all 731 personnel from any war crimes investigation or charges -- but the U.S. Army bought it." p. 69-71. unquote

In attempting to uncover the reasons behind the reluctance to prosecute the suspect of the bank robbery murders of which he wrote, Triplett discovered with shock the reason. The suspect Hirasawa was one of those in Unit 731. Neither the Japanese government nor the U.S. Army wanted publicity drawn to this man.

Another shock to me was the mention by Triplett of The Daily Yomiuri, the English language edition of the Yomiuri Shimbun, one of Japan's largest and oldest newspapers. A Philip Nagao of the Library of Congress called me in response to my letter for information regarding Unit 731 and the possibility of my husband, Charles J. Lewis, being subjected to these experiments along with other POWs at Mukden. My notes re the call are included in this chapter. He stressed to me over and over, almost pleading with me, to cite the December 7, 1985 information in Yomiuri Shimbun in all of my writings. He kept telling me that information was a reality, but he could not provide it. He told me over and over, "Do you understand? I cannot give it to you. Congress has subpoenaed it." I am presently trying to obtain a copy of that issue to include with this book through the International Library Service and also direct from the paper itself, from Managing Editor Kenya Mizukami, 7-1, 1-Chome, Otemachi-Chiyoda-Ku, Tokyo, Japan 100.

Continuing with quotes from Triplett's book: page 141-142. "Tokyo, 6 May 1947, cable from Commander in Chief Far East, to War Department, Washington, D.C. Experiments were known to and described by three Japanese and confirmed tacitly by Ishii (General Shiro Ishii, 731 Regiment); field trials against the Chinese ... took place on at least three occasions, scope of program indicated...that four hundred kilograms of dried anthrax organisms destroyed in Pingfan (Manchuria) in August 1945...Reluctant statements by Ishii indicate he had superiors (possible general staff) who knew and authorized the program. Ishii states that if guaranteed immunity from "war crimes" in documentary form for himself, superiors, and subordinates, he can describe program in detail. Ishii claims to have extensive high-level knowledge including strategic and tactical use of biological warfare (BW) on defense and offense, backed by some research on best BW agents to employ by geographical areas of Far East, and use of BW in cold climates....

"TOKYO, 18 November 1976, Washington Post wire: Japanese scientists killed at least 3,000 prisoners during World War II through bacteriological warfare experiments and escaped prosecution by sharing their findings with American occupation forces, a Japanese television documentary has alleged.

"At a high-security camp in Manchuria...the scientists allegedly killed the prisoners by infecting them with plague, cholera, anthrax, and typhoid.

"Five former members of the unit told television reporter Haruko Yoshinaga they were promised complete protection in return for cooperation with U.S. authorities. (Yoshinaga's) hour-long expose was recently aired by the Tokyo Broadcasting System, the largest commercial network here.

"Yoshinaga travelled throughout Japan to track down 20 former members of the wartime unit which had the code title "731." "They trembled, shook, some were so shocked they couldn't speak. As I stood next to one man who is now a health center official I could hear his heart pounding."

"One witness told Yoshinaga that on August 9-10, 1945, the remaining prisoners were poisoned after refusing to commit suicide. He described feeling "unreal" as he carried and dragged away the bodies to be burned.

"Another former officer told Yoshinaga: "The spirit of 731 still exists, and we can be proud of that."

"TOKYO, 7 April 1982, UPI wire: The Japanese government has confirmed the existence of a secret World War II Imperial Army unit that allegedly killed more than 3,000 people... in chemical and biological experiments. The atrocities were committed by the Imperial Army's unit No. 731 stationed in Harbin. Also called Ishii Troops after its commander, Lt. Gen. Shiro Ishii, the unit has been blamed...for killing more than 3,000 persons who were used as human guinea pigs."

When, after an interview with Ishii, Jiro Fujita, Police Chief, backs away from further investigation of the murder suspect in the bank robbery Triplett started out to write about, Triplett asks, page 214:

"Maybe Fujita, who knew of at least part of some sort of deal between 731 and the U.S. Army, was beginning to realize the dangerous ground his investigation was on. Fujita knew that the 731 informants had to be protected from the IMT. He also knew that the Imperial Army had conducted poisoning experiments on humans in Manchuria and Korea during the war. He knew that publicity would expose these people and their crimes. Did the meeting with Ishii reveal or suggest the scope of these crimes were much larger than he ever imagined? Did the absolute secrecy GHQ demanded

about Ishii imply to him that what was at risk was the complete disgrace of his country and his Emperor? Could Fujita have known through intelligence circles that the Emperor's signature was on the 731 charter, and that one of the staff officers at the Operations Division of 731 was a Lt. Col Miyata, who was none other than Prince Takeda himself of the Imperial family? In the absence of a full investigation of the 731 Regiment, the truth may never be known." (Emphasis provided.)

Those of you reading this, if you recall your history, know that the Emperor of Japan was absolved of any war crimes with our government stating he was only a "figurehead" with no real power. In light of the above, I wonder!

What was Philip Nagao trying to get across to me when he called from the Library of Congress? I believe he was trying to tell me there are facts concerning BW on POWs that are still being concealed and I should not give up trying to find out what they are. I am trying to obtain a copy of the December 7, 1985 Yomiuri Shimbun, and will include it if I succeed.

Below is the context of what is entitled: "Appendix B - Discussion"- identified as SFE 118/2 - stamped by the United States Government as "Confidential" and declassified by order of the Secretary of the Army by tag per 77-475 on 8 July 1977. It reads:

1. The value of Japanese BW (Bacterial Warfare) information:

a. Data already obtained from Ishii and his colleagues have proven to be of great value in confirming, supplementing and complementing several phases of U.S. research in BW, and may suggest new fields for future research.

b. This Japanese information is the only known source of data from scientifically controlled experiments showing the direct effect of BW agents on man. In the past it has been necessary to evaluate the effects on man from data obtained through animal experimentation. Such evaluation is inconclusive and far less complete than results obtained from certain types of human experimentation.

c. In addition to the results of human experimentation much valuable data is available from the Japanese experiments on animals and food crops. The voluntary imparting of this BW information may serve as a forerunner for obtaining much additional information in other fields of research.

"2. Desirability of avoiding "war crimes" involvement.

a. Since it is believed that the USSR possesses only a small portion of this technical information, and since any "war crimes" trial would completely reveal such data to all nations, it is felt that such publicity must be avoided in interests of defense and security of the U.S. It is believed also that "war crimes" prosecution of Ishii and his associates would serve to stop the flow of much additional information of a technical and scientific nature.

b. It is felt that the use of this information as a basis for "war crimes" evidence would be a grave detriment to Japanese cooperation with the United States occupation forces in Japan.

c. For all practical purposes an agreement with Ishii and his associates that information given by them on the Japanese BW program will be retained in intelligence channels is equivalent to an agreement that this Government will not prosecute any of those involved in BW activities in which war crimes were committed. Such an understanding would be of great value to the security of the American people because of the information which Ishii and his associates have already furnished and will continue to furnish. However, it should be kept in mind that there is a remote possibility that independent investigation conducted by the Soviets in the Mukden Area may have disclosed evidence that American prisoners of war were used for experimental purposes of a BW nature and that they lost their lives as a result of these experiments, and further, that such evidence may be introduced by the Soviet prosecutors in the course of cross-examination of certain of the major Japanese war criminals now on trial at Tokyo, particularly during the cross-examination of Umezu, Commander of the Kwantung Army from 1939 to 1944 of which army the Ishii BW group was a part. In addition, there is a strong possibility that the Soviet prosecutors will, in the course of cross-examination of Umezu, introduce evidence of experiments conducted on human beings by the Ishii BW group, which experiments do not differ greatly from those for which this Government is now prosecuting German scientists and medical doctors at Nuremberg."

unquote

I believe there is no excuse for not prosecuting Ishii and his murderers for their crimes against POWs. It is inhuman! However, I can hear those who would argue that since the POW lives were sacrificed, should we not use the information so their deaths were not in vain. Our United States of America covered up these crimes. But even more horrendous in my mind is that fact that those prisoners of war in Mukden, Manchuria who are suffering yet today from all sorts of vague, undiagnosed, misunderstood illnesses and have been suffering all these years have been denied care -- have been denied compensation -- have been denied service-connection for these illnesses because "there is no record". Of course not. It was hidden deliberately to protect Ishii's Unit 731.

It will soon be a moot problem for our government and the VA as there are so few, if any, of these men left alive today. A handful at best. In fact, the numbers of our POWs held by the Japanese is dwindling rapidly. So few are left. When they are all gone can we all then forget their suffering and let our consciences rest? NO! THAT IS WHY I WRITE ALL I CAN SO FUTURE GENERATIONS MAY HAVE AN OPPORTUNITY TO KNOW, UNDERSTAND AND APPRECIATE THESE AMERICAN HEROES.

姿を見た者はいません。李さんはその時、爆死したと思いますが、真相はチョンリが知っているでしょう」

〔筆者註〕

李通訳の死因については、李さんを殺したという元憲兵の証言をうけている。彼はいま病床にあるが、自分の犯した罪を悔い、

「上官の命令で李さんと親しかった自分が李さんを殺す役目を引き受けさせられた。後方から近寄って射殺した。李さんとはとても仲がよかった。射つた後、あまりに可哀想で形見に李さんの腕時計をはずしてもってきた。しかしそれをはめていると毎夜李さんの夢を見てうなされるので引揚船から海の中へ捨てた」

と告白した後、我々が中国取材旅行に出発する前にせめてもの弔慰にと一万円を託した。白さんにその憲兵の名を告げたが、記憶になかった。

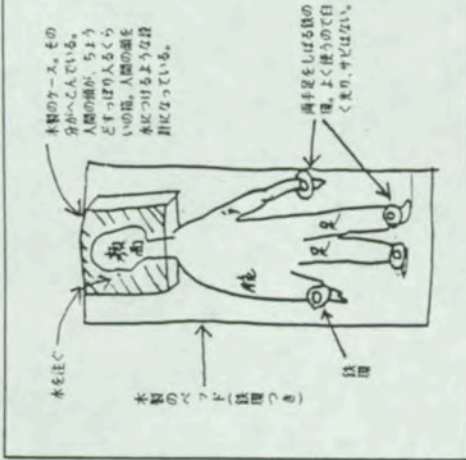
「ヤキサワ（八木沢）という日本人幹部もいました。ヤキサワは小柄で髭を生やしており、農場の責任者でした。ヤキサワの農場では、農繁期に中国人婦人労働者を臨時に雇いました。ヤキサワの下には、タナカ（田中）という日本人がいました」

「匪床の刑」恐怖の水責め

七三一部隊は中国人を完全に支配するために「恐怖政治」を布きました。その恐怖の執行

LYCLE LEL. 10-86

匪床の刑(下里正樹氏の取材メモ)



機関として、七三一の北門から約半里（二百五十メートル、中国の一里は五百メートル）の位置に「衛門院」という拷問所をつくりました。「衛門院」は役所という程度の意味です。そこで何が行なわれたか、お話ししたいと思います」

「衛門院」は老虎屯の集落にあった。老虎屯（老五屯）は勞務班の意味で正黄旗五屯の元の名である。外観はごく普通の民家で、土間に囲まれた屋根に草が生えた平屋だった。私は建物の修理を命じられ、一度屋内に入った。建物の広さは、東西七メートル、南北六メートルくらいで間取りは五室であつた。二部屋の隔壁を打ちぬいて一室にしていた。一室が勞務班の事務所で、他の四室に拷問用の責め道具がたくさん置かれていた。

——中国人勞務者が最も恐れていたもの

This crude drawing from "The Devil's Gluttony" by Seitchi Mortmura needs no translation. It clearly shows how POWs were shackled for their medical/bacterial experiments.

March 31, 1987

24-74 Lysle Lewis
Dr. Desmond Brennan
c/o National AXPOW Headquarters
3201 E. Pioneer Parkway #40
Arlington, TX 76010-5396

Dear Dr. Brennan:

On page 9 of the April, 1987 issue of Ex-POW Bulletin (Volume 44, No. 4) I read about your recent inquiry about the destiny of 150 American POWs sent out of Mukden POW camp in May, 1943. I can't locate the original inquiry in my POW Bulletins but want to write to inform you of what I know.

My husband was at Mukden, and then sent to Kamioka as a "trouble maker" - a term he was most proud of. He died on November 17, 1983. In May, 1984, a fellow POW who was with him at Mukden called me and asked if I had heard of the medical experiments on POWs at Mukden. At that time I had read very little about it. He then told me my husband, Chuck, had been one of those. I was devastated. Then in December, 1984, the TV program 20/20 presented what information they had. Things began falling into place. I realized that the reason the POWs have said nothing is that they were not aware of what was happening as Chuck told me one time some years ago, "You know, those queer bastards even came around at night and stuck feathers up our noses." I asked, "Why in the world would they do that?" His reply was, "Damned if I know -- just to dedevil the life out of us even by disturbing our sleep." Right after the program my son who was watching up in Ohio called and as we sobbed together on the phone, he said, "Now we know WHY the feathers, Mom."

Since then I have searched diligently for factual information. I managed, through a priest friend in Japan, to obtain news clippings from Japanese newspapers (printed in English) concerning these experiments. I will be glad to send you everything about this if it will be of help. I sent copies of everything to U.S. Rep. Douglas Applegate who was conducting hearings on this matter last year (1986) and he wrote me stating he made the information a part of the official record.

Please let me know if and how I can be of assistance to you. I think what distresses me almost as much as the facts of the experiments is that our own government has kept it from us all these years and I had to get what I could from Japanese publications.

God bless you,

Lysle Lewis

Mrs. Lysle Lewis, 1804 Springwood Dr., Sarasota, FL 33582
Phone: 813/377-0111 236

TO:
Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, FL 33582

AMERICAN
EX-PRISONERS OF WAR
NATIONAL HEADQUARTERS
(817) 649-AXPW
3201 EAST PIONEER PARKWAY, SUITE 40
ARLINGTON, TX 76010



Dear Lysle,

I have forwarded your letter to PNC Stan Sommers. He is chairman of the MedSearch Committee and is more knowledgeable on this subject than I am. I watched the program on ABC too. I was amazed!

Good luck and thank you for your information and help.

Sincerely,

Clydie J. Morgan
National Adjutant

cc: PNC Stanley G. Sommers, MedSearch
1410 Adler Road
Marshfield, WI 54449

4/8/87

Dr. D. J. Brennan
M.B. B.S. (SVD), M.R.C.P. (LOND.),
F.R.A.C.P.

No. 1 Miller Avenue,
Ashfield, 2131

TELEPHONE: 798-7212
IF UNANSWERED CALL
660-7766

1.6.87

197

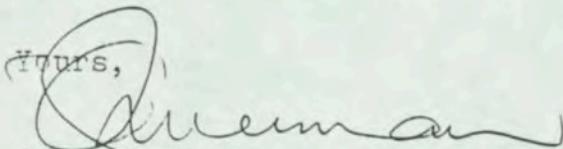
Dear Mrs Lewis,

I am sorry that my enquiries caused you so much concern and anguish, and I must thank you for taking the trouble to send your letter. I have received many replies for this request of mine and all, like yours, have well and truly answered my question.

of
This was brought about because/the B.B.C. Programme of a "Death Camp" in Mukden where the Japanese are said to have performed horrible experiments on living prisoners before killing all of them. The programme stated that these were 100 Australians used in this camp and since there were only 16 of us there and we all got home intact, I wondered just how much truth there was in their sources of information. I thought I could account for all the Mukden captives and said so to the media. Suddenly I remembered the 150 "trouble makers" so I searched my Diary and found the entry detailing their departure. I also noted that they were all given captured British uniforms and my heart sank. Could these have been the 100 "Australians" some Japanese alleged?? I contacted some of the Mukdenites in the U.S.A. and drew blank, but Harold Page came to Australia and took the message back, had it printed, and to my great relief I discovered these boys went to Japan and the lead mines.

It appears they all got home, but one, despite the appalling treatment and dreadful conditions they endured there. However such is the resilience and "guts" of our men that they made it. Mrs Lewis I can assure you that your husband Chuck was not used in the experiments described in the B.B.C. show, otherwise he would have been killed in Mukden. In fact I very much doubt that any American, British or Australians were even near this Death Camp, so I hope I can reassure you sufficiently and put your worst fears to rest. Your husband suffered the same as we all did and he would not give in. You can be proud of him.

Yours,


D.J. BRENNAN.

AUSTRALIA.

12.9.37.

Dear Mrs Lewis,

Thank you for your letter and I am so pleased to know that you have been comforted by my reassurances about the tortures not involving any of our men in Mukden P.O.W. Camp. I would certainly like to go to the ex Mukdenites reunion in North Carolina, but many factors make this impossible. For years I went overseas annually and I have been back to China twice, but not to Mukden. A friend of mine went to Manchuria last year and spent three days in Mukden and he took some photographs of where our P.O.W. Camp was supposed to be. Either he was shown the wrong place, or else there are quite different buildings erected on the site since our time, for I could not recognize anything. I don't expect to return but if I did I would't leave until I was sure I found the right place.

You asked for my diary entry about the deportation of the "troublemakers". This is it.

" May 24th. At the 5.30a.m. Tenko, the Japs called out 150 men's numbers. These included 27 of those returned from Camp 2 yesterday, 6 or 8 who were in the Camp prison and the rest were mostly troublemakers. They were told to pack up and be ready to leave camp by 7.30 a.m. The usual group of factory workers marched out at 7.15 a.m. and at 7.45 a.m. this departing group were taken into the Japanese area and carefully fitted out with some captured British Army battle dress tops - the Japanese Officers making sure that they fitted properly. They were then handed two days buns, some dried fish and some baked potatoes. My patients and I who were observing this from the Hospital, were seen and ordered away from our vantage points back to our Ward."

You also asked me for details of Mukden Camp. This would take a 500 page letter, so I'll try and give you some of the events of our Manchurian "holiday". I was captured in Singapore and sent to Korea in a mixed party of Australians and British P.O.Ws. After 6 weeks in Seoul I was put in a party of 100 and we marched to the main Railway Station there. A long train pulled in and to our surprise the windows were full of white faces. This was the 1200 odd people from the Philippons and your husband was one of these. After three days we arrived in Mukden and went out to our camp. This consisted of wooden huts half buried in the ground, one small stove supplied the heating, but we ^{were} allowed almost no coal and we slept on wooden platforms raised about ten inches above the earthen floor. It was cold, for the camp site was a flat plain, the only hills were very distant. At night the temperature fell to -40 dgs.C. and during the next few months remained subzero all day.

Many of the G.Is were very ill with dysentery and some had diphtheria and when we arrived at the camp we found a small hut which could only accomodate 30 was to be the hospital. The two American doctors and I had a quiet conference and the Japs gave us another hut. We agreed this would be for the infectious cases and we crammed 97 patients in somehow - two died that night. I took charge of this ward and during that Winter we lost over 200 more men. This was heartbreaking, because, with only simple medical equipment and supplies I could have prevented many deaths. Since the ground was frozen solid, we could not bury these bodies, so we stored them in a spare hut which was unheated and frozen till the thaw came. Perhaps the most dramatic event here was the escape of Sgt. Chastian & two other Marines. They were caught and later executed..... it was said for killing some local Chinese. I have notes of daily bashings, arguments, imprisonments, cuts in rations etc. We had our own Cookhouse but the

food was atrocious, mostly sorghum seeds or millet seeds as a soup. These turned the water a horrible purple colour and turned you "off"! All I could do for my patients was to talk to them and try to keep their morale up; and to try and prevent the Japanese forcing them out of the Ward and off to work. Several Medical Commissions arrived to investigate the reason for the high death rate and one actually blamed the Japs! But it did not seem to make much difference to our treatment.

We stayed in this Camp for eight months and on July 29th 1945 marched into our new camp several miles away. The Japs called it our permanent camp, but we disagreed with this. Almost every day we had some major problem with the Japanese beatings up for ridiculous reasons, reduction of rations etc. but my main problem was the daily one of them wanting to send sick men to the factory. The Prisoners' quarters were three large two story buildings with the cookhouse and the Hospital making an "L" and the Japanese quarters outside this area. After the "troublemakers" group left we had a tragic day late in December '44. There was an Air raid on Mukden by U.S. B29's and an ammunition factory which was just outside our walls was blown up, but one bomb fell in our compound and more than 30 were killed and several dozen badly injured. During another raid a B29 was shot down and we saw some parachutes open. Shortly after we learned that these men were captured and they were kept in a small hut just outside our walls. We managed to communicate by false handles in the food buckets which our cooks prepared. In April 1945 a number of Generals and others..... 150 who had been in Taiwan were moved in on top of us. The whole complexion of our Camp changed. August 1945 saw the Japanese dig several large mass graves just to the north of our camp and prepare machine gun nests on the corners. We well knew who were to be put in there, but the Atomic bomb on Hiroshima and the entry of the Russians into the Far East War stunned them and by the time they were getting ready again the war ended. On the day the war ended some Jap guards told us it was over and the next day a group of six men parachuted in and came to our camp. Two were Americans two were Nisei Japanese and two Chinese, but we were finally released two days later when the Russian Army arrived. The Russians made our guards march in disgrace through our ranks and then put them to menial work around the Camp until we departed.

The story of how we had some news of how the War was going involved about 10 of us and we all had some narrow escapes indeed. One of our New Zealand Officers Lt. Greig had persuaded the Japanese to teach him their written language; they thought this was great and helped him a lot. He told them it was so that he could read their Classic literature. By the time he had made up a dictionary and was getting proficient a fortunate event occurred - the Japanese paid the men for working in the factory. With nothing to buy poker games started up in no time but there was only one expert gambler in camp - one of my Australians - Pvt. Harris and he accumulated a fortune in worthless yen. Eventually he gave some Japanese civilians at the factory daily gifts of cash and later persuaded them to leave their newspapers behind. These came into camp in hollowed out wooden shoes by different people and eventually arrived in my hands. Then, with lookouts posted, Greig and I sat down to decipher the news. We may have been a week or so behind the actual events, but we knew the direction in which the war was going. Unfortunately we had to restrict our information because careless talk could have cost us our lives.

Mrs Lewis, that is a very brief outline of some of the history of our days in Mukden and I do hope it is what you need for your grandchildren. With best wishes.

Yours,

D.J. BRENNAN.

240

Dr. Brennan documents again that which I have heard from many POWs held in Japan at various camps. The Japanese had mass graves dug and were ready to kill all POWs as soon as the invasion of Japan began. Knowing this the POWs hid every weapon and explosive they could lay their hands on and hid it in the latrines/slit trenches, where the Japanese would not look. The POWs were prepared to fight to the death. Had President Harry Truman decided to invade rather than drop the atomic bomb, there would not be a POW alive today. So when I hear all the breast-beatings and self-flagellations of the news medias on the anniversary of the dropping of the bomb, I get nauseous. If we had not dropped the bomb, all the beautiful children born to the returned POWs, all the happiness they brought to their loved ones and families, would never have been. All of our wonderful grandchildren would not exist. No -- don't try to tell me we should not have dropped the bomb!

I failed to keep copies of my correspondence with Dr. Brennan. I pointed out to him my belief that it is quite possible that the POW was not always aware that the glass rods in the rectum, the injections, the feathers up their noses were means to introduce germs/bacteria into their systems. It is no wonder doctors are at a loss as to how to treat Japanese-held POWs.

About THE SEA AND POISON

The Sea and Poison, a novel based on fact, by Shusaku Endo was first published in 1980. It is one of the few books dealing with medical experimental horrors perpetrated on American prisoners of war by Japanese doctors that has found it's way into English and is available in the United States. The Times Literary Supplement stated: "Endo relentlessly pursues his theme of responsibility and guilt. Its effect and its implications are haunting." It is on the shelf of the Venice, Florida Public Library.

The following are quotes from The Sea and Poison:

Page 27: Finally I got the necessary permission. In a corner of the third floor archives, I read through the back numbers covering that period for about an hour. It was the affair involving the staff of the Medical School during the War. Eight captured American airmen had been used for medical experiments. In general the purpose of the experiments had been to obtain such information as how much blood a man could lose and remain alive, how much salt water in place of blood could safely be injected into a man's veins, and up to what point a man could survive the excision of lung tissue."

Page 30: "Let me have an anaesthetic shot please!" Ordinarily there was no need to use anaesthetic for someone like me who had been getting treatment for nearly a year. But when I felt the cold touch of his fingers and saw the bloodstain on his coat, I cried out despite myself. After I had, I was struck by the thought that on the day of the vivisections, the American prisoners must have pleaded in the same way on the operating table.

Page 47: "A truck drove up raising dust and passed in front of the laboratory building. On top of the truck huddled a number of tall men of dishevelled appearance, wearing green fatigue uniforms. After it had stopped at the entrance of Second Surgery, two soldiers with pistols slung at their hips opened the door of the truck and energetically leaped down. In contrast to the vigorous movement of the soldiers, the group wearing the fatigue uniforms climbed the steps to the entrance, dragging their feet and moving lackadaisically. Since they towered over their guards, even Suguro was able to tell at a glance that they were American prisoners.

Page 75: "It's an operation?" Toda asked. "All you have to do, Doctor, is say the word and we take part."

"No, no! No forcing. However, even if you don't take part, I'll have to ask you two to keep your mouths shut about it completely."

"What kind of operation is it?"

"There are going to be some vivisections performed on American prisoners, Toda."

Page 77: "On the first day of First Surgery's project, three prisoners were scheduled for operations. The aims of the vivisection experiment were described as follows:

1. Normal saline is to be injected into the blood stream of the first prisoner. The possible quantitative limits of such procedure before death occurs are to be ascertained.
2. Air is to be injected into the veins of the second prisoner and the volume at which death occurs is to be ascertained.
3. There is to be an excision of the lung of the third prisoner. The limit to which the bronchial tubes may be cut before death occurs is to be ascertained.

Page 129: "They say the experiment is going to be over at five o'clock. So we made it five-thirty."

'How about the food?'

'Well whatever else, thanks to the prisoners, we'll be able to dine on a bit of American liver.'

With not a glance in the direction of Toda and Suguro, the officers laughed uproariously.

Page 141: Behind him, with all the power of a surging avalanche came the officers; but even they, when they caught sight of the prisoner lying face up on the operating table, hesitated for an instant. "Go ahead, gentlemen. Move a little further up please." Behind them Asai smiled just a trifle ironically. 'As military gentlemen, you're surely used to the sight of bodies.'

Page 145: The prisoner on the table began to cough violently. The secretion was flowing into his bronchial tubes. Asai reached for the anaesthetic mask, and Toda heard him question the Old Man. 'Should I use cocaine?' 'No need.'... He's no patient.'

The Sea and Poison by Endo

To you who read this, I intended to quote more in detail from the book which describes vivisections on American POWs, but I cannot physically endure it. You will have to get the book and read it yourself if you want more information. This from people with whom we merrily trade cars, electronics, stereos, etc. today.

Instead, I will photocopy some of the pages, which follow.

'Then with you it's just the lung?'

'Yes, sir. I know there's no need to explain anything to you as a medical officer, but for the guidance of you other gentlemen, who are so kind as to take part today, I'll explain briefly what we are going to do. The experiment to be carried out on today's prisoner is a simple one. It is a matter of investigating to what degree it is possible to cut away the lung in tuberculosis surgery. That is to say, the problem of how far one may cut a man's lung without killing him is one of long duration in the treatment of tuberculosis and also has a bearing upon the practice of medicine in wartime. And so today, therefore, we intend to cut away completely one of this prisoner's lungs and the upper section of the other. That is, to put it into a nutshell. . . .'

While Asai's pleasant voice was echoing from the walls of the operating room, the Old Man stood slightly bent, staring down at the water running across the floor. His slumped shoulders had a strange, painfully sad look about them. Only Chief Nurse Oba kept an expressionless face. She took some mercurochrome over to the operating table and began to paint the side of the prisoner. The liquid stained red his strong neck and chest and the breast covered with thick chestnut-coloured hair. And further down, his white stomach, still untouched by the liquid, softly rose and fell. As Toda looked at that broad, white stomach, with the fine golden hair growing on it, he seemed for the first time to become aware that this was a white man, an American soldier taken prisoner by the Japanese.

'The bastard's sleeping peacefully, isn't he?' laughed one of the officers in the rear, perhaps with the intention of dissipating the gathering tension. 'Little does he know he'll be done for in half an hour.'

The words 'done for' reverberated hollowly inside Toda. The realization that this was an act of murder had not yet

taken form in his mind. To strip a person of his clothes, lay him on an operating table, give him ether – all this he had done to patients countless times, from his student days up to the present. Today it was the same. In a moment the Old Man would in a low voice call for the formal bow to the patient, and the operation would begin. There would be the metallic clicking noise of the scissors and tweezers and the dry crackling sound which accompanied the electric scalpel, and the Old Man would begin to cut in a line describing an ellipse on that chest covered with chestnut hair. What was the difference between this and other operations? The brilliant bluish white glare from the ceiling lamp and the white figures in surgical gowns moving slowly about in it with the gentle rhythm of floating seaweed had become familiar to him over the years. The figure of the prisoner lying with his face towards the ceiling differed in no way from that of ordinary patients. The prickly sensation of being about to murder someone did not stir at all in Toda. He felt that all would be brought automatically to a proper conclusion. With a certain sluggishness, he inserted the long, thin catheter tube into the prisoner's nostrils. The nose was long with a reddish tip, the nose of a white man. All Toda had to do was to adjust the nozzle of the oxygen machine to complete the preparations. The ether seemed to have taken full effect. The prisoner was sleeping, a slight snore coming through the tube. Thick leather straps firmly bound his legs in the green fatigue trousers and both his hands. Oblivious to the gaze of those around him, he faced upwards towards the ceiling. This expression was so relaxed that it looked almost as though a faint smile were playing about his lips.

'We should get started, eh, Doctor?' Dr Shibata asked the Old Man after checking the blood pressure gauge.

The Old Man, who had been staring at the floor, gave a start as he heard the question.

'We're going to get started.' Asai spoke sharply. The atmosphere was so hushed that the sound of swallowing which followed could be heard distinctly.

'The vivisection is beginning at 3.08 pm. Toda, put that in the record.'

The Old Man took the electric scalpel in his hand and bent over the prisoner. Toda could hear the dull whir of the movie camera behind him. Dr Arajima of Second Surgery had started to record the vivisection process. At the same moment with startling abruptness, a chorus of throat clearing coughs and snuffles arose from the officers.

As he looked at the blood pressure gauge, Toda felt a strange thought pressing in upon him, 'I'm going to be in this film too. Think of it! I've just checked the gauge. My head moved. The movement of a person, of me, of me engaged in the murder of a human being. My actions are going on to that film down to the last detail. The actions of a murderer. Afterwards, when the film is shown, will it rouse any special emotions in me?'

Toda felt an unaccountable disillusionment and fatigue. He had expected this moment, but he had hoped for a more lively fear, a keener heartache, a violent self-accusation. But the sound of the water flowing over the floor, the crackling echo of the electric scalpel - these were merely dull and monotonous and strangely sad. There was lacking even the usual atmosphere of tense concern - the worry about the patient being threatened with shock, his pulse becoming too rapid, his breathing changing abruptly. Everyone knew that this man was to die. There was no reason at all to prolong his life. So the movements of the Old Man holding the electric scalpel, of Asai, who assisted him, of Shibata, who stood by, of Chief Nurse Oba, who took care

of the instruments and gauze – all of them had a certain perfunctory and sluggish quality.

The whirring of the eight millimeter camera went on as before, blending with the noise of the electric scalpel and of the scissors.

'What is Arajima thinking as he takes his pictures?' Toda wondered. 'Where did I hear that sound before? That's it! The sound of cicadas. I heard it the time I went to my cousin's house in Ozu, when I was going to summer school at Naniwa. Why am I thinking now of the damned foolish thing I did then?'

He turned his head and stole a glance at the officers gathered behind him. On the edge of the group, one young officer with glasses had turned his head away, his face like wax. It seemed that the first graphic sight of the innards of a living man was a bit more than he had bargained for. But when he became aware of Toda's glance, he straightened up and frowned.

Beside him, the officer with the moustache stood with his mouth foolishly agape and his face glowing with sweat. He stood behind the fat medical officer, craning his neck to peer over his head and licking his lips again and again, as though intent on missing not a moment of the spectacle unfolding before him.

'Silly bastards,' muttered Toda to himself. 'What silly bastards!'

But why, and what he himself was, Toda did not have sufficient energy to speculate upon. To think at all required too much effort. The warmth of the operating theatre was enough in itself to make one feel faint. The sultry air oppressed him and Toda found himself unable to concentrate upon what he was to do.

The prisoner on the table began to cough violently. The secretion was flowing into his bronchial tubes. Asai reached

for the anaesthetic mask, and Toda heard him question the Old Man.

'Should I use cocaine?'

'No need.' Suddenly the Old Man straightened up from the operating table and spoke in a voice choked with anger, 'He's no patient.'

His furious tone disconcerted everyone, and the silence of the operating theatre deepened. Only the dull, drawn out whir of the camera continued unabated.

In front of him, as he leaned against the wall, Suguro saw the backs of the officers. From time to time they would clear their throats or shuffle their feet as they felt the pinch of numbness. Often at such times, a space would open briefly between two of them, and Suguro would catch a fleeting glimpse of the Old Man and Dr Shibata bent over the operating table and of the patient in his green fatigue trousers bound to the table by leather straps.

'Scalpel.'

'Gauze.'

'Scalpel.'

Dr Shibata directed Chief Nurse Oba in a hoarse voice.

'Next,' Suguro thought, 'it'll be the raspatory and cutting the rib bone.'

As an intern, he could tell just from Dr Shibata's commands where the Old Man was cutting on the prisoner's body and could picture exactly what was occurring.

Suguro shut his eyes. He shut his eyes and tried to think that he was not really involved in a vivisection being performed on a prisoner but that this was a routine operation performed on a regular patient. He tried to force his imagination: 'Let's help the patient. Let's get busy. Give a camphor shot. Supply some fresh blood.' His mind worked. 'There's Oba's footsteps. She's going to give the patient some oxygen.'

But then there was the dull sound of a rib bone snapping and, a moment later, the lighter sound of it dropping into the receptacle echoing from the walls of the operating theatre. The ether had been cut off perhaps. The prisoner suddenly let out a low pitched groan.

The pounding in Suguro's chest, the whispering within him increased in tempo: 'To help, to help!'

Suddenly the scene of Mrs Tabé's operation surged up in his mind. That morning all those standing around the table on which her body lay, ripped and torn like a pomegranate, drew back towards the wall, their faces taut. The only sound then had been the faint trickle of the stream of water flowing over the floor under the glare of the ceiling lamp. It had been Chief Nurse Oba who had brought the dead body, as though still alive, back to the room.

'The operation was successful.' The feigned smile on his face, Dr Asai had spoken to the mother and sister in a dark corner of the corridor.

'Not to help?'

Suguro suddenly felt a rush of shameful futility blocking his chest with such intensity that it choked his breathing. What he could do would be to lift his hands and knock aside the shoulders of the officers lined up before him. He could snatch the rasperatory from the Old Man's hand. But when he looked he saw the stern shoulders of the officers packed together in a broad mass. Hanging at their sides, their swords shone with a leaden dullness. One young officer happened to turn and, seeing Suguro standing behind them dressed in a surgical gown, looked at him suspiciously. The look became an angry, accusing one.

'What's the matter with you, afraid?' those eyes asked. 'How can a young Japanese be so weak?'

He writhed under the officer's stare, aware of what he seemed: a doctor unable to carry out his duties - and

aware too of what he really was: a spineless coward who had been unable to refuse Dr Shibata.

'I can't do anything at all,' he groaned, looking towards the figure in green fatigue trousers on the operating table. 'I can't do anything for you.'

At that moment Asai's voice echoed sharply: 'The prisoner's left lung has been removed entirely. Now the excision of the upper section of the right lung is in process. In experiments performed up to now, when half of both lungs together have been excised, the result has been instant death.'

Then the officers' boots began to make an unpleasant squeaking sound. At some time or other, the noise made by Arajima's camera had stopped, and now the only sound that spread through the room was that of the light flow of water.

'Forty . . . thirty-five . . . thirty.' Toda was reading the blood pressure gauge. 'Thirty . . . twenty-five . . . twenty . . . fifteen . . . ten. That's it. It's over.'

After he had relayed this information to the Old Man and Dr Shibata as his job demanded, Toda slowly straightened up. For a few moments the silence continued; but at last, like a dam bursting, the officers began to cough and scrape their boots.

'So it's done!' The fat medical officer standing in the front row wiped the sweat from his head with a handkerchief. 'What was the time?'

'4:28,' Asai answered. 'The operation began at 3:08; therefore the time taken was one hour and twenty minutes.'

The Old Man looked down at the corpse, not saying a word. His gloved hands, gleaming with smeared blood under the ceiling light, still tightly gripped the scalpel. As though to thrust him out of the way, Chief Nurse Oba pushed herself between him and the table and covered the

corpse with a white sheet. Staggering slightly, the Old Man retreated two or three steps, but he still just stood there, without making a move.

When the officers had opened the door of the operating theatre and gone out into the corridor, the weak afternoon sun was shining through the windows. Looking out of a window, the officers stood for a time rubbing their eyes, twisting their necks with annoyed expressions, massaging their shoulders, and affecting wide yawns.

'Nothing special at all,' one suddenly offered in a voice which, as he had intended, echoed loudly from the walls.

'Lieutenant Murai, your face - you look as if you've just had a woman!'

The speaker pointed a finger at the eyes of his companion, his taunting voice not without a touch of wonder. 'Your eyes are all red.'

But it was not just he whose eyes were red. Actually, all of them had faces flushed with blood and covered with sweat - the sort of look which follows upon sexual consummation.

'It's the truth. A face just as if you'd slept with a woman.'

'Is that so? Well, I've got an awful headache too.'

'Lieutenant Omori's farewell party's at five-thirty. Let's get some fresh air.'

Their footsteps clattered noisily as the officers went down the staircase.

When they had gone, Chief Nurse Oba cautiously put her head out into the corridor. When she had made sure that no one was around, she and Miss Ueda wheeled out the trolley bearing the thing covered with the white sheet. Suguro, who had come into the anteroom, watched them as he supported himself against the wall. The squeaking of the trolley seemed to exert a fascination upon him. The sound would stop and then recur from time to time until

it ceased completely after the trolley had disappeared down the long, deserted corridor, whose floor shone dully in the pale sunlight.

Where he should go he didn't know. What he should do, he didn't know. The Old Man, Asai, Shibata and Toda were still in the operating theatre, but Suguro could not go back in there.

'Killed him . . . killed him . . . killed him . . . killed him. . . .' In his ears someone's voice was chanting with a formless rhythm.

'I didn't do anything at all.' Suguro made an effort to shut out the voice. 'I didn't do anything at all.' But this plea seemed to reverberate within him, churning itself into a whirlpool devoid of meaning.

'That's it! You've hit it there! You didn't do anything at all. The time the old lady died, this time too - you didn't do anything at all. You're always there. You're always there - not doing anything at all!'

As he walked down the staircase, his footsteps sounding in his ears, the thought came to him that just two hours before, the American soldier, suspecting nothing at all, had climbed these same stairs. At this he saw clearly once more the figure of the American prisoner with a desperate expression on his face. Then there was the abrupt image of Chief Nurse Oba roughly throwing a sheet over the slashed, bloody flesh.

He felt his throat violently constricted by the urge to vomit. He leaned against the window and told himself that he should have become used to seeing bloody flesh, considering his experience which stretched back to the beginning of medical school. But, still, the colour of that blood, the colour of that flesh differed from what he had seen in all previous operations over that long period. But was it the colour of the flesh and blood that provoked the nausea in

him, or was it the thought of the ugly brutality of Chief Nurse Oba's action?

Outside the window, the wires leading from a transmission station hummed in the cold afternoon air. Two or three birds flew across the overcast winter sky. Smoke climbed slowly from the stack of the sterilization unit. From the distant back entrance a work-party of nurses were returning, dragging their shovels and carrying their baskets wearily. Everything was just as yesterday, just as the day before, the ordinary scene about the hospital on a winter's evening. Leaning on the window sill, he waited for a second surge of nausea to pass. Then, with dragging footsteps, he went down the staircase.

He didn't see the officers in the garden. The nurses who had returned by the rear gate had laid their baskets on the lawn and now, wiping their faces with towels, were coming in his direction.

Instinctively he tried to avert his face and hurry past them as though he were fleeing. But one of them, who had sat down on a rock to rest, called out cheerfully to him: 'Doctor, won't the chief surgeon make his ward rounds today either?'

Suguro didn't answer. 'It's nothing,' he thought. 'There's nothing to worry about. These nurses don't know anything. Why am I trying to hide?'

'Doctor, are you going to come?'

'Yes, I'll be there,' he finally was able to say.

'She's right. All day the thought of the ward rounds never crossed my mind at all. But right now if I go into the wards, what then? To talk to the patients as though nothing at all had happened, to take X-rays, to fill out examination charts. . . . Tomorrow, again I'll live my intern's life. With the Old Man, with Dr Shibata, with Dr Asai, and Toda. Will I be able to make the rounds just as

before? Will I examine the outgoing patients? Is all this possible? Will the pleasant face of that blond-haired prisoner never stare up at me out of their faces? I can't do it. I can't forget.'

He looked down at the ground, and in some grey furrows cut in the earth he saw the severed roots of the poplar. It had been cut down at last, the job that had taken the old workman so long to accomplish was finished. Suguro gazed vacantly at the stumps. Suddenly he thought of the old lady - the old lady carried out beneath the falling rain inside a wooden crate. The poplar tree was gone. The old lady too was gone.

'I'm not going back to the laboratory. I'm quitting.' Then he whispered to himself, 'You've ruined your life.'

But was it only him? Couldn't the same be said about everyone? He didn't know.

2

When Toda, the last to leave, was coming out of the operating theatre Asai was waiting in the corridor, holding a receptacle of the kind used during operations. It was wrapped in gauze. He was smiling.

'Toda, wait a minute. Would you bring this up to the conference room for me?'

'Yes, Doctor.'

'The military gentlemen are having a farewell party up there.'

'What is this?'

'Something Medical Officer Tanaka ordered. It's the prisoner's liver.'

Asai lifted the gauze and handed the container to Toda. A dark brown mass of flesh was soaking in a thick liquid stained dark red with blood.

'What's the idea?'

'It can be pickled in alcohol, maybe, and make a good souvenir,' Asai answered in a brisk tone. His voice was just as composed as it was at other times, as when, after finishing an autopsy or something similar, he turned to the next order of business.

As Toda dropped his gaze to the slippery mass of flesh, he could clearly visualize the broad white stomach of the prisoner, as he lay face up on the operating table. The stomach which had glistened with an almost glaring whiteness when Chief Nurse Oba was applying the mercurochrome. He was gone now. He wasn't anywhere at all. Not anywhere at all - but here in this heavy lump soaking in this clogged, dark red liquid. Was that the truth of it? He felt a weird sensation pressing upon him, as though all this were a dream. That broad white stomach, this dull brown chunk of flesh - he could not reconcile them; and his incomprehension held him for a few moments in a sort of stupor.

'Not much to it, is there?' Asai whispered softly all at once. 'We've all got used to looking at corpses, but sentimentality is never too far off.'

Quietly, Toda raised his eyes and stole a look at Asai's face. The rimless glasses had slipped down his nose. Nothing had altered in it. It was the face of the man who had a special talent for tossing sweet, comforting words to patients during ward rounds. The face of the man who would appear in the laboratory whistling and who would cluck his tongue as he ran through the examination charts.

There was no trace upon it of his having killed a man just a short time before.

'And *my* face is the same.' The thought was painful to Toda. 'Nothing is changed. My heart is tranquil. The pangs of conscience, the stabs of guilt that I've waited for so long haven't come at all. No dread at having torn away someone's life. Why not? Why is my heart so devoid of life?'

'Toda.' Asai, the enigmatic smile still on his face, pressed the other's arm, which was holding the receptacle. 'There's something I've got to talk to you about. Afterwards, have you thought about staying on here at the University?'

'At the University?'

'Yes, as an assistant. Doctor Shibata said something about it recently. So if you happen to be willing. . . .'

'Well, I don't know. There are other people better qualified than I,' Toda answered, looking down, sensing that there was something behind Asai's words. 'There's Suguro.'

'No, not Suguro. He's hopeless. Toda, about him. Today, just at the critical time, where did he go to?'

'He was there in the operating theatre. I'm sure he was watching from the back.'

'He won't say anything, that fellow, I hope.' All at once Asai's face came very close, an uneasy expression on it. 'If there is the least chance of anything leaking out. . . .'

'Don't worry about him. He just can't take it, that's all.'

'If that's so, I feel better. Well, anyway, think over what I said, will you? The Old Man too - he doesn't have what it takes any more. From now on, Dr Shibata and I together plan to get First Surgery on its feet again. If you'd like to join in, such a matter as your recommendation as assistant will be a mere trifle. Then too - something to bear in mind - with regard to today's matter: from now on we are going

to have to stick close together. We're all in just as deep, you see.'

When Asai had disappeared down the deserted corridor, Toda, still holding the container, felt a deep, all pervading fatigue.

'“To stick close together,” he says. He wants to make use of the accomplice spirit to draw me in and prevent any whisper of the affair leaking out. As though I couldn't see what he's up to: dangling attractive bait in front of me in order to make his own position solid in First Surgery. That bastard Asai. What does he think about the chunk of flesh here, I wonder?'

The prisoner who had been alive just two hours ago, a tense look in his brown eyes - had Asai already forgotten all about his death? Immediately after stepping out of the operating theatre, he was quite capable of neatly tying up every loose end to secure his own future. Toda marvelled at this remarkable ability to sort things out so coolly.

'But what do I think, me, who am holding this right now, this bucket with the flesh in it? This drab brown lump pickled in dark red liquid. What I'm afraid of isn't this. My heart is so odd that I feel nothing, no pain at all when I look at something that was part of a man whom I murdered.'

He pushed open the thick, heavy door of the conference room with his shoulder. Three or four officers turned in his direction. They had removed their jackets and were sitting beside a table upon which saké cups and other tableware had been laid out, warming their hands over a charcoal brazier.

'Is Medical Officer Tanaka here?'

'He'll be here soon. What do you want?'

'It's something which he ordered.'

'Thanks.'

One officer got up. He was the man whose face had been as pale as wax throughout the operation. When he had pulled aside the gauze and looked inside, his face became painfully contorted.

'What is it, Lieutenant Ebara?'

'It's the prisoner's liver,' said Toda. And having duly fulfilled his assigned task, he turned and walked out of the silent room.

After he shut the door of the conference room, the floor of the long corridor, with its dull leaden shine, stretched out before Toda. There was no one to be seen. If he were to walk back straight along this corridor, he would be at the door of the operating theatre once again. As he thought about this, Toda felt churning within him a desire to go back and look at that room, an excitement which he found hard to control.

'Just once more. I want to see what will happen if I go back there after that.'

The last light of late afternoon gradually faded from the windows. It was quiet. From the conference room behind him, the low sound of voices could be heard every now and then through the door.

After descending one or two steps of the staircase, he stopped. Then he turned around abruptly and with the walls of the corridor echoing his footsteps, he walked in the direction of the operating theatre.

The door stood open a little. When he pushed it, it gave with a dull squeak. The faint smell of ether came to his nostrils. On the blank white top of the table in the preparation room, an anaesthetic bottle lay forlornly on its side.

Toda stood for a few moments in the middle of the room. Here it was, he recalled, that the prisoner had exclaimed, 'That's ether, isn't it?' The childish tone of the exclamation was still in his ears. A formless fear for a

moment clutched at his heart, but Toda kept his control. The fear dissolved into ripples and disappeared, leaving him an uncanny composure.

What he wanted now was a feeling of bitter self-reviling. The sharp pang stabbing at the breast, the remorse which rips and tears at the heart. But even though he had returned to the operating theatre, no such emotions welled up within him. Unlike a layman, he had long been accustomed to entering the operating theatre alone after an operation. Those other times and now — was there any difference? If there was, he found himself unable to grasp it.

'Here we took off his fatigue jacket.' Tracing over insistently in his mind every aspect of the scene which had taken place, he waited in vain for the pain of remorse to wring his heart.

'That prisoner, he seemed as embarrassed as a woman about his chest with its blond hair. He covered it with his hands. And then, just as Asai told him to, he went into the operating theatre there.'

He softly opened the inner door. He flicked the light switch, and the ceiling lamp's bluish white glare was reflected from the walls of the room. The operating table had a slight crack on its surface. Next to this lay a small piece of gauze that had been overlooked. There was a dark stain of blood upon it. Even confronted with that, Toda felt no particular pain.

'I have no conscience, I suppose. Not just me, though. None of them feel anything at all about what they did here.'

The only emotion in his heart was a sense of having fallen as low as one can fall. He turned off the lamp and went into the hallway once more.

~~The corridor was already wrapped in the darkness of~~

Whatever I read written by those held prisoner by the Japanese, the same and similar facts emerge. The utter sadistic and brutal nature, the savagery, is an undeniable fact. I have had good friends say to me, "But Lysle, don't you think our boys treated the Japanese prisoners in a similar manner." I am always shocked at this. No doubt there were instances where they weren't handled with kid gloves, particularly in the heat of battle. But the Japanese mind is totally different. So many former POWs have told me, "They just don't think as we do. Their values are totally different."

There are many instances of their warped minds concocting means of torture mentioned throughout this book. I know for a fact that of the many former POWs I know personally, there is not a one of them who would do to another human being what was done to them by the Japanese. I cite still more examples of the absolute brutality conceived and carried out by the Japanese on American POWs, some who were part of the crew of the submarine USS Grenadier 210. The quotations are from the book THRESHOLD OF HELL by Albert Rupp, loaned to me by Bob Courtney. Bob and Al were shipmates on the Grenadier and lived through their POW days together. Bob, I am proud to say, is a friend of mine.

Their ship sunk, the Grenadier crew were picked up by a Japanese ship and taken to Panang for "interrogation". As they were taken one at a time to be "interrogated", and as the remaining crew men heard the screams of their shipmates, they realized they may never be heard from again. They carved their names into the wood and walls of the room where they were awaiting their turn and stained it with their blood. Bob carved his name with his belt buckle into the wooden door. That place is now a convent. Bob has corresponded with a nun there. She sent him pictures. The room has become almost a shrine. She said they encased the names in glass to preserve them. Those written in blood are almost faded away, but Bob's name is still clearly etched in the door.

I quote from Al Rupp's book:

Page 36: As the khaki clad figure entered, all could see it was the Skipper. He had been cruelly beaten and it showed. He was thrown outstretched on a table. They doused him with water, then began beating him with leather straps. Each time the strap hit the wet form on the table it resounded throughout the room. Although no audible sound was heard from the Skipper, outrage gripped the crew. Soon an outcry by the men, "stop, stop, stop," became a thunderous roar. With lights snapped on, the room quickly filled with guards who hit, pushed, shoved, kicked and knocked us down.

Page 42: Into the greenhouse came the Skipper, being helped by two guards. He was quickly placed prone on a table which was tilted and to which his arms and body were tied. What appeared to be a gallon jug of water was placed into his mouth. Too weak to resist, one guard held his nose and he was forced to drink, allowing him only short periodic breaths through his nose to keep him from drowning. The jug was emptied and removed. The guard in charge then stood on the table next to him. It was with complete disbelief that I saw that form jump with both feet together and land in the middle of the Skipper's stomach. The gush of fluid that came forth from the Skipper's mouth and nose in immediate response was horrifying. I turned away from the window, only to be struck by two stick-wielding guards. Several others were receiving the same treatment. Once more we were forced to face the window and see the same devil conceived torture repeated on our Skipper. After the second dose, the Skipper was carried out of the greenhouse, unconscious. We were then allowed to return to our space. The room lights were turned off, but sleep did not come for a long time.

Page 61: I thought I had been brutally treated until I heard from some of the other crewmen. One of the petty officers showed men his hands, the fingernails missing. He explained that upon refusing to answer Dragon's questions, his hands and arms were strapped to a table. Bamboo slivers were then inserted under his fingernails and set on fire. On regaining consciousness, and still refusing to answer questions, the remainder of the fingernails were pulled from his fingers with a pair of pliers. He made three trips to the Chamber and was on each occasion beaten until the skin was broken. The sight of blood seemed to satisfy the interrogators for the time being.

Page 74: It was about three a.m. when four Imperial Marines (Japanese) came flying down the stairway ordering the first man they saw to come to the center of the hatch cover. Removing the handrail from the stairway (a piece of oak or teak wood about eight feet long and three inches in diameter), they stood to one side holding one end of the handrail. They swung about a 180 turn as hard as they could until it impacted with that poor guy's lower back or buttocks, driving him completely across the hatch, slamming him into the bulkhead. So powerful was the blow, he could not stand. He appeared to be paralyzed and only with assistance was returned to the place he was summoned from. The next man was then summoned to the center of the hatch cover and the same ruthless, barbaric act committed upon him. This continued until all hands had received this punishment. ... The wait for my turn to come was maddening. I was trembling as I approached the center of the hatch. As that pole made contact with my rear I was lifted and literally flew through the air, where on contact with the steel bulkhead, I lost consciousness. When I regained my senses, my shipmates replaced me in the original space. The beatings had been completed."

Page 46: One of the guards grabbed my right arm and slapped my hand flat on the table. Short sticks or pencils were placed between my fingers. A cloth was placed around my hand, knotted, and a stick shoved under the knot which was turned, drawing my fingers together. The pencils began to separate my fingers between the third joint and knuckle. By the third turn, I was sure my fingers would break, and at this point I uttered the first groan. By the time the stick had made the fourth turn I blurted out, "Yes, yes, yes!!" The stick stopped turning. My hand hurt so bad I could not tell if the fingers were broken or not."

Al Rupp, author of the foregoing quotes, joined the Navy when he was 15 years old by lying about his age and convincing his mother to sign for him. He spent his 16th, 17th and 18th birthdays as a prisoner-of-war.

The beatings with the clubs so described were continual. I have heard it over and over from dear friends who were in widespread POW camps about the horrible beatings by the Japanese. As tears filled their eyes, and they choked back huge sobs Sandy, Bob Courtney, Don Mathews and all the others told me, "The beatings -- oh my God -- the beatings."

In January, 1988, I saw the movie "Empire of the Sun". A beating depicted in this movie was as though the words of Sandy, Bob and Don had come to life on the screen -- the size of the club, method and savagery was exactly as they had described to me. I held both hands over my mouth to hold back the screams. And I was only seeing the movie, acted by actors. These brave men lived every minute of it and endured the brutality in real life.

CHAPTER V

KEMPEI TAI -- TORTURE METHODS, BRUTALITY

THE KEMPEI TAI

JAPANESE TORTURERS "PAR EXCELLENCE"

The following two chapters have been included here at the close of this book in hopes of leaving the reader with a fuller understanding of the type of people who held our American and allied young men and women as prisoners of war for three and a half years.

Time heals all wounds, so "they" say. After reading these chapters you will know that the wounds suffered by POWs can never heal. Everyone reading this can lessen the pain, however, by reaching out in friendship and understanding to those few remaining alive today. You can insist the VA take proper care of their needs. You can speak out in their behalf. Although Public Law has given a number of "presumptive" disabilities to the POW, he still must struggle, fight, quote the law himself to the VA, deal with the red tape and bureaucracy and even then not get what he is entitled to by law.

As recently as last Thursday (January 7, 1988 as I write) Sandy was called to the Ft. Myers VA facility for exams regarding his bowel difficulties, after which he saw a medical doctor. As the doctor looked over the lists we had prepared of his illnesses while a POW and today, he asked Sandy, "How do you know you had diphtheria?" Sandy told him, "Well, I damned near died, my throat swelled shut, a Japanese doctor told me 'diphtheria - no good - no good', they put me in Zero Ward -- the ward for the hopeless dying where I lay in my own filth, urine and excrement for weeks losing all control of bodily functions, everytime I tried to swallow it came out my nose and my weight dropped to 85 pounds, I lost my sight and was partially paralyzed." The VA doctor said, "But there's no record." Sandy exploded!! This is typical of what the POW must deal with in the VA. If it were not so sad it would be uproariously funny to know today's doctors have no insight at all into POW life. They blindly think life was as we live it today -- that records were kept by this cruel, inhuman enemy. With Sandy's outrage, the doctor immediately made an appointment for him to come back next week to see a psychiatrist. It appears to me that his need to see a psychiatrist is directly tied to his rage and frustration in dealing with the VA.

Thus the purpose of the following chapters is to show the type of inhumanity and cruelty the POW had to deal with. If but one VA employee reads and understands, I will be eternally grateful.

CHAPTER XIV

THE KEMPEI TAI

THE practice of torturing prisoners of war and civilians prevailed wherever Japanese troops were in occupation and at many places, also, in Japan.

The Japanese indulged in the practice throughout the war, and there was so much uniformity in the methods used that there can be no doubt that it was the result of a definite policy adopted by the armed forces with the knowledge and approval of the Imperial Government.

Army and Navy units all used the same methods, but the torturers *par excellence* were the dreaded Kempei Tai, the Japanese counterpart of the Nazi Gestapo.

The Kempei Tai, however, unlike the Gestapo were the Army's Military Police administered by the War Ministry, and a Kempei Tai training school, where many of these methods of interrogation were learnt and practised, was maintained and operated in Japan by the same Ministry.

The Kempei Tai had full powers of arrest and investigation over both civilians and military, and in their particular brand of interrogation under torture they were past masters. Like the German Gestapo, they had obtained plenty of experience before World War II, for the Japanese Empire had been engaged in some kind of warfare since 1931 and the Kempei Tai had had plenty of time in which to perfect their technique.

The captured copy of a Japanese Army training manual also confirms other formidable evidence that torture was officially approved as a necessary aid to interrogation in certain circumstances.

This manual was entitled *Notes for the Interrogation of Prisoners of War*, and was issued by the Japanese Hayashi

[274]

Knights of Bushido by Russell - Chapter XIV

THE KEMPEI TAI

Division in Burma on 6th August 1943. The following are a few extracts from this illuminating treatise:

Care must be exercised when making use of rebukes, invectives or torture as it will result in his telling falsehoods and making a fool of you.¹

The following are the methods normally to be adopted:

(a) *Torture.* This includes kicking, beating and anything connected with physical suffering. *This method is only to be used when everything else has failed as it is the most clumsy.*² Change the interrogating officer after using violent torture, and good results can be obtained if the new officer questions in a sympathetic manner.

(b) *Threats.*

(1) Hints of future physical discomforts, for example, torture, murder, starvation, solitary confinement, deprivation of sleep.

(2) Hints of future mental discomforts, for example, not to be allowed to send letters, not to be given the same treatment as the other prisoners of war, to be kept back to the last in the event of an exchange of prisoners.

Among the more common kinds of torture practised by the Kempei Tai were the following: the water treatment, burning, electric shocks, the knee spread, suspension, kneeling on sharp instruments and flogging.

Thousands of Allied prisoners of war, and still more civilians in the territories occupied by the Japanese, experienced excruciating torture at the hands of the Kempei Tai and many hundreds died as a result of it. It is impossible to appreciate what these unfortunate and innocent victims of

¹ This is known to all whose duty it is to get reliable information when interrogating prisoners of war, as wise counsel. It was not, however, intended that the Kempei Tai should always follow it. Their object was, often, to obtain a confession of some sort during the interrogation of a victim and on such occasions they cared not whether it was true or false.

² The words in italics were underlined in the captured copy.

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

Japanese brutality suffered unless a brief description is given of the principal methods employed.¹

The Water Treatment

This was almost invariably applied. The victim was bound, or otherwise secured, in a prone position and water was forced through his mouth and nostrils into his lungs until he lost consciousness. Pressure was then applied, sometimes by jumping upon his abdomen, to force the water out. The usual practice was to revive the victim and repeat the process as required.

Burning

Torture by burning was practised extensively. This was generally inflicted by burning the victim's body with lighted cigarettes or cigars, but in some cases lighted candles, hot irons, burning oil and scalding water were used. The application of heat was usually made to sensitive parts of the body, such as the nostrils, the eardrums, the navel, the sexual organs, and, in the case of women, to the breasts.

Electric Shock

Electric current was applied generally to the most sensitive parts of the body, as in the burning torture.

The Knee Spread

This was a very frequent method of torture. The victim, with his hands tied behind his back, was forced to kneel with a pole, sometimes as much as three inches in diameter, inserted behind both knee joints so as to spread them as pressure was applied to his thighs, sometimes by jumping on them. The result of this torture was to separate the knee joints and so cause intense pain.

Suspension

Another very common form. The body of the victim was

¹ See also the section of illustrations by Leo Rawlings, following page 160.

THE KEMPEI TAI

suspended by the wrists, arms, legs or neck, and at times in such a manner as to strangle him or pull the joints from their sockets. This method was sometimes combined with flogging during suspension.

Kneeling on Sharp Instruments

A very painful form of torture. The edges of square blocks were mostly used as the sharp instruments. The victim was made to kneel on the sharp edges for hours at a time without relief. If he moved, he was flogged.

Removal of Nails

The removal of finger nails and toe nails, usually pulled out with pliers, was not uncommon, and the well known Chinese torture of driving small bamboo chips under the nails was also frequently practised.

Finger Bandaging

The fingers were bandaged together with a stick placed between each one. Extra pressure could then be applied by tightening the bandage by means of a piece of cord. This was extremely painful, and if it did not fracture the fingers they remained bruised and swollen for several days.

In addition to these standard methods of torture used by the armed forces and the Kempei Tai in every theatre of war and in all the occupied territories, Allied prisoners of war and civilians suffered many other forms of inhumane treatment and cruelty, the most common of which was flogging.

It was universally used at all prisoner of war and civilian internment camps, in all the prisons, in the labour camps, on board the prison ships and at all Kempei Tai headquarters. It was indulged in freely by the guards with the approval, and often under the direction, of the camp commandant. Special instruments were used in many of the camps, such as pieces of wood about the size of a baseball bat. Prisoners

[277]

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

were sometimes forced to beat other prisoners, and they received internal injuries, broken bones and lacerations of the skin. Frequently they were beaten into unconsciousness, revived and then beaten again. Many were even flogged to death.

Among the Kempei Tai's torturers there were some individualists who invented variations of their own. One Malay Indian, who was a magistrate at Kuala Trengganu, was accused by the Kempei Tai of being a spy. He was left tied up to the leg of a table all night, and in the morning was nearly kicked to death. Later he was buried up to his neck and submerged in drums of dirty water. He described these last two incidents as follows:

They brought me outside and buried me in the ground leaving just my head above ground. I was then made to close my eyes. When I did so one of the Kempei Tai men put his sword against my throat as if to cut it, and kept it there for some minutes. After that I was unburied and left out in the sun for the rest of the day. On the third day they put me in a benzine drum with forty gallons of oily water. They placed the lid on top of the drum and when I could not breathe any longer I tried to escape from the water. Using my full strength I managed to jerk the lid and it fell to the ground.

In Penang also the Kempei Tai used some unusual methods of torture on hundreds of innocent citizens with the object of forcing a confession from the victim that he was a Communist, or a spy, or in unlawful possession of a radio set. Two women were tied by a rope to a motor-cycle and towed naked round the prison yard.

Mental torture was commonly employed. A striking example of this was given in evidence before the Tokyo Tribunal, when witnesses testified about the ill-treatment which the Doolittle airmen received from the Kempei Tai after their capture.

After having been subjected to all the standard forms of torture they were taken, one at a time, marched blindfold for

[278]

THE KEMPEI TAI

a considerable distance and then halted. The victim then heard voices and marching feet, the sound of a squad halting and loading their rifles as a firing party would.

A Japanese officer then approached the American pilot and said: 'We are the Knights of Bushido, of the Order of the Rising Sun. We do not execute at sunset but at sunrise.' The prisoner was then marched back to his cell and told that unless he talked before dawn he would be executed.

During 1943 and 1944 the Kempei Tai were busy throughout Malaya trying to break up the resistance movement against the Japanese military occupation, and hundreds of suspects were interrogated under torture.

Mrs Kathigasu helped many members of the Resistance by giving them supplies, clothing and money. In August 1943 she was arrested by the Kempei Tai, and taken to the Central Police Station in Ipoh, where she remained in custody for three and a half months.

She had been betrayed by one of the members of the underground organization to which she belonged, and every effort was made during her incarceration at the Central Police Station to get her to disclose the names of other members of the Resistance who were hiding in the Cameron Highlands on the borders of Perak and Piang.

This she steadfastly refused to do despite repeated torturing by Kempei Tai Sergeant Yoshimura, who was in charge of the local detachment. During those three months she was subjected to the water treatment and red hot irons were applied to her legs and back. Needles were pushed up under her finger nails, and she was continually beaten with bamboo canes. She was hung upside down by one leg for hours at a time and suffered many other indescribable tortures.

As none of these methods had yielded any results by the middle of November, she was taken from the Police Station to the Kempei Tai headquarters in the Gopang Road and there charged with listening to the radio news at Popan, the place where she had been arrested. After being charged she

[279]

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

was again questioned regarding assistance which she had given to the 'anti-Japanese campaign'.

She still refused to give any information, and what then happened was told by her when giving evidence at the trial of Sergeant Yoshimura in Ipoh on 11th February 1946.

My young daughter was hung from a tree about ten to twelve feet high, under which there was a blazing fire. She remained suspended there while I was tied to a post close by and beaten with a stick until it broke in two.

Sergeant Yoshimura kept shouting to me to speak out, but speaking out, as I and my daughter well knew, meant death for hundreds of resistance people up in the hills. My child answered for me. 'Be very brave, Mummy, do not tell, we will both die and Jesus will wait for us in Heaven above.'

On hearing those words I told the sergeant that he could cut the ropes and burn my child. I told him that my answer was 'No', and that I would never tell. All I can remember is that as they were about to cut the rope God answered my prayer. A Japanese officer who had arrived on the scene took pity, and ordered the sergeant to take down my child. She was sent home, and I was sent back to my cell.

I stayed over a month at the MPHQ, when I was sent back to prison.

She was later tried by the Japanese and sentenced to death, but this sentence was commuted to one of penal servitude for life.

It is not proposed to give any further details of Kempei Tai brutality, or other examples of the reign of terror which accompanied them wherever they went. To describe one is to describe all.

In his opening speech for the prosecution in the 'Double Tenth' Trial, which opened at Singapore on 18th March 1946, Lieutenant-Colonel Colin Sleeman said this:

It is with no little diffidence and misgiving that I approach my description of the facts and events in this case. To give an

[280]

THE KEMPEI TAI

accurate description of the misdeeds of these men it will be necessary for me to describe actions which plumb the very depths of human depravity and degradation. The keynote of the whole of this case can be epitomized by two words—unspeakable horror.

Horror, stark and naked, permeates every corner and angle of the case from beginning to end, devoid of relief or palliation. I have searched, I have searched diligently, amongst a vast mass of evidence to discover some redeeming feature, some mitigating factor in the conduct of these men which would elevate the story from the level of pure horror and bestiality, and ennoble it, at least, upon the plane of tragedy. I confess that I have failed.¹

Those words describe, as no others could, the story of the Kempei Tai, a tale of unspeakable horror, and it is not surprising that the learned prosecutor could not find a single redeeming feature—for none exists.

¹ A full account of one of the Kempei Tai's most infamous exploits, the 'Double Tenth' investigation at Changi Gaol, Singapore, is given in 'The Double Tenth Trial', edited by C. Sleeman and S. C. Silkin, and published by William Hodge and Company, Ltd.

CHAPTER XII

CANNIBALISM, VIVISECTION AND
MUTILATION

THERE are not many categories of war crimes which have not already been described in the previous chapters of this book, but it would not be complete without a short account of a particularly disgusting aspect of Japanese savagery.

That the Japanese behaved with the utmost brutality to prisoners of war and civilian internees, that they massacred many thousands of civilians, that they murdered captured aviators is well known. Nevertheless, it will, doubtless, surprise many to learn that vivisection by the Japanese medical authorities was practised upon prisoners of war, that the mutilation of dead and living bodies was not uncommon, and that cannibalism was sufficiently prevalent in the Japanese Army to have been the subject of more than one Army Order.

There is evidence that at Khandok a prisoner of war, who was described by an eye-witness of the incident as unwounded and in perfect health, was treated as follows:

. . . the prisoner was tied to a tree outside the Hiari Kikan office. A Japanese doctor and four Japanese medical students stood round him. They first removed his finger nails and then cut open his chest and removed his heart with which the doctor then proceeded to give a practical demonstration.

The following extract from the diary of a Japanese officer prisoner of war tells of another similar incident.

Discovered and captured the two prisoners who escaped last night in the jungle. To prevent their escaping a second time pistols were fired at their feet, but it was difficult to hit them.

[233]

Knights of Bushido by Russell, Chapter XII on this page and following 7 pages.

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

The two prisoners were later dissected while still alive by Medical Officer Yamaji and their livers taken out, and for the first time I saw the internal organs of a human being. *It was very informative.*

A case of mutilation of a living captive is known to have occurred at Canangay, in the Philippines. The following is an eye-witness account of the atrocity.

A young woman, about twenty years of age, was caught hiding in the grass. The officer in command of the Japanese patrol which discovered her tore off all her clothes whilst two soldiers held her. She was then taken to a small shelter without walls where the officer with his sabre cut off her breasts and cut open her womb. Soldiers held her while the officer did this. At first the girl screamed but finally lay silent and still. . . . the Japanese then set fire to the shelter.

Another eye-witness has described how in Manila his house boy was tied to a pillar. While still alive the Japanese cut off his genitals and thrust his severed penis into his mouth.

Yet another instance of the mutilation of live prisoners of war was related by an eye-witness. This occurred at Balikpapan in Borneo.

I saw a district officer and a police inspector, both in uniform, in conversation with a Japanese Army officer. During the interview the officer had been continually ill-treating the district officer [a Dutchman], slapping his face and hitting him all over the body with the scabbard of his sword. Suddenly the officer drew his sword and hacked off both the Dutchman's arms just above the elbows, and then both his legs above the knees. The trunk of his body was then tied to a coconut tree and bayoneted until life was extinct. The Japanese officer then turned his attention to the Dutch policeman, who had his arms and legs hewed off in like manner. The policeman struggled on to the stumps of his legs and managed to shout 'God save the Queen', he then fell dead, a bayonet through his heart.

The mutilation of the bodies of Russian soldiers on Russian territory as early as 1938, during the Lake Hasan incident,

[234]

CANNIBALISM, VIVISECTION AND MUTILATION

was quite common. A young lieutenant was wounded and taken prisoner by the Japanese during an attack on the Russian lines one evening. On the following morning, after a successful Russian counter-attack, the young officer's body was found. Five stars had been carved on his back. A large star, with the hammer and sickle, was carved on his chest. Cartridges had been hammered into his eyes, the skull was fractured in many places, and both wrists and ankles had been smashed. His penis had been cut off and an anti-tank shell driven into his stomach. The soles of his feet were scorched, his finger nails torn off, his tongue cut out and his ears cut off. No detail of mutilation had been omitted.

The above is but one incident of many. At the Tokyo trial evidence was given that mutilation of Russian corpses was carried out on a large scale and in some cases it was apparent that mutilation had been done while the victim was still alive.

During the last year or so of the Pacific War the Japanese Army and Navy even sank so low as to practise cannibalism, and they ate parts of the bodies of Allied prisoners of war whom they had murdered contrary to the laws and usages of war.

One instance of this disgusting practice, seemingly foreign to a nation so proud of its historical antecedents, its civilization and its Bushido code of chivalry, was deposed to by Havildar Chandgi Ram, formerly of the Indian Army, who must have wondered, when he saw it, whether he was awake or dreaming.

On 12th November 1944 I was digging a trench for the Japanese in the Totabil area of New Britain. About 1600 hours a single-engined United States fighter plane made a forced landing about a hundred yards away from where I was working. The Japanese belonging to Go Butai Kendebo Camp rushed to the spot and seized the pilot, who could not have been more than twenty years old, and had managed to scramble out of the plane before the Japs could reach him.

About half an hour from the time of the forced landing, the Kempei Tai beheaded the pilot. I saw this from behind a tree

[235]

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

and watched some of the Japanese cut flesh from his arms, legs, hips and buttocks and carry it off to their quarters. I was so shocked at the scene and followed the Japanese just to find out what they would do with the flesh.

They cut it in small pieces and fried it.

Later that evening a senior Japanese officer, of the rank of major-general, addressed a large number of officers. At the conclusion of his speech a piece of fried flesh was given to all present who ate it on the spot.

There are quite a few people who refuse to believe unpalatable facts even upon the most reliable evidence. Lest the above statement of Havildar Chandgi Ram should be considered unworthy of belief, there follows the text of a captured Japanese order on the subject of cannibalism and some extracts from the interrogation of a Japanese officer, Major Matoba, who was questioned about the practice of cannibalism by a military commission convened in August 1946 by the United States Navy commander of Guam and the Marianna Islands.

ORDER REGARDING EATING FLESH OF AMERICAN FLYERS

- I. The battalion wants to eat the flesh of the American aviator, Lieutenant (Junior Grade) Hall.
- II. First Lieutenant Kanamuri will see to the rationing of this flesh.
- III. Cadet Sakabe (Medical Corps) will attend the execution and have the liver and gall bladder removed.

Battalion Commander: Major Matoba.

Date: 9th March 1945.

Time: 9 a.m.

Place: Mikazuki Hill Headquarters.

Method of issuing orders: Called to my presence First Lieutenant Kanamuri and Cadet Sakabe and gave verbal order.

Place to report after completion of order: Brigade Commander:
Major-General Tachibana.

Also informed: Divisional HQ Detachment,
Major Horie, 308 Independent Infantry Battalion.

[236]

CANNIBALISM, VIVISECTION AND MUTILATION

When asked by the US military commission to relate the circumstances of the first case of cannibalism of which he had personal knowledge, Major Matoba gave the following answer:

The first case of cannibalism occurred between 23rd and 25th February 1945. On that day I went to Divisional HQ and personally reported to General Tachibana that an American flyer would be executed at the Suyeyoshi Tai. While I was there *sake* was served, and the conversation turned to the Japanese forces stationed on Bougainville and New Guinea, and it was mentioned that the troops had been on very short rations and had had to eat human flesh. While I was still at the Divisional HQ a telephone call came through from 207 Infantry Battalion HQ asking us both to come over to a party which Colonel Kato had prepared for General Tachibana and myself. We walked to Colonel Kato's quarters and when we arrived found that he did not have enough 'eats' to go with the drinks. The General was annoyed, and a discussion took place as to where some meat and more *sake* could be obtained. The General then asked me about the execution, and the possibility of getting some meat in that way. I therefore telephoned to my own headquarters and ordered them to send over some meat and sugar cane rum at once to 307 Battalion. The meat arrived and was cooked in Colonel Kato's room. It was human flesh. Everyone ate some but nobody relished the taste.

Although the experiment does not appear, from Major Matoba's statement, to have been a gastronomic success it was, nevertheless, repeated on a number of occasions. General Tachibana decided that in future the procedure should be adopted after every prisoner of war execution, and made these views known at one of his conferences. Supplies would diminish and ammunition run short, he said, and in the end the men would have to fight 'even with rocks and would be forced to eat even their own comrades killed in combat and the flesh of the enemy'.

The General emphasized this at more than one conference. On one occasion, when all the battalion commanders were

[237]

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

present, he told them that the invasion of the island was imminent and that it would probably be the last battle before the invasion of Japan. He then went on to say once more that even when ammunition and food had run out they must still go on fighting, and live on the flesh of their comrades and that of the enemy.

In any event, he told them, the enemy were only beasts. When using this expression General Tachibana was merely repeating what his masters had continually been saying. The word '*Kichibu*', meaning 'beastly', was commonly used in orders emanating from Imperial Headquarters to describe the Allies, and in the speeches of most of Japan's military leaders. Suzuki and Tojo frequently used the word in that context, but it is doubtful whether they intended that it should be so literally interpreted as it was by General Tachibana and his officers.

But Tachibana was not alone in his opinions, for he had the full agreement of his opposite number in the Japanese Navy, Admiral Mori.

Admiral Mori on his way back from the first party given by 307 Battalion, at which human flesh was served and eaten, discussed the matter with Major Matoba, and asked him whether he would be so kind as to bring along a little liver next time an enemy pilot was executed by 308 Battalion, which was under Matoba's command. It was, doubtless, pursuant to the admiral's request that Cadet Sakabe, in the Battalion Order quoted above, had been instructed to remove the liver from Flight-Lieutenant Hall's body after execution, although in fact it was removed by a medical officer, named Teraki, as Sakabe was not sufficiently experienced.

A full account was given by Major Matoba during his interrogation.

I ordered Surgeon Teraki to hurry up and remove the liver because I wanted to take it to the admiral's headquarters. The doctor later told me that he had left it in my room, but as there was an air-raid in progress I was unable to take the liver to Naval headquarters so I had it sliced and dried . . . later on we

[238]

CANNIBALISM, VIVISECTION AND MUTILATION

all ate the liver at a party at 308 Battalion's headquarters. While we were eating it Admiral Mori mentioned that during the Sino-Japanese war human flesh and liver was eaten as a medicine by the Japanese troops. The medicine made from this liver was called *Seirogan*. . . . All the other officers agreed that liver was good medicine for the stomach. . . . Altogether I ate human flesh on three occasions, at my own Battalion HQ, at 307 Battalion HQ, and at the Naval base.

Cannibalism was also practised by the Japanese troops in New Guinea and the Solomon Islands. As this happened in a country where some of the native tribes were formerly cannibalistic great care was taken, when atrocities on these islands were being investigated by the Australian judge, Mr Justice Webb, to sift the evidence very carefully. Evidence was taken from several persons who had long experience of the natives regarding their habits and tendencies. Among these witnesses were district officers of many years' standing. After hearing the evidence, Mr Justice Webb formed the conclusion that some of the native carriers who were brought by the Japanese from Rabaul might have resorted to cannibalism had the need and opportunity arisen, but it was established by other evidence that these natives were nowhere near the fighting area where the bodies had been found with slices cut off them.

In his report to the Commonwealth Government Mr Justice Webb summed up the evidence in these words:

However, any lingering doubt as to the guilt of the Japanese forces has been removed, (1) by the admission of at least three prisoners of war that Japanese soldiers ate flesh of their own, and from Australian and American dead, and (2) by other authentic enemy sources that as early as October 1942, during the Japanese retreat some of them began eating Australian soldiers. . . . One Japanese prisoner admitted that on the 10th January 1943 at Buna he ate human flesh for the first time, and said that it tasted comparatively good. . . . On the evidence of numerous witnesses, including an Australian major-general, a brigadier-general of the United States Army

[239]

THE KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO

and several other responsible officers I find that Australian, American and Japanese dead were cut up, and in many cases eaten, by members of the Japanese armed forces. Not only were Japanese soldiers seen cutting up their own dead and putting the flesh into dixies, but they actually admitted that they were eating one another. However it is worthy of note that the majority of Japanese private soldiers who were left without food preferred to starve to death rather than resort to cannibalism.

The practice of eating each other did not have official approval, for an order was issued on 10th December 1944 from 18th Army HQ to the effect that while troops were permitted to eat the flesh of Allied dead, they must not eat their own. Furthermore a memorandum on 'Discipline' found in the possession of a Japanese major-general contained this passage: '. . . although it is not prescribed in the criminal code, those who eat human flesh (except that of the enemy), knowing it to be so, shall be sentenced to death as the worst kind of criminal against mankind.'

The consumption of enemy flesh, however, was not considered a crime. Indeed, it was sometimes made into something of a festive occasion in the officers' mess. As has already been described even admirals and generals took part in these festivities, and the flesh of murdered prisoners, or soup made from such flesh, was served to the other ranks.

The evidence available indicates clearly that cannibalism was frequently practised when there was other food available, that is to say, from choice and not of necessity.

281-a

CHAPTER VI

BIOLOGICAL EXPERIMENTS/WARFARE BY JAPANESE

Declassified U.S. Army Documents
and Testimony of Japanese Officers
concerning Biological Experiments (BW)
at Mukden, Manchuria.

BIOLOGICAL WARFARE EXPERIMENTS BY JAPANESE

Declassified Documents of U. S. Army and
Testimony of Japanese Officers

My January 18, 1988 request to the Department of the U.S. Army via Dr. Hatcher, for copies of the testimony and documents referred to in his testimony in the Congressional hearing previously cited (see page 159), was provided to me May 28, 1988, following two phone calls from them telling me they were working on it and would send it.

This technical data and testimony concerning Biological Warfare (BW) experiments by the Japanese follows here in part. You will note in the covering letter from Mr. Worthington, he states, "This report, however, contains no mention of live experimentation on any POWs of any nationality. ... No documentary evidence of biological experiments on American prisoners of war was found during the course of the investigation."

It would give my heart peace if I could believe this was true. However, my brain keeps telling me if this is true, why was it suppressed for over 40 years? The testimony admits that some of the Japanese involved in the work and the area did die because of exposure to these elements. If some of their own died, I must believe that some poor POWs, some Chinese peasants, some other innocents died also. And not by accident.

And so we search for the truth! What is the truth? We may never know. In the meantime a deaf ear is turned to those few survivors -- POWs who say they were subjected to BW experiments -- and we ignore their pleas for understanding. In view of the years of covering up this information by our own government, is it too much to ask that requirements for "proof" from the POWs be waived and their claims accepted by the VA. How can they "prove" anything when records were destroyed, returned to the Japanese and covered up for over 40 years -- all documented herein.

In only a few years there will be none surviving to complain. The problem will become moot and will go away. "We" can then all breathe a sigh of relief that this stigma to our conscience finally has been resolved.

Is that what we want?

January 18, 1988

John H. Hatcher, Chief
Army Records Management
Department of the Army
Archivist of the Army
Washington, D.C.

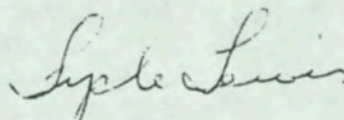
Dear Sir:

Under the Freedom of Information Act, I hereby request a full copy of the report to which you referred in your testimony of September 17, 1986, before the Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance of the Committee on Veterans Affairs, House of Representatives, and mentioned by you on page 14 and again on page 15 of the transcript ~~dealing~~ dealing with the 200 pages of information about medical/germ/bacterial experiments on POWs at Mukden, Manchuria where my husband was held POW.

Please include with these documents the one document from General MacArthurs headquarters you commented about, as well as all the other materials from Fort Detrick laboratories.

Thank you in advance for this information.

Very truly yours,



Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, FL 34232

phone: 813/377-0111



DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF THE ARMY
WASHINGTON, D.C. 20310-0107
19 MAY 1988



Office, Director of Information
Systems for Command, Control,
Communications, & Computers

Mrs. Lysle Lewis
1804 Springwood Drive
Sarasota, FL 34232

Dear Mrs. Lewis:

This responds to your January 18, 1988, Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) request to Dr. Hatcher for a copy of the report which was referred to during testimony before the Subcommittee on Compensation, Pension and Insurance of the Committee on Veterans' Affairs, House of Representatives regarding the treatment of American Prisoners of War in Manchuria during World War II. Dr. Hatcher has retired from Federal service. Enclosed are those documents which we believe Dr. Hatcher was referring to in his testimony.

The initial investigation of Japanese Biological Warfare activities in Japan was made by Lieutenant Colonel Murray Sanders and Lieutenant Harry Youngs of the Chemical Warfare Service as part of the scientific and intelligence survey of Japan conducted by the Scientific and Technical Advisory Section, United States Army Forces, Pacific (AFPAC), during September and October 1945. This report, however, contains no mention of live experimentation on any POWs of any nationality. Subsequently additional personnel associated with this activity became available for interrogation and were interviewed in Japan by personnel from G-2 (Intelligence), AFPAC, and from the Chemical Warfare Service. No documentary evidence of biological experiments on American prisoners of war was found during the course of the investigation.

If you would like to conduct further research in this area you should contact the U.S. Army Military Institute, Attention: Research and Reference Branch, Carlisle Barracks, Carlisle, PA 17013-5008.

Sincerely,

Samuel J. Worthington
SAMUEL J. WORTHINGTON
Acting Deputy Director for
Policy and Strategy

Enclosure

Mrs. Lewis,

I apologize for the quality of the reproduction. The copies we have on file are no better so this is the best reproduction the Army can furnish. If you need further assistance please contact me or Mr. Ed Arnold on 202-695-6089 or 202-695-1513. Swr.

284

~~SECRET~~

WAR DEPARTMENT
OFFICE CHIEF CHEMICAL WARFARE SERVICE
WASHINGTON, D. C.

285050
16/4/86

29 August 1945

In reply refer to

MEMORANDUM TO: Lt. Col. Anderson

Subject: Arrangements for Collection of Japanese BW Intelligence

1. At a telecon conference with Manila held in the Pentagon from 1900 to 2100, 28 August 1945, the following arrangements for the collection of Japanese BW Intelligence were confirmed:

a. Lt. Col. Murray Sanders, MC (just arrived in the Pacific Theater), Lt. Col. W. C. Moore, MC, and Major Howard Skipper, CWS, both presently in the Philippines, will form part of the first Scientific Intelligence Mission to enter Japan. Dr. Moreland (OSRD), in charge of this project under G-2 in Manila feels that for the present this is sufficient BW representation; this office agrees with this decision.

b. This Scientific Intelligence Mission will be charged with a quick survey of targets. It is scheduled to arrive in Japan 8 September. Dr. Moreland stated that it was assumed that additional specialists are likely to be needed by the service team, organized under Col. Copthorne, which will follow for the purpose of detailed examination of targets.

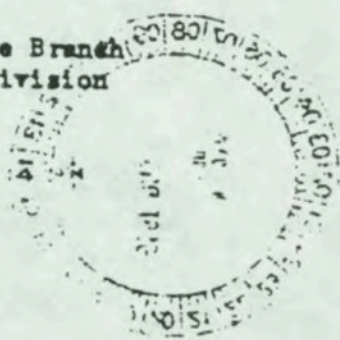
c. Dr. Moreland transmitted for us to Col. Copthorne the following names of persons, available for temporary duty, qualified for BW intelligence teams:

- Lt. Col. H. I. Cole, CWS - OC-CWS
- Lt. Col. Arvo T. Thompson, VC - Camp Detrick
- Capt. Wm. Cromartie, MC - Camp Detrick
- Capt. L. A. Baker, CWS - MIS
- Lt. Lewis W. Foy, CWS - OC-CWS

DISTRIBUTION

- Gen. Porter
- Gen. Ditto
- Gen. Waitt
- Mr. Merok
- Col. Worthley
- Capt. Fothergill
- Lt. Col. Bausman
- Lt. Col. Anderson
- Major Osborn
- File

Howard I. Cole
HOWARD I. COLE
Lt Col, CWS
Chief, Intelligence Branch
Special Projects Division



~~SECRET~~

~~SECRET~~

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS
UNITED STATES ARMY FORCES, PACIFIC
Scientific and Technical Advisory Section
Dai-Ichi Bldg - Room 233

Advanced Echelon
APO 500
9 November 1945

SUBJECT: Biological Warfare, (BW).
DATE: 8 November 1945.
INTERVIEWED: Yoshijiro UMEZU.
INTERVIEWERS: Lt. Col. Murray Sanders and Lt. H. Youngs.

1. General Umesu stated that at present he is a member of the Military Council which acts as Imperial Advisory Board of Military Affairs. From July 1944 to the de-activation of the Japanese General Staff he held the position of Chief of Staff.

Q. What information have you received in your official capacity on the subject of BW?

A. I have received only a small amount of information as to the BW itself. However, under the supposition that BW could be employed in modern warfare, the Japanese military made a considerable study and research in BW in order that it might be able to cope with it in the event that it were used.

I may say that in this connection, I have received no report on the use of BW by the U.S., Britain, or China. But neither did I receive reports that this weapon would not be used. Therefore the Japanese Army had to extend itself to study BW and to obtain knowledge in this field.

As to the Soviet with which we had been neutral until recently, reports were received concerning their intentions to use BW in the eventuality of war. These reports came from Japanese authorities in Manchuria. Therefore this was considered one of the principal motives of the Japanese study in BW.

I should like to add, that the reason for our major study was defensive. This was due to the state of contamination present in the area of battle. We felt very strongly that we must learn to combat infections. (INTERUPTION)

(Q. Natural infections?
A. Yes.)

I mentioned Japanese activities during war time, but even in peace time every effort was made to combat cholera, pest, etc. This was done not only for the military but also for civilian population.

- 1 -

~~SECRET~~

DECLASSIFIED

NND 785050

WALLEN

10/5/82

~~SECRET~~

Such activities were greatly encouraged by the Imperial Japanese Government.

So, for the reasons I have just mentioned the BW study was primarily defensive. Its chief activity was the prevention of epidemics.

Q. Would you say it is fair in summarizing that Japanese BW activities emphasized two things; offensive activities because of potential danger from the Soviet, and defensive activities for prevention of epidemics?

A. I can safely say that the Japanese Army never intended to make an offensive study. The only purpose of such a study was to learn the proper counter-measures. Naturally, the researcher must know enough of BW offensive potentialities in order that he may prepare proper defenses. In this connection offensive aspects might have been studied, but the main purpose was defensive.

Furthermore the Soviet was not the only reason for our research in BW. We felt we must expect BW attacks by any nation in any battle in modern warfare.

Q. Would you list the nations in the order of likelihood which you might expect them to employ BW?

A. Judging from the study carried out by the Japanese Army I understand there is little possibility of any nation indulging in offensive BW. But I also know that you cannot state definitely that it might not be waged. Even if chance is one out of a hundred we cannot neglect counter-measures.

Q. What is your impression of the extent of the Japanese offensive studies in BW?

A. The ways and means of research were left in the hands of responsible persons. The central authorities never instructed the technical people how to do their work but the purpose was given them, i.e. the purpose of defense. However, it is understandable that the research workers studied offensive measures for purposes of defense, therefore the offensive activities were not a major part of the program. But I have a report that a considerable number of bombs were used, therefore it must have been of some extent. However, I do not have the details.

I also have no details on information concerning the budget. No additional money was given for purposes of offense. Money was just given for defense. On that basis I would think the offensive activities would not be of tremendous scale.

Q. Was the budget assigned to the BW organization for the specific purpose of studying defensive measures or was it given simply for the study of BW?

~~SECRET~~

A. I do not recall definitely but there was no specific organization for BW. As you have already heard the study was carried out by the Boeki Kyusuibu. This organization was established for control of epidemics. The budget was assigned to various units and I do not know the details.

Q. The prime purpose of the Boeki Kyusuibu was not to combat BW? It was not organized for purposes of offensive or defensive BW?

A. The prime purpose was the control of epidemics, for purification of water and for the transportation of water to the battle front. As to the appropriations I shall have a subordinate sent to your office. As I recall, the budget was not itemized and specific instructions were not given but I am not certain of this.

Q. If this impression is true, then would you say it was within the jurisdiction of the Boeki Kyusuibu to use as much or as little of their budget for BW purposes as they say fit? In fact, could they not use as they wished for offensive purposes?

A. I am not sure but that seems to be the case.

Q. As you know, by this time we have received certain impressions in regard to Japanese BW activities. For one thing, the Boeki Kyusuibu seems to have been quite independent of the Medical Bureau. Was that the case?

A. I think I can safely say that BW research was independent of the Medical Bureau but there was an advisory connection. The Boeki Kyusuibu did not come under command control of the Medical Bureau but received technical advice in medical matters.

Q. How important did you consider BW?

A. Personally, I think BW constitutes an unimportant means of carrying on war. It is not an easy weapon to use in actual operations because of many technical difficulties. Therefore I do not think the Japanese should use BW. From the beginning to the end of the war, I entertained no thought of using it offensively. The reason for this impression was that unless it is waged on a large scale it cannot be significant. In order to use it one must make considerable preparations. To do this one must have tremendous national resources. Therefore it is not a weapon for Japan.

Second, I should like to mention that offensive BW may decrease the fighting strength of the enemy but also affect non-combatants, i.e. civilians. It might also affect our own troops. Even if a specific battle turned in favor of Japan as a result of BW, it might affect our own population. Of course, you might consider a specific battle situation but even if BW were successful it would not turn the tide of war in favor of Japan.

Third, there is a humane consideration. The use of bacterial agents is forbidden by international law. Therefore it is my firm belief that this form of war should not be resorted to in any case.

~~SECRET~~

~~SECRET~~

Q. Can you tell me whether the Emperor knew of BW i.e., defensive activities?

A. I do not know exactly. While I was Chief of the General Staff I had no chance to explain this problem to the Emperor nor was I ever asked concerning it. Perhaps my predecessor discussed this but I am not certain.

I had the impression that offensive BW might be used against Japan, but we never had such a case. Therefore there was no opportunity for discussion with the Emperor. Only if this situation arose would we take up the matter with the Emperor.

Q. What is your general impression of the progress made by the Japanese Army in demonstrating the potentialities of BW as a weapon?

A. So far as Japan is concerned my previous statements were based on the knowledge which I had of our work. However, if the Soviet or the U.S. carried out BW it could be used on a large scale. For a small nation like Japan it is impossible. However, I think it is possible for such a nation as yours or the Soviet to use it in future wars. So far as Japan is concerned there can be no future wars.

Q. You have mentioned that you have received reports concerning Soviet attempts to use BW. How reliable do you consider these sources? Can you enlarge on this? (NOTE: The answer which was given in response to this question was considered so important that General Umesu was requested to submit a written statement of his answer. Aside from information on the reliability of source material it is to be noted that there is a statement in conflict with the early one concerning the purposes of the Boeki Kyusuibu work. The answer herewith given is a true copy of the statement submitted by General Umesu's interpreter.)

A. "As to the reports concerning the Soviet possibility of using the bacteriological warfare offensive, I think they are fairly reliable." During the China Incident, around 1937, I received and also heard of reports from the Japanese authorities in Manchuria stating that they had captured at several different places on several occasions Soviet spies carrying bacteria in bottles for the purpose of dissemination. Judging from these reports, we concluded that the Soviet Union attached importance to the bacteriological warfare offensive. As I recall, it was for this reason of coping with the Soviet possibility that Boekikyusuibu was organized and began its study on the bacteriological warfare defensive around 1937. Originally we had no intention of waging war against the United States. Soviet Union has always been our future possible enemy and from that point of view, we regarded these reports with great concern and were obliged to lay stress on the study and research of the bacteriological warfare defensive.

As originally made by General Umesu this statement was "I considered the reports very reliable." (MS & HY).

~~SECRET~~

"The above is the best of my recollection and knowledge at present, and if it is your wish, I shall look into the matter further to ascertain the exact dates and the original of reports received.

/s/ Interpreter
H. Takeuchi"

Q. Why was so much secrecy maintained for the BW project?

A. To keep the information from our enemies. I might mention another reason. It might create a misunderstanding both here and abroad that we were studying BW offensive whereas we were only studying the defensive.

Q. How would you recommend that the subject be treated in the future?

A. It should not be openly discussed among nations.

Q. Why?

A. BW is clearly against humanity. It is the reason why international law forbids its use. Therefore you might say it is not appropriate to discuss the subject and therefore to stir up feeling against it. On the other hand if discussions are for purposes of reassuring and reaffirming the prohibition against its use then it is well to look into the matter. But it is not good for the scientists to say whether it is possible or not.

~~SECRET~~
RECORDS OF EXPERIMENTAL WORK
CARRIED OUT AT THE ARMY MEDICAL COLLEGE

1. During the early days of the BW investigation, it was learned that all experimental records of the Army Medical College in Tokyo had been burned. Further search revealed that a duplicate set of records had been sent to the subsidiary unit at Niigata.
2. The duplicate records were found during the closing days of the BW investigation, after the formal report was concluded. The records will be sent to the Committee for Surveying Medical Activities in Japan and thence through channels to the War Department, Washington.
3. It is known which papers represent BW research carried out at the Army Medical College in Tokyo. These papers will be translated and should supply the final data for the investigation of Japanese activities in BW.

DECLASSIFIED
NND 785050
WALEWIS 10/15/82

~~SECRET~~

DISCUSSION: It is apparent from the interviews which have been recorded that high Japanese Staff and War Ministry officers were either acquainted with only vague generalities in the BW work, that they were evasive. Clearly, they were well aware of the BW investigation by GHQ, AFPAC and were concerned with the effects which the revelations might have upon their future. However, it is very likely that all the sources of information contributing to this report were not known to the Japanese officials. This assumption is based on the statements occasionally made in the interviews directly contradicting confirmed evidence.

Since no previous attempt has been made to analyze the role of the Soviet in relation to Japanese BW, it might be well to summarize at least a part of the evidence in regard to this question.

While political analysis is not within the province of the present mission, the investigating officers would be negligent of their duty if they did not point out that diatribes against Russian intrigue stem from poorly informed as well as from thoughtful and responsible sources. The colossal effrontery against common sense is thoroughly demonstrated by such a statement as "Originally we had no intention of waging war against the United States. Soviet Union has always been our future possible enemy"* which emanates from no less a person than the recent Chief of Staff. Confused thought and conflicting statements permeate the discussions of the highest Japanese officers and the desire on the part of the investigators to remain objective is strained by frequent and obvious prevarication.

On the other hand, the claim of Russian BW activities is made by almost all informants and can hardly be discounted, without careful evaluation. The contention that anthrax, cholera, and dysentery were deliberately spread in northern Manchuria by Soviet agents is made by two of the best technical sources, Lt. Col. Naito and Col. Masuda. The latter individual went so far as to maintain that he had personally examined specimens taken from spies and that he had demonstrated B. anthracis. While there is no documentary supporting evidence, neither is there available confirmation of some of Masuda's technical data. If details on field tests which were provided by Masuda are to be considered credible, then there is no reason for refusing to accept his information relative to Russian activities.

Another point important to the final evaluation of Japanese BW intentions, is the reason behind the organization of the Boeki Kyusuibu. Here, too, is seen the confusion which disturbs Japanese officialdom. Whereas the assurance has been frequently and blandly made, in the early part of interviews that the Boeki Kyusuibu was formed only for control of epidemics and for supplying the military

* In his first, unprepared statement, General Umezu said that Japan had never entertained the thought of war except with Russia.

JAPANESE BW ACTIVITIES
(OFFENSIVE AND DEFENSIVE)

SUBJECT: Japanese Offensive Activities in Biological Warfare
DATE: 6 October 1945
INTERVIEWED: Dr Ryoichi Naito
INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders

Information was given concerning the history, personnel, and offensive activities in BW by the Japanese Army.

1. HISTORY. The origin of the Japanese movement in this field dates to 1932 when Lt Gen Shiro ISHII, then Maj ISHII, returned to Japan after a tour of Europe. The 1922* Geneva Document outlawing BW apparently constituted the initial stimulus. Maj ISHII felt that the formal prohibition against BW implied its potentiality as a weapon. For several years he attempted, without success, to obtain funds and permission which would allow him to test his hypothesis concerning the practicality of BW. His efforts were of no avail until the year 1937 when the War Ministry agreed to provide the means for establishing an institute where BW activities would be carried out. In that year construction of the Pingfan Institute was initiated with additional personnel, equipment, and construction added each year.

NOTE: It would perhaps be best at this point to clarify the location of the Institute. Commonly designated as the Harbin Institute, the BW installation is actually located one hour by motor, due south of Harbin, in the vicinity of the small village of Pingfan, a few miles east of the South-Manchuria Railroad between Harbin and Hsinkingang.

By 1940, the BW installation reached its present physical extent. However, it is likely that the garrison has been greatly increased in recent years. It is estimated that in 1942 the personnel numbered approximately 1,000 officers, engineers, and skilled technical workers.

* Reference is made by informant to a League of Nations Document of 1922. This is confusing since a League of Nations Disarmament Conference barring ".....and bacterial warfare agents" was held in 1925.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
DECLASSIFIED

The mission of the Pingfan Institute, from its beginning, has been the development of BW as a practical weapon. Extensive defensive activities permitted medical research and at the same time large-scale production of serums and vaccines. The actual vaccine production for one year has been estimated as approximately 21,000,000 doses of various types of vaccines. The offensive activities were apparently on an equal scale, and investigations involving hundreds of bombs (probably thousands) filled with simulants and pathogens were carried out.

At the same time, ISHII developed a BW organization that at its height extended from Harbin to the Dutch East Indies and from the island of Hokkaido to the Celebes. For specific reference to the numerous installations and the functions allotted to each, the data provided by Gen KAMEYASHI may be consulted. (See report on BW, Supplement 1a, b, c, d, e). It has been emphasized that offensive activities were limited to the Pingfan Institute, even the four satellite branches in Manchuria being concerned only with defensive aspects of BW.

Analysis of the studies which were investigated in the central BW installation during the past three years can only be estimated since the highly secret nature of the research (and other factors) did not permit filtration of information to any great extent to the home office.

2. OFFENSIVE ACTIVITIES. Although it has been stated that the Japanese concept of offensive BW included the use of airplanes (bombs and direct dispersion) artillery and saboteur, information at present is limited to the various types of bombs.

a. Uji bomb (ウジ): This all-purpose bomb was first tested in 1941 with simulants. Colored fluid (eosin or methylene blue) mixed with whole egg emulsion to provide viscosity comparable to payloads made up the simulant. Various technical characteristics of the dispersed load remain to be learned (method of particle size measurement, type of cloud, persistence, etc).

It has been stated that the ballistic quality of the Uji bomb was fairly good but not entirely satisfactory. One of the difficulties was due to the timing of the explosion which was not dependable because of terrain variations, and lack of reliable altimeters gave non-reproducible results. This led to the development of the so-called "mother and daughter" bomb. (See "d").

This bomb, which was produced in fairly large quantity (by the hundreds"), can be seen to have the following characteristics (See EW report, Supplement 3-a)

- (1) Porcelain casing 8 mms* thick.
- (2) Celluloid fin.
- (3) Four meters of primer cord ("explosive string") attached to porcelain in grooves and kept in place with cement.
- (4) A type-1 timer fuse in the nose and a type-5 timer posteriorly at the base of the fin.
- (5) Powder charge in nose consisting of the common type of "brown" powder. This charge was fairly satisfactory and no comparable data are available since no other types of powder were tested. The size of the powder charge is to be determined. The dimensions of the Uji bomb are:
 - (a) Length of shell ca 700 mms.
 - (b) Total length from nose to end of fin ca 1100 mms.
 - (c) Porcelain wall thickness 8 mms.
 - (d) Diameter of shell 180 mms.
- (6) The payload consisted of 10 liters of fluid. The bomb was filled with fluid and the charge was then screwed in.
- (7) Weight empty was 25 kg, and when filled was 35 kg.

b. Ha bomb (ハ): (See EW report; supplement 3-b)
This single purpose munition was developed in 1941 for dispersion of anthrax spores and was produced in relatively large numbers ("by the hundreds"). Explosive mechanism

* All measurements are stated as approximations. However, these measurements are probably accurate since they were provided as were the drawings of the bombs by the individual who originally designed them for Gen Ishii. His name will be learned if possible.

functioned by a contact fuse in the nose and a shock fuse posteriorly at the base of the fin. The munition was made of steel, the two external and internal surfaces being painted with shellac to prevent corrosion. The Ha bomb was designed for ground contamination and as a shrapnel weapon. In contrast to the Uji bomb the powder charge was large and the payload small. Here, too, the common type of "brown" powder was used for the large central bursting charge. It has been stated that this munition was used on horses in field experiments (possibly sheep), infection and death resulting from superficial wounds caused by single contaminated steel unit.

- (1) Steel casing ca 10 mms with serrated wall of ca 10 mms.
- (2) Central burster chamber ca 110 mms.
- (3) Steel fins.
- (4) Payload chamber filled with 1,500 units of steel shrapnel weighing 5 kg. The dimensions are:
 - (a) Length of chamber ca 600 mms.
 - (b) Length of payload chamber ca 400 mms.
 - (c) Total diameter ca 150 mms.
 - (d) Payload chamber diameter ca 20 mms.
- (5) The payload consisted of 500 cc of fluid.
- (6) Weight empty was ca 40 kg and when filled was ca 41 kg.

c. Ro bomb (17) (See BW report, supplement-3-b). This steel all-purpose munition was developed in 1941 and because of unsuccessful trials never progressed past the experimental stage. The principal feature of the Ro bomb is the loose connection between the large nose and the remainder of the casing. The nose, which is approximately 1/5 of the bomb, explodes on contact and thus blasts the larger posterior portion containing the payload into the air. Due to a small charge, probably urotropin or picric acid the posterior chamber explodes within 1/10 to 1/5 seconds after the primary explosion. In addition to the "small transmission" charge between the nose and posterior chamber, there is a small amount of powder in the forward section of the posterior chamber. A "black" powder of unknown type is used as the explosive charge. This bomb, unlike the previous types, is filled from the rear, closure being effected by a screw type stopper. The dimensions of the Ro bomb are:

- (1) Total length of bomb ca 500 mms.
- (2) Loose nose ca 100 mms.
- (3) Total diameter ca 100 mms.
- (4) The payload volume is 2 liters.
- (5) Weight empty is 20 kg and when filled is 22 kg.

d. In 1944, a so-called "mother and daughter" type bomb was devised to overcome difficulties in timing of the explosion encountered in the Uji bomb. Only one set of bombs was constructed and this type was discarded because of the high cost. While no details are known, the general mechanism was as follows: a large bomb with radio-sending apparatus was released from a plane. This was a high explosive type and did not contain bacteria. It was followed within a given period of time by a cluster of small bombs which had radio-receiving apparatus. When the first bomb exploded on contact and radio contact was broken, the small "daughter" bomb exploded in the air. This type of munition was designed by Lt Gondo (first name unknown), an aviation engineer interested in radio. He attempted to stabilize BW offensive tactics over irregular terrain.

3. ADDITIONAL INFORMATION. Two facts should be noted. In 1943, Gen Ishii recommended the study of large-scale drying of bacterial suspensions to be used in BW munitions. He apparently wished to concentrate the organisms and to obtain more stabilized payloads since the fluid material was active for relatively short periods of time. This plan did not materialize due to the pressure of work at the lyophilization centers which were working full time on plasma and vaccines.

Furthermore, plans were in progress to establish a large BW school but the termination of the war brought this to a premature end.

ESTIMATE. The extent of the Japanese BW program is apparent for the first time. Much thought and effort were expended in this field with results that suggest that the forging of a weapon might have been realized in the not too distant future. It must, of course, be emphasized that this statement is based on generalities and that a final analysis can only be made after careful perusal of experimental data. It remains to be seen whether these data will be available.

From a general consideration of diagrammatic construction, the Uji bomb offers some interesting possibilities if the point of explosion over variable terrain can be controlled. The casing is easily disintegrated, the charge is small, and consequently, there is little destruction of the payload. It is apparent also that the designer of this bomb wished to destroy all evidence of BW activity since the fins were made of inflammable material and it ~~would be difficult~~ to obtain the scattered fragments of the porcelain casing.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

JAPANESE BW ACTIVITIES (OFFENSIVE AND DEFENSIVE)

SUBJECT : Biological Warfare (BW)
 DATE : 7 October 1945
 INTERVIEWED : Major Jun-Ichi-KANEKO
 INTERVIEWER : Lt Col M. Sanders

1. Major Kaneko had been a medical officer in the Japanese Army and had been assigned to the Pingfan Institute, in Harbin, for 3½ years. In 1941 his duty at Pingfan was brought to a close by his transfer to the Army Medical College, Tokyo. This move was in the nature of a routine rotation procedure for medical officers. The question was raised concerning the apparent inability of General Ishii to retain his services. The answer emphasized that medical officers were transferred after certain periods, and since the BW activities in the Harbin area were not only secret but were being carried on without the permission of the highest authorities (i.e., the Emperor), no effort could be made to obtain special dispensation for personnel.

2. Although Major Kaneko is a medical officer, his interests were primarily in engineering, and he was given the responsibility of assisting a civilian, Yamaguchi, civil engineer, in the construction of BW bombs.

3. At the time that Major Kaneko began his assignment at Pingfan, sometime in 1937, an old model Uji bomb was being tested. (See previous interview)

4. BOMB DESIGN AND PRODUCTION. On the basis of information received from Major Kaneko, the following facts may be stated:

a. Yamaguchi designed both the Uji and the Ha bombs, the most important models being constructed in 1940. (in 1941 Yamaguchi suffered a stroke. He is paralyzed and ill and is not available for questioning.)

b. The bombs were produced in Mukden, in the Army arsenal. The individuals who manufactured these bombs were not told their purpose; consequently, there were technical difficulties frequently encountered and the production activity was fairly inefficient.

c. By the middle of 1941, at least 500 each of the Ha and Uji bombs had been made and tested.

d. There were certain deficiencies in each type which stimulated the search for more satisfactory bombs.

NOTE: It is to be emphasized that Major Kaneko's information extends only to 1941. He does not know what happened at Pingfan after that year.

~~DECLASSIFIED~~

NUD 785050

Wbleat

10/15/82

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

299

e. DEFICIENCIES OF THE UJI BOMB.

- (1) The porcelain casing varied in the different production lots and only one-third were completely satisfactory from the point of view of size and shape.
- (2) The friable porcelain cracked frequently.
- (3) This bomb was made to explode in the air and the height of explosion could not be satisfactorily determined when it was released over irregular terrain.

f. DEFICIENCIES OF THE HA BOMB.

- (1) The desired shrapnel effect was not obtained when the bomb fell in holes or into depressions.
- (2) The pay load was small and relatively unsatisfactory in covering the iron particles, which were supposed to produce the effect by contact injury.
- (3) Too much powder was required. The bomb carried a charge of approximately 3 kg.

NOTE: Major Kaneko stated that no experiments were done on heat generated by the explosion; that originally the iron particles were spheres and later cylinders.

g. The bombs were tested in the field attached to the institute (10x10 km). (Kaneko did not know the method of ground decontamination).

h. There were thirty responsible investigators in the second section (bomb research). The personnel included scientists, engineers, and aviators.

i. Three types of planes were used in the field tests:

- (1) Scout type 94, capacity 4 Ha-bombs.
- (2) Light bomber, type 88, capacity 6 Ha bombs.
- (3) Heavy bomber, type 97, capacity 12 Ha bombs.

Minor types of planes were not available.

j. PAY LOAD.

- (1) Organisms in the Uji bomb included *B. Prodigiosus*, *V. cholerae*, *P. pestis*, various types of dysentery organisms,

B. typhosi, B. anthracis. Efforts were principally directed toward the study of P. pestis and B. anthracis, so far as the Uji bomb was concerned.

(2) Organisms studied in the Ha bomb were limited to B. prodigiosus and (principally) B. anthracis.

K. EXPERIMENTAL ANIMALS. It is known that horses and sheep were used in the field experiments. By the early part of 1941, over 300 horses had been expended in experimental trials.

L. STORAGE. The fluid suspensions of the vegetative bacteria were tested at room temperature and a 90% loss of potency in three days was noted. The anthrax spore suspension was maintained with little loss at room temperature for one week. In the case of B. anthracis only the use of solid media was permitted by General Ishii. Frequent requests to investigate fluid media were refused. Other small experimental animals were also used. Because of the unsatisfactory results on storage, two courses were followed:

(1) All preparations were kept at refrigerator temperature. Bombs were loaded just previous to field trials.

(2) The program for large-scale lyophilization was initiated by General Ishii but, as previously stated, this phase of the program was delayed due to the pressure of plasma and vaccine production. (Kaneko was unable to give even an approximate quantitative estimate of any bacterial suspensions or any of the details of the media used).

M. BACTERIAL CLOUDS. Details concerning the character of the cloud resulting from Uji and Ha explosions were not known. Up to 1941, data for particle size and determination of cloud characteristics were obtained by means of a stationary explosion with the bomb suspended in tripod fashion at a height of ten meters. A base line of wind velocity of five meters per second was used, and it is estimated that under such circumstances a "fairly uniform" cloud extended for a distance of 500 meters. Neither the pattern of the cloud nor its persistence was known to Kaneko. Apparently little or no information is available (as of 1941) concerning bacterial clouds resulting from munitions dropped from planes.

Discussions of particle size was somewhat vague. The only information that could be obtained was that the mean diameter was 0.5 microns for particles in a cloud resulting from a stationary Uji explosion. The only method of measurement which could be recalled was the use of colored fluid in the bombs, particle size being determined by contact with paper.

N. OTHER BOMB MODELS. Apparently several modifications of both the Uji and Ha bombs were investigated. The number of models is not known; changes were minor and were essentially concerned with variations in capacity and shape. One modification of the Ro bomb may be mentioned—the I bomb. In this munition a smaller, central burster charge was used than in the original model. A minute of mercury constituted the detonator for the central burster charge of organisms pathogenic via the respiratory tract. This bomb was discarded in 1941.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

29-E-b-4

A so-called "H" shell was tested. It is supposed to have been the ordinary gas shell but the only information available at this interview was the unsatisfactory trajectory and the fact that this shell had been discarded by 1937. Similarly, a so-called "S" shell was tested and discarded before 1937. This is supposed to have been an ordinary 80mm shell with turpentine removed and replaced by bacteria.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

29-E-b-4

~~SECRET~~

Appendix 29-E-c

JAPANESE BW ACTIVITIES
(OFFENSIVE AND DEFENSIVE)

SUBJECT: Biological Warfare (BW)
DATE: 8 October 1945
INTERVIEWED: Lt Col Seiichi MIIZUMA
INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders

Col. Miizuma furnished information this date that he had been successful in making contact with Col. Masuda, Chief of Section 3, at the Pingfan Institute. Col. Masuda has just arrived in Tokyo from Harbin. He is supposed to have been associated with Gen. Ishii during the time that Ishii was in charge of BW. Col. Masuda worked in BW until a month ago and will report for an interview, 9 October.

DECLASSIFIED

NND 285050
Walewis 10/5/82

~~SECRET~~

Appendix 29-E-c

~~SECRET~~

JAPANESE BW ACTIVITIES
(OFFENSIVE AND DEFENSIVE)

DEFENSE
NND 785050
Wolfe's 10/5/82

SUBJECT: Biological Warfare (BW)
DATE: 9 October 1945
INTERVIEWED: Lt Col Saichi MIIZUKA (Army); Col. Torosada MASUDA.
INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders;

1. Col Masuda expressed his desire to cooperate with the investigating officer fully and to provide whatever information he had concerning the subject of BW. He stated that he had been interested in the subject for many years and had either been directly associated with the Japanese work in all its phases or had been kept informed during periodic absences.

In response to the request for his curriculum vitae, Col Masuda provided the following information. The years marked with an asterisk denote the periods during which Col Masuda actually participated in BW activities.

1926 Grad Kyoto Imperial Medical Faculty and thence
Army Medical Corps
1926-1929 - Regimental Physician
1929-1931 - Post-Graduate in Bacteriology, Microbiological
Institute, Kyoto
1931-1932 - Prof of Bacteriology, Army Medical School
1932-1934 - France & Germany (Berlin) (Prof Erdemann)
L'Ecole Militaire Service Sanitaire
1934-1936 - Military Service (Inf Regiment)
1936-1937 - War Ministry - Military Sanitation (Administration)
*1937-1939 - Manchuria - Water Purification Dept, under Gen Ishii
1939-1941 - To central China
*1941-1943 - Prof of Bacteriology, Military Medical College
March, 1943-December, 1944 - Burma Malaria Control
Jan, 1945 - March, 1945 - Saigon Hq
*April, 1945-August 14, 1945 - Harbin, Manchuria

2. Col Masuda stated that the BW work was carried on by the Boeki Kyusubbu (Anti-epidemic & Water Purification Dept) of the Kwantung Army under Lt Gen Shiro Ishii, and he requested permission to explain the stimulus for the initiation of Japanese BW activities. In 1935, the Kwantung Army was informed that many Russian spies, carrying bacteria in ampules or in glass bottles, had crossed into Kwantung territory. Five spies were apprehended by the Kempei and on these spies were found several glass bottles and ampules.

Such incidents were not the first nor were they the last, but Col Masuda stated that he can personally vouch for this episode involving five individuals. The examination of the various containers revealed the presence of dysentery organisms (Shiga and Flexner) and bacteria--spore mixtures of B anthracis and V cholerae. He stated that he, personally, saw the anthrax organisms.

Sturred by such incidences, the Kwantung Water Purification Dept investigated the possibilities of artificial epidemics; i.e., a plan was made to investigate BW potentialities. As one method of study of this field, the problem of munitions was investigated and Col Masuda was given the task of obtaining a practical bomb.

While the formal organization of the Kwantung Boeki Kyusuibu was made up of four sections, BW studies were carried out in secret.

To all intents and purposes, the Boeki Kyusuibu had the following sections:

- Section I. Fundamental research in Immunology (typhoid, dysentery, anthrax, erysipelas, viruses, and rickettsia)
- Section II. Epidemiological research
- Section III. Water supply and purification
- Section IV. Vaccine production

3. In order that the work might be kept secret, none of the sections which studied various aspects of offensive BW cooperated with each other. Workers were not supposed to discuss their work but carried out problems given them by Ishii.

4. Col Masuda stated that only two individuals have the complete BW story--Ishii and himself. He emphasized that the purpose of the work was to create a weapon so that an adequate defense could be developed.

5. Col Masuda stated that his personal opinion was that no practical bacterial bomb had been developed, but he placed the responsibility for this on organizational difficulties, petty jealousies, and poor equipment. He was bitter regarding the weaknesses of a system which did not recognize a scientific effort and felt that with proper encouragement BW could certainly be made into a practical weapon.

~~SECRET~~

29-E-d-3

The fundamental idea of Col Masuda's research was the dispersion of bacterial emulsions at a proper height. He stated that dried organisms would undoubtedly be the ultimate payload of BW weapons, but that they could not be used in preliminary investigations because of danger to the workers. However, with the conclusion of preliminary tests on fluid it would be desirable to substitute dried material. To illustrate the research which had been carried on in his section, he explained a diagram drawn by himself before the interview. A translation of this diagram may be seen in the BW report, Supplement 3-e.

6. Additional statements which were made at the interview are given below because of their general application to the BW problem.

a. Many apologies were presented for the crude nature of the data. Admittedly the work at Harbin was not done scientifically (Masuda's opinion).

b. Destruction of the Harbin installation and its contents including all munitions had been carried out in the early part of August when it was known that the Russian Army had entered the area.

c. It was felt that both the Ha and the Uji bombs could be practical with the improvement of fins to prevent "tumbling" and with the addition of good fuses. NOTE: Masuda was bitter about the obsolete equipment given him for his experiments. Frequent reference was made to poor fuses which were made available. If proximity fuses could have been obtained, both bombs would have been greatly improved. The favored bomb was the Uji No. 50. If a thin iron fin could have been developed to improve the ballistics, this would have made an excellent munition.

d. In 1939, investigation of various types of bombs was stopped and attention was directed on the testing in the field of Uji bomb type No. 50.

7. At this point in the interview, it was suggested by the officer in charge that the discussion be continued on another day. It was obvious that Col Masuda was very ill, and it was learned that he was suffering from acute malaria. The following subjects were given him for which he was to obtain data for the next interview:

~~SECRET~~

29-E-d-3

a. Detailed information on bacteria used in BW at Harbin. (Types of organisms, media, methods of mass production, method of field trials, method of assessment, animal experiments, etc)

b. Bacterial clouds (size, shape, persistence, particle size, method of measurement and sampling of cloud)

c. Data on cloud chamber work.

d. Plan of the institute at Harbin.

ESTIMATE: It is to be emphasized that Col Masuda was supposedly unaware of the other sources of information concerning Japanese offensive BW activities (App. 29-E-b). Whether or not this was the fact could not, of course, be established without possible drastic effects upon both sources of information. On the whole, the technical data provided in both this and previous interviews seemed to be consistent. However, in the matter of policy there are two important inconsistencies or omissions. Col Masuda did not explain the cause of secrecy, and when questioned stated that he did not know the answer. It is to be noted it had been disclosed that BW was being carried out without the knowledge of the emperor. Perhaps the most important point is the fact that Col Masuda blames the Russian activities as being the cause for initiation of Japanese BW. According to the previous source of information in this matter, BW originated in Japan because of Gen Ishii's intense interest in the subject.

~~SECRET~~

BW ACTIVITIES AT PINGFAN

SUBJECT: Biological Warfare (BW)
 DATE: 11 October 1945
 INTERVIEWED: Col Tomosada MASUDA; Lt Col Seichi NIIZUMI
 INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders*

1. Col Masuda requested permission to answer questions given to him on his previous conference.

a. Regarding detailed information on bacteria used in BW at Harbin, the following organisms were at one time or another considered potential BW agents and were used in experiments.

- (1) B typhi
 - (2) paratyphoid A and B
 - (3) B dysenteriae
 - (4) V cholerae
 - (5) P pestis
 - (6) B anthracis
 - (7) M malleomyces (glanders)
 - (8) Anaerobes
- (a) B welchii
 - (b) B weylii
 - (c) B histolyticus
 - (d) B tetani

No viruses or rickettsia have been used in BW experiments. Generally speaking, S-form for all organisms were used with the exception of the anthrax bacillus, in which instance the R-form was studied.

b. Media. Agar was the common vehicle for cultivation for the bacteria used in all tests. The following formula for the agar preparation was given:

Peptone - 15 grams
 Agar - 30 grams
 Sodium chloride - 5 grams
 Distilled water - q.s. 1,000 cc

ph 7.45 after sterilization

* Lt Col Babcock, BW officer for FEIF, was invited to attend this conference.

~~SECRET~~

~~SECRET~~

29-F-a-2

Enteric organisms were harvested after a growth period of 24 hours, at 37° C. In the case of the plague, anthrax and glanders bacteria, a growth period of 48 hours ensued before harvesting. For the anaerobes, one week's growth was permitted before collection.

In a few instances, there were some modifications of the basic medium.

For the plague organism, 0.01% saturated solution of gentian violet was used as an anti-contaminant.

For anthrax bacteria, 7.5 grams of peptone were used instead of 15 grams, and 10 grams of sodium chloride instead of 5 grams.

For the glanders bacillus organic iron, 0.01% was added to agar. These modifications resulted in higher bacterial counts than if the basic medium alone was used. Data on bacterial counts are not available.

c. To produce bacteria *en masse* as required for field trials, special small tanks of duralumin have been constructed. The tanks used for mass production are under a military patent and arrangements were made to obtain a sample tank. The surface of this material was oxidized (aluminite) for further protection against corrosion.

When Col Masuda was asked concerning the productive capacity of his unit at various times, he replied that he had no figures on this. However, it was possible to obtain some idea of the magnitude of operations by the fact that one duralumin tank yielded 40 grams of 3 typhi scrapings. In any preparations for bomb experiments, 900 duralumin baths were used.

d. Viability Studies. Before experimenting with the organisms in the munitions, Col Masuda investigated their capacity for remaining alive at room temperature (19-25° C). The technique followed in these determinations consisted of placing bacterial suspensions in large glass containers. (Capacity unknown, but of the order of several liters). The flasks were sealed with rubber, covered with paraffin, and were periodically tested. Following figures for viability of organisms were given by Col Masuda:

~~SECRET~~

- (1) Dysentery organisms died within 5-7 days.
- (2) V cholerae died within 3-5 days. (Equal amounts of horse serum and bacterial scrappings were stored in peptone water).
- (3) F pestis died within 5-7 days. (dextrose broth)
- (4) Spore suspensions of anthrax died within three months. (0.1% phenol was added to the basic medium to prevent fermentation)
- (5) M malleomyces died within 3-5 days.
- (6) Anaerobes were never adequately studied because of lack of apparatus.

As a result of these findings, Col Masuda decided to use only two organisms in bomb field tests: (1) the simulant, B prodigiosus; (2) anthrax spores.

When asked whether any attempts were made to investigate substances which might be added to the organisms for purposes of preservation, he stated that he was unable to apply himself seriously to the problem which he knew was of vital importance. The reasons for this limitation were, as had been previously noted, organizational and financial.

e. Contamination of Well Water. Deliberate contamination of water and testing for viability of organisms might be termed an offensive measure, but the point was made that Col Masuda's interest was limited to possible activities of the Chinese in this respect.

During the course of a year, Col Masuda's units tested more than a thousand wells in Manchuria. It is his opinion that saboteur activity on a large scale is not effective if wells are used as the vehicles for bacteria. He had two reasons for this opinion. In the first place, the enteric organisms which were tested died within a few days (2-4 days) under the best circumstances. Second, he found a tremendous variation in the viability curve of organisms in water samples from different areas. Thus, in one instance, the inoculum might have disappeared from the water within two days, whereas a comparable contamination may have been quite potent, (at least many survivors could be demonstrated) in water from a different area. In an

attempt to explain this variation, Col Masuda examined factors which might be considered as variables in the problem and made one interesting correlation. In those instances when the death rate of the bacteria in the water was great; that is, when no organisms could be recovered within 24-48 hours, it was found that the water sample came from a district where there had been a recent outbreak of cholera, typhoid, or dysentery. The more recent the outbreak, the greater appeared to be the sterilizing effect of the water. (Col Masuda agreed that this might be a bacteriophage phenomenon.)

f. Experimental Animals. For the most part, the principal small animals used in BW investigations consisted of mice and guinea pigs (marmot?). For field trials, horses and sheep were used. A total of 100 horses and 500 sheep was expended in the course of the investigation of anthrax as a BW weapon. This covered a period of two years.

g. Bacterial Clouds. The nature and characteristics of clouds resulting from bacterial dissemination in runitions were studied in a crude and qualitative fashion. In preliminary tests, clouds were investigated by the use of colored dyes in the material exploded. Based on the principle that dye so used should have a vivid color and should be very soluble in water, rhodamine ($\frac{1}{10,000}$) and fuchsin ($\frac{1}{1,000}$) saturated alcoholic solution) were studied.

A grid on level ground with a radius of 1,000 meters was set up with markers at 10 meter intervals, the runition filled with colored fluid in 2-5% dextrose broth being exploded in the center. For the first 50 meter radii, samples on paper were taken every 10 meters, the evaluation being made visually. Col Masuda claimed that in this fashion he was able to analyze the explosive pattern and particle size down to 50 microns. To determine smaller particle size, the paper was placed in potassium iodide baths after static explosion. Thus, the 2-5% dextrose broth revealed particles as small as 10 microns.

Beyond the 50-meter point on the grid, sampling intervals were not constant, the distances varying with the runition and purpose of individual experiments.

It is interesting to note that the climactic conditions in the vicinity of Pingfan were such that a mild wind could be expected almost year-round. Wind velocities of five meters per second were very common and in winter

the snow-covered ground, instead of paper, was used as a background for the colored particles.* In this season also, it was common for wind velocity to be two meters per second, and a dry, cold winter was the rule.

In the case of munitions dropped from the plane, an instantaneous umbrella-like cloud was discerned. This pattern was quickly dissipated but particles continued to descend for approximately five minutes. In actuality, Masuda was not able to make accurate statements as to particle descent in relation to time since his sampling was made at the end of thirty minutes. However, he stated that quantitative data had been accumulated, based on mathematical formulae.

The size of the field and stable weather conditions permitted both static explosion experiments and drop experiments from planes. When colored fluid was used as an indicator, no bacteria were included in the bomb fluid because of the bacteriostatic effect of the dyes. If bacteria were placed in the munition, dextrose broth (for starch tests) was used as the vehicle.

The question was asked concerning the significance of 10 micron particles; i.e., why was it desirable to obtain smaller particles. Col Masuda answered that he attempted only to produce as small drops as possible in approaching an aerosol.

As was to be expected, the pattern of the explosion was such that large particles were to be found in the immediate vicinity of the point of explosion with a decrease in the size of droplets occurring toward the periphery.

h. A brief discussion was held on the direct dispersion of bacterial agents from planes. While no formal program was planned for this activity, several experiments had been carried out. Again, lack of apparatus and organizational difficulties prevented Col Masuda from obtaining little more than preliminary data. He did feel that dried material would be effectively dispersed directly from a plane. However, his own experience was concerned with fluids containing dyes or suspensions of *S. prodigiosus*. The only constructive statement which was made on this subject was that a great amount of material be dispersed in as short a time as possible. Further details were sparse but it was noted that a tank in the fuselage was used. In one field test 920 liters of simulant were dispersed per second.

* Unfortunately, the movies and still-photographs of these winter and summer experiments are not available.

~~SECRET~~

29-F-a-6

Another factor of importance was the viscosity of fluid vehicles for test material. 50% glycerine and 10% gelatine were found to be fairly satisfactory vehicles for direct dispersion. When large amounts of such viscous, colored material was disseminated from a plane at 4,000 meters, one hour elapsed before the colored particles reached the ground. If B prodigiosus was used, no viable organisms were recovered on the ground.

Similar tests were carried out at altitudes of 2,000, 1,000, and 200 meters with somewhat better results.

1. Casualties Against the Personnel. In the course of discussion, Masuda incidentally mentioned that two soldiers had died during the course of field trials. Questioning revealed that one of the two individuals had been ordered to cut the grass at the experimental site a day after an anthrax trial. He contracted pneumonic anthrax and passed away after a short course of the disease. The second soldier was the first fatality's roommate and he died of an anthrax septicemia, the result of a contact infection. In addition, five cases of anthrax infection were reported during the course of two years of field trials with this organism. Masuda thinks that other infections may have occurred either during his absence or without his knowledge.

J. Cloud Chambers. No BV investigations were carried on in cloud chambers. Such apparatus was not available and it was Masuda's opinion that chambers were unnecessary since the work could be carried on directly in the field.

2. BUDGET AND PERSONNEL. In the year 1944, six million yen (approximately 2½ million dollars on basis of 1944 rate of exchange) were allotted to Pingfan Institute for research purposes. The impression was gained that this was the result of consecutive budget reductions but no figures were available. It was emphasized that the utilization of the budget was within the jurisdiction of General Ishii.

When asked concerning the size of the technical strength of the Pingfan Institute in recent years, Col Masuda stated that the maximum garrison of 3,000 individuals occurred in 1939-1940. Since that time there was a gradual reduction in strength due to the necessity of meeting Army personnel requisitions and to a policy of retrenchment. By 1945, just previous to the dissolution of the Institute, the garrison strength was 1,500.

~~SECRET~~

29-F-a-6

BW ACTIVITIES AT PINGFAN

SUBJECT: Japanese Activities in Biological Warfare (BW)
 DATE: 16 October 1945
 INTERVIEWED: Col Tomosada MASUDA, Lt Col Seiichi NIIZUMA
 INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders, Lt Harry Youngs

- Q The question of toxin studies in Japanese BW was raised.
 A No toxin studies were carried out in the Boeki Kyusuibu.
- Q What was the budget of the Institute at Pingfan?
 A There was an intensive building program from 1937 to 1940. The operating budget for 1945 was ¥6,000,000; this was the approximate budget for 1944 and did not include expenditures for new buildings. The budget for the years prior to 1945 and 1944 was greater because of building activities at the Institute.
- Q What work was done in the "pepiniers" building?
 A This building was used for growing all the produce needed for the workers at the Institute. It was also used to supply food for the animals. The garden plot was approximately 5 km square.
- Q Give a brief historical background for the Institute.
 A The Japanese BW work started in Manchuria when the Japanese gained control of the territory in 1934. In 1934, the Bureau of Laboratories was established at the Harbin Military Hospital. In the same year the Pingfan area was obtained from the Chinese government. There were no buildings in the area at this time. However, in 1937 construction was begun in the area. In the same year, field trials in connection with the BW work were carried out in this area. The actual laboratory work continued to be done at the Harbin Military Hospital where one department was located. In 1940, the building program was completed and three departments were moved to the Pingfan area, the third department remaining at the Harbin Military Hospital.
- Q Did BW bomb development stop after 1939?
 A All the work and tests were completed by 1939, but work on new bomb developments was continued until 1945. This was on the direct order of Gen. Ishii. Although the developmental work continued after 1939, no new bombs were perfected. All experimental work after 1939 corroborated the previous results.

Q What protection was offered the field trial workers?
 A A completely rubberized, anti-plague suit was worn over street clothing in the field trials. Immediately after the trials, the workers were required to remove all clothing and bathe themselves in 2% cresol or mercuric chloride. The workers were closely observed for any signs of infection after the trials. This routine was followed at each trial. However, as time went on the workers became careless. In 1944, there were two plague deaths as a result of field trials.

Q What protection was offered the laboratory workers?
 A Frequent vaccination of all laboratory personnel was required. There were approximately 20 cases of laboratory infection a year. The workers were paid extra for working in the Pingfan Institute; officers were given an extra 60 yen a month; and enlisted men received extra food.

NOTE: According to Col Masuda, there were very few deaths.

Q What therapy for plague was available?
 A Surgical treatment was practiced; i.e., extirpation of glands in bubonic cases. The patient also received anti-plague horse serum. Oral administration of sulfonamides was tried.

NOTE: In Masuda's opinion, the effectiveness of sulfanilamide was questionable. The type of sulfanilamide used was called "therapal".

There were no cases of pneumonic plague at the Pingfan Institute; however, there were one or two cases in Manchuria proper.

Q What work was carried out in the drying building?
 A This building was used primarily as an experimental unit by the defensive group. It was used by this group for the desiccation of vaccines. Because of excessive cost, no work was done on the desiccation of large amounts of material for offensive BW. Altogether they had 20 drying units but no figures on production were available.

Q What was the glanders program?
 A In 1937, undoubtedly due to carelessness on the part of the laboratory workers, two deaths resulted from experimental infection. Because of the severity of the infections, the authorities discontinued the work in this field. There was no therapy for glanders available.

Q What work on typhus vaccine was done at Pingfan?
 A The Institute owned 50,000 chickens. The chickens were loaned out to the local farmers in lots of 100-200 per farmer. All eggs were the property of the Institute, and were given by the farmers to collecting agents from the Institute. In addition to this source, eggs were purchased from local farmers. The total egg supply was approximately 20,000 a week. On the average, 70% of those eggs were fertile.

Q How were fertile eggs supplied?
 A Lung and egg vaccines were made.

Only experimental work on virus vaccines was carried out at the Institute. Virus vaccines were in production. A good vaccine for the protection of animals against Russian tick-borne encephalitis was developed at the Institute. However, they had not developed any vaccine for human use.

Q What work was done in the machine shop?
 A This building was used as a production and repair shop for laboratory supplies; i.e., construction of animal cages, machine shop to repair damaged instruments, etc.

Q If the Japanese had theoretically used BW as an offensive weapon, how did you intend to protect your troops?
 A Methods of disinfection:

1. Heat - boil clothing, water, etc.
2. Solutions - use chemical solutions (Hgcl₂ or lysol) on skin and material coming in contact with agent.
3. Washing - wash all parts of body (hands, face, body)

B. Serum Therapy - all cases of infection were to be treated with serum.

C. Area decontamination - Col Masuda stated that contaminated territory was denied to troops for three days, since he felt that during this interval, terrain contaminated with B Anthracis would be safe for troops.

~~SECRET~~

SUMMARY

BIOLOGICAL WARFARE (BW)

1. Responsible officers of both the Army and Navy have freely admitted to an interest in defensive BW.
2. Naval officers maintained that offensive BW had not been investigated.
3. Information has been obtained that from 1936 to 1945 the Japanese Army fostered offensive BW, probably on a large scale. This was apparently done without the knowledge (and possibly contrary to the wishes) of the Emperor. If this was the case, reluctance to give information relative to offensive BW is partially explained.
4. BW seems to have been largely a military activity, with civilian talent excluded in all but minor roles.
5. The initial stimulus for Japanese participation in BW seems to have been twofold:
 - a. The influence of Lt Gen Shiro Ishii.
 - b. The conviction that the Russians had practiced BW in Manchuria in 1935, and that they might use it again. (The Chinese were similarly accused)
6. The principal BW center was situated in Pingfan, near Harbin, Manchuria. This was a large, self-sufficient installation with a garrison of 3,000 in 1939-1940. (Reduced to 1,500 in 1945).
7. Intensive efforts were expended to develop BW into a practical weapon, at least eight types of special bombs being tested for large-scale dissemination of bacteria.
8. The most thoroughly investigated munition was the Uji type 50 bomb. More than 2,000 of these bombs were used in field trials.
9. Employing static explosion techniques and drop tests from planes, approximately 4,000 bombs were used in field trials at Pingfan.

~~SECRET~~
DECLASSIFIED

~~SECRET~~
NND
WGL/MS

785050

10/5/82

~~SECRET~~

10. By 1939, definite progress had been made, but the Japanese at no time were in a position to use BW as a weapon. However, their advances in certain bomb types was such as to warrant the closest scrutiny of the Japanese work.

11. Japanese offensive BW was characterized by a curious mixture of foresight, energy, ingenuity, and at the same time, lack of imagination with surprisingly amateurish approaches to some aspects of the work.

12. Organisms which were considered as possible candidates for BW, and which were tested in the laboratory or in the field included:

all types of gastro intestinal bacterial pathogens, *P. pestis* (plague), *B. anthracis* (anthrax), and *H. malleomyces* (glanders).

13. Japanese defensive BW stressed:

a. Organization of fixed and mobile preventive medicine units (with emphasis on water purification)

b. An accelerated vaccine production program.

c. A system of BW education of medical officers in all echelons (BW Defensive Intelligence Institute)

14. The principal reasons for the Japanese failure were:

a. Limited or improper selection of BW agents.

b. Denial (even prohibition) of cooperated scientific effort.

c. Lack of cooperation of the various elements of the Army (e.g., ordnance)

d. Exclusion of civilian scientists, thus denying the project the best technical talent in the empire.

e. A policy of retrenchment at a crucial point in the development of the project.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

ANNUAL PRODUCTION CAPACITY OF VACCINES AND SERUMS BY
THE KWANTUNG ARMY WATER PURIFICATION ~~SECTION~~
DEPARTMENT

The Kwantung Army Water Purification Section on orders from CG, Kwantung Army, prepares and supplies vaccines and serums for the army units, civilian employees of the military and a portion of the general populace in the area under the jurisdiction of the Kwantung Army in Manchuria, No. China, and Korea. Main items and quantities are as given below.

Vaccines

<u>Item</u>	<u>Approximated Quantity Amt. Handled Annually</u>
1. Dried vaccine	human doses
2. Plague vaccine	2,000,000
3. Typhoid-fever para typhoid vaccine	4,000,000
4. Gas gangrene vaccine	2,000,000
5. Tetanus vaccine	2,000,000
6. Cholera vaccine	500,000
7. Dysentery vaccine	4,000,000
8. Scarlet fever vaccine	100,000
9. Whooping cough vaccine	100,000
10. Diphtheria vaccine	100,000
11. Eruptive typhus vaccine	
a. Chicken egg vaccine	1,000,000
b. Rat lung vaccine	2,000,000
c. Field squirrel lung vaccine	1,000,000
12. Tuberculosis vaccine	500,000
13. Vaccine lymph	2,000,000

Treatment Anti-Sera

<u>Item</u>	<u>Liters</u>
1. Gas gangrene serum	5,000
2. Tetanus serum	5,000
3. Diphtheria serum	500
4. Dysentery treatment serum	1,000
5. Streptococcal serum	500
6. Staphylococcal serum	500
7. Erysipelas treatment serum	500
8. Pneumonia treatment serum	1,000
9. Cerebo-spinal meningitis treatment serum	500
10. Anthrax treatment serum	50
11. Plague treatment serum	1,000
12. Plasma for blood transfusion	100,000

~~SECRET~~

Diagnostic Antisera

Item

1. Typhoid fever, para-typhoid	Each 20 liters
2. Eruptive typhus	5 liters
3. Tuberculin	3,000,000 human doses
4. Dried tuberculin	3,000,000 human doses

Sera for Diagnosis

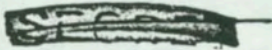
<u>Item</u>	<u>Liters</u>
1. Typhoid fever, para-typhoid diagnostic serum	5
2. Dysentery (each kind) diagnostic serum	5
3. Cholera (each type) diagnostic serum	5
4. Cerebro-spinal meningitis diagnostic serum	2
5. Pneumonia diagnostic serum	2
6. Salmonella serum	2

~~SECRET~~
Diagnostic AntigensItem

1. Typhoid fever, para-typhoid	Each 20 liters
2. Eruptive typhus	5 liters
3. Tuberculin	3,000,000 human doses
4. Dried tuberculin	3,000,000 human doses

Sera for DiagnosisItemLiters

1. Typhoid fever, para-typhoid diagnostic serum	5
2. Dysentery (each kind) diagnostic serum	5
3. Cholera (each type) diagnostic serum	5
4. Cerebro-spinal meningitis diagnostic serum	2
5. Pneumonia diagnostic serum	2
6. Salmonella serum	2



PREFACE TO APPENDIX 29

Statements in the interviews (Appendix 29) have been largely left in their original form and may therefore appear foreign or unwieldy.

IT IS REQUESTED, IN THE EVENT THAT ANY USE IS MADE OF MATERIAL IN THE INTERVIEWS, THAT JAPANESE NAMES AND SOURCES BE KEPT CONFIDENTIAL BECAUSE INFORMATION WAS OCCASIONALLY GIVEN CONTRARY TO THE WISHES OF SUPERIOR OFFICERS.

DECLASSIFIED

NND
WGLewis
785050
10/5/82



ARMY MEDICAL COLLEGE

SUBJECT : Japanese Defensive Activities in Biological Warfare (BW).
 DATE : 1 October 1945.
 INTERVIEWED : Col Takatomo INOUE; Lt Col Ryoichi NAITO.
 INTERVIEWERS: Lt Col Murray Sanders.

1. This conference held at the Army Medical College emphasized the reluctance with which Japanese officials discussed BW. Col Inoue who is chief of the Bacteriological Section in the Army Medical College was given the responsibility of defensive BW. He stated that BW was part of the research program in preventive medicine. When asked for the records of this research he said that none were available since all the files had been burned as a result of bombing. This was certainly likely since more than 90% of the Army Medical College has been completely destroyed by air attack.

2. In response to a question concerning the extent of the BW activities in the Army Medical College Col Inoue stated that no type of artificial infection experiment had been carried out and that the approach to the problem of BW was based on general medical concept. Furthermore, 90% of their efforts had been expended toward the improvement of vaccines.

3. In response to orders from Gen Koyayashi, Col Inoue prepared a resume (?) of his departments activities during the war years. Since no detailed records were available the summary was prepared from memory. A translation of this statement is appended. It is apparent that his material deals only with generalities and provides absolutely no information on BW. Col Inoue provided a list of personnel within his department. They are:

Maj Ikebe, Kichitaro	Differentiation of Vibrio cholerae from non-pathogenic
Army expert Miyuchi, Mashiro	Water analysis
Col Inoue, Takatomo	Director 1942-1945
Lt Col Naito, Ryoichi	Water supply, Drying of Sera
Maj Yamada, Masatsugu	Education, Lecturer
" Idei, Katsushige	" "
" Nakano, Minoru	Plague prophylactic vaccine
" Hirooka, Tadashi	Cultivation of Bac tuberculosis
" Miyasaki, Tadami	Prophylactic of tetanus and gas gangrene
" Hayashi, Masao	BCG vaccine
" Kondo, Masabumi	Spirochetes icterohaemorrh
" Kaseno, Toshio	B. tuberculosis
" Tsuyama, Yoshibumi	Water supply & Disinfection
Lt. Usiba, Daizoo	Penicillin
Maj Komori	Classification of salmonella

DECLASSIFIED

NND 785058

WALSH

10/5/82

~~SECRET~~

Studies for the Prevention of Epidemics in the Army

I Studies on Malaria

- A. On investigations of the mosquitoes which carry malaria.
- B. The study for destroying mosquitoes.
 - 1. On insecticides.
 - 2. On a certain insecticide invented by the Chemical Department.
- C. Studies with bird-malaria.
 - 1. Precipitin tests between the organs of (liver, spleen) malaria-infected birds and human serum. This was reported to be of no diagnostic value.
 - 2. Sulfachinin (Sulfanilamide + chinine) was found to have no effect on bird malaria.
- D. The cultivation of the plasmodium.
 - 1. It was reported that they were able to preserve the bird malaria plasodium in an ice chamber longer than in former times (5 days).
 - 2. Tissue-culture was given up owing to the death of the investigator.
 - 3. The object for cultivation was to discover a good Plasmodium-antigene for diagnosis and prophylaxis.
- E. Summary of Japanese references on malaria.
- F. On the prophylaxis of malaria.
 - 1. Against the plasmodium in the human blood.
 - 2. The destroying of mosquitoes and larvae.
 - 3. The prevention against mosquito bites.
- G. On investigations of the malaria in the occupied areas.

II Studies on immunizing. This was regarded as one of the most important studies.

- A. Typhoid Fever
- B. Paratyphoid A
- C. Paratyphoid B
- D. Cholera
- E. Plague

- F. Epidemic cerebro-spinal meningitis
- G. Typhus
- H. Dysentery
- I. Tuberculosis
- J. Small-pox
- K. Tetanus
- L. Infectious jaundice

III Studies on tuberculosis.

- A. Culture media for the tubercle bacilli. Oka-Kata-kura's media was reported to be the best.
- B. On culture medias using eggs.
- C. On the resistance of the tubercle bacilli.
- D. On the non-pathogenic acid fast bacilli in the sputum.
- E. The studies on immunizing solutions, B. C. G.
- F. On the manufacturing of "tuberkulin" for diagnostic use.
- G. On a simpler method for collecting the sputum.
- H. On the effect of the Spirochaeta morsus-muris. The inoculation of the Spirochaeta to the tuberculosis-infected guinea-pig was reported to show a tendency to the healing of tuberculous ulcers.

IV Studies on Penicillin, especially on the conditions for culture.

V Studies on some pathogenic bacilli.

- A. Studies on the Salmonella group.
 - 1. Morphological, biological and serological studies on the bacilli collected from various parts of the continent of Asia.
 - 2. On a simpler way for increasing the bacilli 1% glucose solution, and even sterile water served the purpose.
- B. Studies on the dysentery bacilli.
- C. Studies on the cholera vibrio.
- D. Studies on the Plague bacilli.

~~SECRET~~

29-A-b-4

VI Studies on substitutional culture medias.
Studies on serums for diagnostic use.
Studies on improvement of culture medias for the front.

- VII A. On destroying insects which are carriers of infectious diseases: on D.D.T.
- B. On the habits of mosquitoes. The colours mosquitoes like are red and yellow.

VIII Studies on the filtering apparatus. The Berkefeld type was adopted by the Army owing to the following reasons:

<u>KIND OF FILTER</u>	<u>METHOD TO DISPOSE OF FILTER CAKE</u>
A soft filter using asbestos.	It needs to be renewed every time.
A hard filter consisting of porcelain.	To be delt with chemicals or flames (fire).
A hard filter made from Diatomaceous earth.	Brushing the surface is sufficient for the purpose.

The types adopted by the Army are:

<u>TYPES</u>	<u>STRUCTURE OF APPARATUS</u>	<u>WATER FILTERED PER HOUR</u>	<u>WIGHT</u>	<u>ARRANGEMENT</u>
A	Transported by motor truck	36 kl	5 tons	4 to each div.
B	Transported by a cart	1000 l.	100 kg.	1 to each bn.
C	Transported by horse	700 l.	70 kg.	1 to a company
D	Transported by men	100 l.	20 kg.	1 to a section
D	Transported by ope man	20 l.	5 kg.	1 to each squad

- A. Studies on the raw materials for the filter.
- B. Studies on the manufacturing of the filter.
- C. On testing the filter.
 1. Mean pore dianeter.
 2. Maximal pore-diameter.
 3. The amount of water filtered per hour.
 4. The power of checking bacterias.
 5. The absorption power.

~~SECRET~~
326

29-A-b-4

- D. On the filtering power and methods for using the apparatus.
- E. On the structure of the filter.
- F. On the preservation of the filter. For preserving the filter from mold it was soaked in a solution of Ca Cl_2 and Phenol.

IX Studies on disinfecting trucks. (Trucks for disinfecting) Two motor trucks were used for this purpose.

A. Consisting of:

1. Water tank (containing 1 L. of water).
2. Boiler.
3. Turbine pump for spraying.
4. A shower.

B. Consisting of:

1. A bag to disinfect clothes in.
2. An apparatus for causing hot air.

The trucks A and B combined, the following disinfections are performed:

1. Soldiers - chemical baths.
2. Clothes - steam, then dried with hot air.
3. Horses and carriages - sprayed with disinfectants.

100 (in summer 200) soldiers per hour could be disinfected in this manner.

X Studies on preserving serum.

XI Studies on the typhus vaccine. For producing the vaccine the lungs of rats, or the chicken embryo were used and not the louse nor tissue culture.

A. Vaccine produced from the lung of rats (*Rickettsia Mooseri* used - R. M. Vaccine)

1. Liquid vaccine.
2. Dry vaccine.

B. Vaccine produced from the chicken embryo using the *Rickettsia Provaseki* as the virus strain. (R. P. Vaccine).

1. Liquid vaccine.
2. Dry vaccine.

C. The comparison of the two vaccines as antigens by animal experiments.

Guinea pigs were used for the purpose. The guinea pig was immunized with each vaccine, and after 3 weeks of the injection, 1 cc of brain emulsion from an infected guinea pig was injected. A rise of temperature, decrease of weight, and if considered necessary, monocytosis, Fraenkel's nodules were examined.

1. With the R. M. Vaccine in using 1 cc in the first injection, and 2 cc in the second injection 20% of the guinea pigs were infected, but by using 2 cc in the first, and 4 cc in the second injection, the infection was completely prevented. The only fault was that a large dose was necessary for acquiring complete immunity. The liquid and dry vaccines are almost the same in their antigenic powers.
2. With the R. P. Vaccine 0.5 cc in the first, and 1.0 cc in the second injection were enough to prevent the outbreak of the disease. The liquid vaccine, if preserved in a dark cool place, retained its power for about one year, while the dry vaccine can preserve its power for several years even in room temperature.

D. The immunizing of human beings.

In both vaccines the following method was adopted; The liquid vaccine, after preserving for two weeks in an ice chamber, the dry vaccine after dissolving the powder.

1. Local reactions.

Considerable pain is felt in both vaccines when injected, owing to the formalin as a preservative. This, however, disappears in less than a minute.

With the liquid vaccine swelling and reddening of the skin may be seen for a few days, but not with the dry vaccine.

2. The minimal dose:

- a. R. M. Vaccine - 1 cc in the first, and 2 cc in the second injection.
- b. R. P. Vaccine - 0.5 cc in the first, and 1.0 cc in the second injection.

As there has been no great epidemic, the dose for injection should be further studied. R. M. Vaccine for 6 persons can be gotten from 1 rat. R. P. Vaccine for 30-40 persons can be gotten from 1 egg.

E. Summary.

The R. P. Vaccine is superior to the R. M. Vaccine because of the following three reasons.

1. The immunizing power being greater.
2. The manufacturing process being simpler.
3. The amount of vaccine available being greater.

XII Studies on the examination of water.

A. An emergency test.

In cases of battle, and marching, examination boxes are used chiefly to remove poisonous substances.

To find poisonous substances in water quickly, and with simplicity, a testing paper for cyanide, sublimate, arsenic were invented.

B. Examinations in camp.

Not only examinations for poisonous substances, but also physico-chemical examinations to prove the contamination of the water by pathogenic bacterias indirectly are adopted. The examinations are made for:

1. Atmospheric temperature.
2. Temperature of the water.
3. Colour.
4. Chlorides.
5. Ammonia.
6. Subnitrates.
7. Nitrates.
8. Hardness.
9. Free chlorine.

C. Thorough examinations for permanent water supplies.

XIII On the water supply in Io Jima (Io Island).

Though the source of water in Io Jima is very scarce, well water is available on the coast, but as it contains much mineral salts, it does not serve as drinking water.

By using it for drinking use many soldiers suffered from diarrhea, the chief cause of which was considered to be the presence of magnesium sulfuricum, and so the following methods were adopted to remove $Mg SO_4$:

A. The quantitative measuring of $Mg SO_4$.B. The removing of $Mg SO_4$.

1. The $Ca(OH)_2$ method; $Ca(OH)_2 + Mg SO_4 = CaSO_4 + Mg(OH)_2$
2. The $Ba(OH)_2$ method; $Ba(OH)_2 + MgSO_4 = BaSO_4 + Mg(OH)_2$
3. The $Ca(OH)_2 - Ba(OH)_2$ method. The two methods above combined.

329-a

EPILOGUE

"Lysle, why do you put yourself through this?" asked a friend, who I guess really doesn't know me, as I was in the midst of my writing this book.

About the same time my son and daughter-in-law voiced their concern that my writing was taking too much an emotional toll on me. "We don't like to see you hurting," my son stated. I hurriedly replied, "When I'm working for POWs I am NOT hurting." This brought forth an emotional response from my daughter-in-law telling me, "Lysle, don't sit there with tears running down your face and tell me you aren't hurting."

O.K. So I get emotional! So why am I writing? I'll tell you! My purpose is to compile every fact I can get about POWs held by the Japanese in WWII and to gather it here in this book for easy access in an effort to assist the readers, and especially HISTORY, to understand the overall view of the inhumanity suffered by the POW in the hands of the Japanese. These POWs, men and women, are American heroes and true patriots.

I write so that my grandchildren will understand; my great-grandchildren to come; indeed, all the generations to come. I write so history can look at the facts and make its judgment in our history books of the future. It is my legacy to the future generations.

I have now completed two books. The first, COURAGE PERSONIFIED, copyright 01818189, registration TXu 313 836, and this book, copyright applied for, will both be given to the National POW Museum at Andersonville, Georgia. In addition, copies of each are being provided to Professor Ivan Steen, Project Director, via National Vice Commander John S. Edwards of American Ex-Prisoners of War. Professor Steen is directing the study of American Prisoners of Twentieth Century Wars by State University of New York in cooperation with American Ex-Prisoners of War and a University-wide Committee of Historians. Their work is to write the POW history for America's textbooks. And I will continue to provide copies to all working for POWs.

I write because copies of my books are finding their way into the hands of professionals charged with the care and treatment of POWs. I write because maybe something I have written will help a doctor/psychiatrist/psychologist/relative/friend/ad infinitum understand the POWs problems.

I write because I love you guys!!

BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS:

DEATH MARCH, Donald Knox
THE SEA AND POISON by Endo
KNIGHTS OF BUSHIDO by Lord Russell of Liverpool
FOLLOW-UP STUDY OF WWII POWS by Cohen & Cooper
FLOWERING OF THE BAMBOO by William Triplett
DEVIL'S GLUTTONY (AKUMA NO HOSHOKU) by Seiichi Morimura
THRESHOLD OF HELL by Albert Rupp

PUBLICATIONS:

The Milwaukee Journal, July 11, 1946 (Special thanks for supplying a copy of the picture of Sandy Sandmire with General Jonathon Wainwright for our use here.)
STARS AND STRIPES, October 20, 1986.
LONDON TIMES, August 12, 1985.
Publication DY85.8.13
THE JAPAN TIMES, September 5, 1982.
MILWAUKEE SENTINEL, August 12, 1985.
THE DAILY YOMIURI (YOMIURI SIMBUN), December 7, 1985, which briefly described student demonstrations in China to denounce "Japanese militarism in a commemoration of the Mukden incident in 1931, which marked the beginning of the Japanese invasion of northeastern China. ... (and) that Japan was falsifying history by honoring its "war criminals."

TRANSCRIPTS:

CONGRESSIONAL HEARING ON TREATMENT OF POWS AT MUKDEN, MANCHURIA - hearing held September 17, 1986. Transcript Serial No. 99-61.
ALLIANCE OF SHAME, ABC-TV 20/20, broadcast December 5, 1986.
DECLASSIFIED U.S. ARMY DOCUMENTS AND TESTIMONY BY JAPANESE OFFICERS RE BIOLOGICAL WARFARE EXPERIMENTATIONS
WAR CRIME, CBS/TV 60 Minutes, broadcast April 4, 1982.

PUBLICATIONS:

Sarasota Herald-Tribune, June 12, 1988.

APPENDIX

Even today, 43 years since WWII ended, information continues to pour in concerning the atrocities of the Japanese.

This book was ready for the printer -- finished, so I thought. But in a 24 hour period I received three additional sources of pertinent information that must be included.

Captain Benson Guyton who was a POW with Sandy sent him an affidavit and certificate to help Sandy prove his claim with the VA. Sandy sent me a copy. I wept as I read it. Although his back pain is almost unbearable, the VA demands "proof". No, those who did not live through the experiences of POWs just cannot understand what it was like. It recalls a line from a poem written by a POW in the form of a prayer: "They have earned a couch in heaven, Lord, for they've had their hell on earth."

In the same mail I received a transcript of the 60 Minutes Program of CBS/TV entitled WAR CRIME, aired April 4, 1982. Transcript follows here.

And a large story appeared June 12, 1988 in the Sarasota Herald-Tribune/Sunday entitled "Japan Seeks to Block Out Its Militaristic Past" and specifically states therein: "The Education Ministry was the center of controversy in 1980 after it forced the noted Japanese historian Saburo Ienaga to delete from a high school textbook his whole reference to the Imperial Army's notorious 731 Unit in China (Mukden, Manchuria). Ienaga alleged that the unit conducted experiments on about 3,000 American, Chinese and Soviet prisoners of war and others, using typhus, cholera and bubonic plague germs." The entire article follows here.

The U.S. Army can deny American POWs were victims. But how can you read the evidence, the testimonies, the overpowering statements of Americans and Japanese and not believe it happened. In the meantime, our POWs continue to suffer and die. And I cry for them. But tears cannot heal their wounds.

C E R T I F I C A T E

I certify that during World War II I was a Captain in the United States Army and was stationed on Corregidor in the Philippine Islands when WWII began. Upon the surrender of Corregidor to the Japs on May 6, 1942, I became a prisoner of war of the Japs and so remained until the war was over. I remained a POW in the Philippines until July 1, 1944, when I was shipped to Japan on an unmarked Jap freighter: The Canadian Inventor II. I, along with 255 other US POWs, including another line captain and a doctor, also a captain, were on this crowded ship in the forward hold for some 62 days until we disembarked at Moji, Japan on September 1, 1944. Food on this ship was scarce and of poor quality consisting of two meals a day, mostly rice with occasionally some rank pork or some green soup. Sanitary conditions were deplorable. Water was rationed - about half cup per man per day. Beatings from Jap guards were frequent.

On board this ship I had all enlisted men file by and give me their name, ASN, outfit, next of kin and home address. I still have this note book which is available for inspection by duly authorized parties. One entry in my notebook is: Jap POW Number 249, SANDMIRE, Owen L. 10-24-18, SGT 192 Tank Bn, ASN 20645273.

We 256 US POWs were joined by 51 more US POWs in a week or so and along with 200 British POWs remained in Japan at Omine Machi, Honshu Island, until the war was over. During our year at Omine Machi all enlisted men had to mine coal in a deep, wet, unsafe coal mine. Food was poor and scarce. Most men lost much weight; many being less than 100 pounds - just bones with skin stretched over them. Medicine was almost non existant. Many were sick; but few were excused from mine work. And whenever a man was unable to work in the mine, he was usually marked: "Camp work." And I was in charge of "Camp work." This consisted of policing grounds, mending buildings and emptying latrines - a tough job for a sick man.

I remember SGT Sandmire well at Omine Machi since he was frequently on camp work with various disabilities, including back ailment. I recall that several times Sandmire was hurting so much that I would hide him and have another POW watch him and call him back to work should a Jap guard appear. This was risky but necessary to keep Sandmire and others who were just as ill alive. Even so we lost eight men in our one year in Japan. And, mind you, these 307 Americans had been through severe conditions before being shipped to Japan. They were a tough lot and none of them died easily.

As a result of the War Trials after the war several of the Jap guards and officers in charge of the Omine Machi POW camp were severely punished by the war crimes trials.

I certify that conditions on the Jap POW ship, The Canadian Inventor II, and conditions in the Omine Machi POW Camp were much worse than I have described above. I just do not have adequate words to describe than as bad as they were.

Benson Guyton

Benson Guyton, 704 14th Avenue, SE; Decatur, Alabama 35601
Formerly Captain 60th CA, Army of the United States in World War II.

State of Alabama)
County of Morgan) ss

AFFIDAVIT

I, Benson Guyton, 704 14th Avenue S.E., Decatur, Alabama 35601, do hereby depose and swear that my following statement is true and correct:

I was a prisoner of war during WWII, captured in the Philippines, and knew Owen L. Sandmire when we were both prisoners of war at Omine Machi in Fukuoka District, Japan from about September, 1944 to September, 1945.

During this time Owen L. Sandmire worked in the coal mines with very little food or sustinance and became extremely thin, exhausted and in a very precarious state of health from the back-breaking slave labor and extremely harsh conditions in the coal mines and up to 18 hours a day, every day, operating a jackhammer. I was instrumental in getting him out of the mines due to his rapidly deteriorating health. It was during this time of slave labor in the mines that his back gave out and became a source of great pain to him which continues to this day.

The conditions, lack of food, diseases in this camp at this time were such that it barely sustained life and in many cases did not.

Dated this 23rd day of May, 1988.

Benson Guyton
Benson Guyton, Captain

Benson Guyton personally appeared before me, Jane Page a notary public of the county of Morgan State of Alabama this 23rd day of May, 1988, and did upon oath swear and depose that the foregoing statement was true and correct.

SEAL

Jane Page
Notary Public

60 MINUTES

Volume XIV, Number 27

as broadcast over the

CBS TELEVISION NETWORK

Sunday, April 4, 1982

7:00 - 8:00 PM, EST

With CBS News Correspondents
Mike Wallace, Morley Safer, Harry Reasoner and Ed Bradley

"MEET TED WATKINS" - Produced by Al Wasserman

"JOEL NELSON IS MISSING" - Produced by William H. Willson

"WAR CRIME" - Produced by Joseph Wershba

PRODUCED BY CBS NEWS

©MCMLXXXII CBS Inc.
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

MORLEY SAFER: It started with the Japanese invasion of China in the thirties, long before the war in Europe or Pearl Harbor—germ warfare, the systematic destruction of a population. General Shiro Ishii and his corps of human experimenters were never tried as war criminals, even though we were prosecuting Germans for conducting similar barbaric experiments on civilians in concentration camps of Europe.

JOHN W. POWELL (writer): In order to— to secure exclusive possession of this Japanese information, it was necessary to cover it up.

WALLACE: I'm Mike Wallace.

SAFER: I'm Morley Safer.

REASONER: I'm Harry Reasoner.

ED BRADLEY: I'm Ed Bradley. Those stories and more tonight on 60 MINUTES.

(Announcements)

"WAR CRIME"

MORLEY SAFER: It's no secret that the Russians are accused of using chemical and germ warfare in Afghanistan and Laos. This is a story that's been kept secret by the American government for more than 35 years. It's the story of a great war crime. During World War II, the Japanese military experimented with germ warfare. Their guinea pigs were Chinese, Russian and American prisoners of war. For a variety of reasons, the American government kept it all a secret. The story finally appeared in an obscure journal called the Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, whose editors at first thought it was too horrible to be true—until they checked the documentation produced by the writer, John W. Powell.

SAFER: What were the diseases that these men were infected with?

JOHN W. POWELL: Plague, smallpox, typhus, typhoid, paratyphoid, various types of fever diseases—tick, encephalitis.

SAFER: It started with the Japanese invasion of China in the thirties, long before the war in Europe or Pearl Harbor. The Japanese attack was barbaric. They viewed the Chinese as racially inferior. No pretense was made to differentiate between civilian and military targets. It was the systematic destruction of a population. Japan had plans beyond China, but since it did not have the resources to fight a long, many-fronted war, it sought the most efficient of killing methods—germ warfare. The officer in charge was a certain General Shiro Ishii. His unit was called 731-Corps. It was top secret, acting under the guise of a water purification unit. It operated near Harbin, Manchuria. It had the blessing of the highest military authorities in Tokyo.

POWELL: Sometimes they were unbelievably scientific, if we can use this term. Say on day three, they would select one man out and kill him and autopsy him, to see the extent to which the disease had affected his various internal organs in three days. Then a few days later, they would kill another man.

SAFER: I think they used the word "sacrifice" in their literature.

POWELL: Yes, they— they called it "sacrificing" them. In one experiment with hemorrhagic fever, they killed everybody.

POWELL: These were the remains of General Ishii's death factory: film obtained by the Tokyo Broadcasting System for a documentary. According to the documentary, there was no mention then of American prisoners used as guinea pigs.

INTERPRETER (narrating movie scenes): The 731-Corps was one of the biggest germ factories in the world. They studied plague, cholera and typhoid germs, then developed very powerful germs in volume. These naked men are Chinese prisoners of war of World War II who became test samples and were killed. What was happening in 731-Corps? Is it true they did living body tests on prisoners?

POWELL: Well, what the Japanese did was secure some very unusual and very precise information about human susceptibility to a great variety of diseases. They would line people up and give measured doses, injections. They knew the strain of the pathogen they were giving, so it was all the same. Everybody was getting exactly the same type and amount. And then they would see how they— how, say, ten men would react.

SAFER: After December 7, 1941, Pearl Harbor, General Ishii was provided with a whole new stock, a new strain of guinea pigs for 731-Corps.

How many Americans do you reckon were used as guinea pigs?

POWELL: I have no idea. I would say probably not very many. I mean, that their— bulk of their information they got from using literally thousands of Chinese. And the indications are they were interested in Americans. At one— one point they refer to them as Anglo-Saxons, which raises another question, because the prison camps held both British and American prisoners.

SAFER: And Australian.

POWELL: Yes. But they say they were interested in seeing if there was any difference in the immunity of Americans or Anglo-Saxons, and I assume they mean the difference between Asians. So their basic work and knowledge was— had already been gained by that time by working on Chinese. So I think this was probably a peripheral thing.

SAFER: That Japanese film team tracking the story in the 1970's was able to find about 20 veterans of General Ishii's unit. Most refused to talk, fearful they could be prosecuted for war crimes. Others admitted it.

INTERPRETER (for Japanese man): Definitely, we were the first to do some tests. It is probably true that Japan did living tests, but so did America and Soviet. That is the war. Now that you have peace and time to waste, you can begin to accuse yourselves of the past.

SAFER: But Japanese in great numbers have begun to accuse the past as they face up to its evidence. A photograph of the training field of 731-Corps and the corpses of its victims. One former officer was willing to talk. He said the prisoners—"marutas" or "logs" they were called in Japanese—were tied to poles behind protective barriers, with certain parts of their bodies exposed. First, germ bomb tests with living body samples. Bombs were exploded. The severe shrapnel wounds were then allowed to become gangrenous.

INTERPRETER (for Japanese man): It was dreadful, unbearable to see. The marutas came to pieces. They also injected typhoid germs into tomatoes. Those who ate the tomatoes had typhoid fevers. They let the marutas be bitten by cholera fleas. Marutas get infected with cholera. Then vivisections were made in order to see the test results on these marutas.

SAFER: At war's end, the prisoners were killed, their bodies incinerated, the death factories blown up. But a few of the doctors who had worked in the germ corps unit still remembered the terrible tests.

INTERPRETER (for Japanese man): It was a factory of death. It was a graveyard to bury the alive. Did it take you courage to be interviewed? No, sense of guilt was much greater, which has been haunting me since the war. I am the dead returned from the graveyard, so I will testify the fact so that it will never be repeated. The doctors should be aware that potential guilt exists in his privilege and professionalism.

SAFER: After the war, American intelligence learned all about the Japanese experiments, even found plans for producing bacteria bombs—offensive weapons that would bring germ warfare out of the lab and onto the battle field. It was all kept top secret. No prosecution of 731-Corps.

INTERPRETER (for Japanese man): Investigators made me write reports, on the condition that they will protect me from the Soviet Union. Already at that time, there was a keen competition between America and Soviet. And what happened to General Ishii? He went to America alone, or with several others. He took his research datas, and begged for remission, pardons for us all.

SAFER: General Shiro Ishii and his corps of human experimenters were never tried as war criminals, even though we were prosecuting Germans for conducting similar barbaric experiments on civilians in concentration camps of Europe. Instead Ishii and some of his top people were bundled off to the American chemical warfare center at Fort Detrick, Maryland.

These former top secret documents make it clear why. The Japanese had the best information on germ warfare. It could be ours for the asking. And we could keep it from the Russians. But there was a catch. The price was freedom for Ishii and his crowd.

POWELL: We decided that the Japanese sophistication in biological warfare was much greater than anyone else's. And in order to secure exclusive possession of this Japanese information, it was necessary to cover it up and to forego prosecution as war criminals of the Japanese participants.

SAFER: By 1947, our investigators were warning, "It should be kept in mind that there is a remote possibility that independent investigation conducted by the Soviets in the Mukden area may have disclosed evidence that American prisoners of war were used for experimental purposes of a biological warfare nature, and that they lost their lives as a result of these experiments."

The Russians could use that information to embarrass us, or at least force us to make the information public through a war crimes trial, where they too would have the test results.

In December of 1949, the Russians put a dozen Japanese on trial for germ experiments, and sentenced them to prison terms of three to 25 years. Testimony was given that American prisoners of war had been used for tests on—"the properties of the blood and immunity to contagious diseases of American soldiers." But by then the Cold War held full sway, and the Soviet trials were dismissed as propaganda.

More recently, a 1956 FBI report surfaced with a flat statement that—"American military forces, after occupying Japan, determined that the Japanese actually did experiment with BW"—biological warfare—"agents in Manchuria during 1943 to '44, using American prisoners as test victims." The FBI report went on to say this information was not used in war crime trials because, among other things—"as a political expedient, it was felt that public disclosure of such information would seriously prejudice the (American) occupying forces (in Japan)." The chemical warfare branch of the U.S. Army has declined to comment on these documents, and the Defense and the State Departments say they've been unable to locate any of the principals mentioned in the reports. In fact, we found one of the State Department officials who knew all about this material, but he's elderly, retired and refuses to comment. In any event, no one in government is enthusiastic about the man who brought these documents to light—John W. Powell.

Powell's father was an old China hand who founded The China Weekly Review in Shanghai, where the son was born. The magazine supported Chiang Kai-shek. But after the war, after the father died and young Powell took over, the magazine supported Mao Tse-tung. When Powell published as fact Communist charges that the U.S. was using germ warfare in Korea in the fifties, he was hauled back to face a Senate investigation. He and his wife Sylvia were later indicted for sedition and treason. But midway through their trial in 1961, all charges were dropped. They now run an antique store in San Francisco, and Powell is writing a book on germ warfare.

A lot of people are going to respond to— to this, the— your allegations and— and even the— and the hard evidence, the documents, by saying, "Well, we would expect nothing more, nothing less, from John Powell, who, after all, was accused of sedition, was a— a— is bent on damaging the reputation of the United States."

POWELL: I don't feel that I'm trying to damage the United States. I— I think the historical record should be set straight. I think that this is a very grisly type of weapon. I don't think it's something we should be engaged in. We're taking this knowledge and turning it around and trying to sicken and kill people with it, and it's pretty horrible.

SAFER: One could guess that what the— what the Russian military establishment, stroke, scientific establishment was doing then was precisely the same as what the American one was doing—trying to develop its own little weapons.

POWELL: I suspect that we're both doing it.

SAFER: After the war, the Russians and the Americans continued to develop better bugs and better delivery systems. The world, so capable of destroying itself with nuclear weapons, feels a special repugnance about germ warfare, and there have been attempts to outlaw it. In 1969, President Nixon announced we would no longer produce biological weapons for offensive use. No matter what each side may say, both Russians and Americans are convinced the other side is continuing to produce biological weapons.

And the argument, of course, is: the Russians have it and are apparently prepared to use it, used it, use it even to this day, perhaps; so, we've got to have it and thus be prepared to use it.

POWELL: Well, do you know what General Ishii said when he was starting his program? He said, "The Russians and the Americans have it. We have to have it." That was many years ago; 40 years ago or more.

SAFER: As for General Ishii, this devil's version of Louis Pasteur died quietly of old age a few years ago. But the work of this pioneer in public health in reverse did not die with him.

Since that report, another Top Secret document has surfaced. It is dated August, 1947. In it, Ishii's scientists try to assure American officers that no Americans were used, "only" Chinese.

(NOTE: The U.S. Army declassified documents and statements by Japanese officers, beginning on page 284, claim humans were not used in the BW experiments. Lies!! As the last paragraph above clearly states, they still disclaim "American" POWs were used, only Chinese. They do not think as we do -- do not value life as we do. As the news article following clearly shows, the Japanese are doing everything possible to wipe away the truth. How can we believe anything such people state?)

Japan Seeks To Blot Out Its Militarism

By K.P. HONG
Associated Press Writer

TOKYO - A move that seeks to justify Japan's militaristic past is gaining ground in conservative governing circles.

In contrast with trends in the Soviet Union and Austria toward greater criticism of the records of their pasts under Stalinism and Nazism, some Japanese conservatives are challenging the generally accepted judgment that Japan was an aggressor before and during World War II.

Right-wing opinions have cropped up repeatedly in high places as Japan's economic prosperity surged in the 1980s, raising Japanese pride and diluting some of the guilt the country felt after its defeat in war.

Most recently, the director general of the national land agency, Seisuke Okuno, set off an international furor by saying that Japan was not an aggressor in World War II and that the country "fought to protect itself at a time when the white race had turned Asia into a colony."

The 75-year-old Okuno, who is regarded as the third most prominent member of Prime Minister Noboru Takeshita's Cabinet, was forced to resign May 19, but not before his viewpoint had been backed by 41 parliamentarians of the governing Liberal Democratic Party.

"We fully support Mr. Okuno's remarks and his historical interpretation," the right-wingers said in a statement.

Japan's History

These are major events in Japan's military history since the mid-19th century.

- 1894-95: War with China over influence in Korea.
- 1904-05: Japan's defeat of Russia in War.
- 1910: Japan annexes Korea.
- 1931: Japan seizes control of Manchuria.
- 1936 and 1940: Japan allies with Nazis.
- 1937: Japanese military forces invade China.
- 1941: Japanese planes attack Pearl Harbor.

They have organized themselves within the party, which has been in power nearly four decades, as the Fellow Thinkers Council on Fundamental National Issues, headed by Shizuka Kamei.

"There are many other people inside and outside the LDP who support our nationalistic move to re-evaluate the past and traditional values," Kamei said in an interview. "They just don't openly express their sentiment."

The scope of the movement is hard to judge. Kamei's right-wing group had 18 members when it started two years ago and has grown to 41, but that's still a small minority of the LDP's 445 representatives in the two houses of Parliament.

Japan does not have broad-based opinion surveys that probe nationalistic sentiments or ask whether people believe the country was an aggressor five or six decades ago. But as pride in the country's economic accomplishments grows, commentators see a gradual change in the postwar attitudes of great guilt for
Continued on 8F

Japan Seeks to Block Out Its

Continued from 1F

wartime actions.

"Nationalism now seems to be growing among the Japanese, who are eager to see their country exercise a political voice becoming of its economic stature," The Japan Times commented in an editorial on Okuno's remarks.

"Our belief is that Japan must pursue its national interests with a righteous historical perspective. Otherwise, it will face formidable resistance - surely, an unwise approach on the part of Japan."

Okuno was the second official forced to leave the Cabinet in two years for challenging the generally accepted historical record.

Education Minister Masayuki Fujio was fired in 1986 by Yasuhiro Nakasone, then prime minister, after he angered South and North Korea by writing in a magazine article that Korea was partly responsible for its annexation by Japan in 1910.

The Education Ministry was the center of controversy in 1980 after it forced the noted Japanese historian Saburo Ienaga to delete from a high school textbook his whole reference to the Imperial Army's notorious 731 Unit in China. Ienaga

MUKDEN, MANCHURIA

alleged that the unit conducted experiments on about 3,000 American, Chinese and Soviet prisoners of war and others, using typhus, cholera and bubonic plague germs.

According to Yasushi Mitarai, director of the Education Ministry's Textbook Administration Division, the ministry still maintains that not enough evidence is available to prove the allegation.

In 1981 and 1982, the Education Ministry asked Ienaga and other historians to revise and soften the wartime record, proposing to describe Japan's invasion of China as an "advance," not as "aggression," as previous textbooks did; to delete mention of the "Rape of Nanking" in China in 1937; and to describe the forcible transfer of Koreans to Japan as "an implementation of the national mobilization order to the Koreans."

China claims that more than 300,000 people, mainly civilians, were killed or raped after Nanking, then China's capital, fell to four Japanese divisions in December 1937. The South Korean government says more than 1 million Koreans were dragooned to do forced labor in Japan during World

War II.

The Education Ministry's move drew sharp protests from Asian countries, and Japan settled a dispute with China and South Korea by promising to amend controversial passages.

Another flurry erupted this past January when the Japanese film distributor Shochiku Fuji Co. attempted to delete newsreel scenes of Japanese atrocities in Nanking from the Oscar-winning film "The Last Emperor."

Shochiku restored the newsreel footage and said there had been a misunderstanding. However, the movie's Italian director, Bernardo Bertolucci, said he understood Japanese right-wingers had threatened to blow up the distributor's theaters if the newsreel scenes were shown.

Critics fear such incidents may portend more advances for the right-wing cause.

"We suspect that the trend is a prelude to a big stride someday by the conservatives in their efforts to restore what they consider the lost pride of the country," commented Masumi Yukiiri, the lawyer for Ienaga in his 23-year court battle against the government's screening of his textbooks.



Militaristic Past

Kamei, head of the right-wing parliamentarians' group, agreed that pride was an important element.

"Yes, we need the lost pride and traditional values. Also, I know of no nations that don't have their own national flags, anthems or cemeteries for their war dead," Kamei said.

Many labor unions and some schools still refuse to raise the Rising Sun flag or sing "Kimigayo," the national anthem, because of their wartime connections.

Kamei, 52, an ex-police officer in his fourth term in the lower house, said, "We are not saying that Japan was good and did good in the past. But we just can't accept all the accusations from foreign countries that Japan was in the wrong all the way."

He complained that Japan's sovereignty was violated when the government succumbed to pressure from China, South Korea and others in the textbook disputes.

A major focus of nationalist symbolism is the Yasukuni Shrine in Tokyo, a Shinto shrine dedicated to Japan's war dead, including Gen.

Hideki Tojo and other convicted war criminals. Tojo, the prime minister in 1941-44, was executed by the Allies in 1948.

For decades, it was taboo for Cabinet members to visit the shrine in their official capacity. But Nakasone broke the taboo in 1985, bringing protests from leftist and pacifist groups and neighboring Asian countries, who saw the visit as an indication that militarism was on the rise again.

"Some Chinese leaders say Japan should remove the graves of Gen. Tojo and others from Yasukuni if Japanese officials really want to visit the shrine," said Kamei. "The Chinese don't understand that in Shintoism even criminals are condoned upon their death. Besides, the Allied forces' trial of the so-called war criminals was a punishment by the victors on the defeated."

Takeshita, Nakasone's successor as prime minister, has not visited the Yasukuni Shrine, but it was there that the latest eruption started when Okuno attended a memorial service in April. Since his resignation from the Cabinet, Okuno has appeared at rallies, repeating his view that Japan was not the aggressor in World War II.